

# *The Message of I Paul*



## **The I Paul Communications**

**HANDBOOK  
SERIES  
Book 3**

from

**The Family of LIFE & LIGHT**



# THE MESSAGE

---

## OF I PAUL

### THE I PAUL SERIES

**The Family of LIFE & LIGHT**

# Dedication

*To the members of The Family of LIFE & LIGHT  
and to the scattered strangers of this world . . .*

Copyright © 1998 by **The Family of LIFE & LIGHT**

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or used in any manner, by an electronic or mechanical means, including information storage and retrieval systems, without permission in writing from the publisher, except by a reviewer who may quote brief passages in a review.

For more information or permission requests, contact

[dh@themessageofipaul.com](mailto:dh@themessageofipaul.com)

**The Family of LIFE & LIGHT**

Virginia Beach, VA 23462

[www.themessageofipaul.com](http://www.themessageofipaul.com)

## Table of Contents

1 – Recreate, Regenerate, Renew Your Life Daily .....	1
2 – The Freedom of Self-Discipline – Obedience to “The Spirit” ....	12
3 – The Handbook for Family Members .....	18
4 – A Laying On of the Truth About the Mammon Business.....	20
5 – The Immortality of the Human Spirit, . . . ..	22
6 – Only Two Kinds of Being.....	25
7 – The Key to the Message, the Way to “The Way” .....	28
8 – The Basis of the Message .....	35
9 – The “Rules” of Common Sense .....	42
10 – A Year of Love – 1986 to Eternity.....	50
11 – The Servant .....	58
12 – The Unworthy Servant .....	69
13 – On Personal Spiritual Needs.....	70
14 – Heaven, Hell, Kingdom.....	79
15 – “The Full Measure of Faith” – What it Is – How to Use It.....	90
16 – The Ways Spirit Communicates.....	102
17 – Casuistry.....	110
18 – Trance State – One .....	123
19 – Predestination .....	178

## THE I PAUL SERIES – Table of Contents

20 – I Paul Worship No Man.....	197
21 – The Teacher of Teachers Teaches . . . ..	215
22 – Who Is Your Saviour? Jesus?.....	243
23 – The Case for Executing Your “Self”! . . . ..	258
24 – This Is the Way .....	265
25 – Does Anyone Have “The Way”?.....	266
26 – Heal Thyself .....	273
27 – On the Theory of Reincarnation .....	299
28 – To Have and To Have Not – Your Choice? .....	320
29 – Reason Will Always Strip Away Illusions . . . ..	340
30 – Your Thoughts Are Your Life . . . . .	357
31 – Spiritual Psychology and the Master .....	399
31/A1 – When Is the Kingdom of God Coming? .....	453
32 – My Way Is the Way! .....	470
33 – Trance State – Two (A Dream Unfolds) .....	484

## **1 - Recreate, Regenerate, Renew Your Life Daily**

Greetings to All who are in ALL:

The Way of Christian Spiritualism is the Better Way and the True Way for the purpose of “binding back” to God that which is God’s and allowing the Natural Man to retain that which is his. Only God knows the hour, the day, the year of the Happening of the ALL in ALL. Our task is not to know, then, but to be Prepared and Following when we are called to Come. We do this by keeping fully, the Watch. Let, then, Prepare, Follow, Come be our obedience to those three little words of our Example, Come, Follow Me!

Therefore, come follow us also then, those who do follow after Jesus to the LIGHT of All Light.

In this following we should live and enjoy Life to the fullest in Recognition of The Great Gift of life and not live it as the Religionists would have us do by hating it or by teachings of “you must not hope to live nor wish to die but you must hate your life at any cost, to save it.”

Although the Will of God is man’s Well-Being it is we who are solely responsible for the well-being of our natural lives, for God will not do that for us, which he has already gifted us with to do for ourselves.

Be righteous then and be Well! Allow the Ordinance of Reciprocity to work for your well-being and not against it.

We Spirituals can only reconcile Faith and Reason through knowing the Truth.

We Christian Spiritualists know that hope is the blueprint of Faith and that “knowing Faith” is the backbone of all Hope. Faith, then, is the conviction of things not seen but known. Not blind Faith then nor deaf and muted Hope.

In view of CPM #29, Addendum #20, you should ask yourself if you are an “alive soul” or a “dead soul;” an “alive life” then, or a “dead life” then? Are you “Active” in the spirit or are you “still” of the spirit? Aloof from the spirit then and active in the natural body only.

Is the carnal way more dominant in your life than the spiritual way? Who really controls your life, the natural man or the natural woman or the spirit, the True-Man and or the True-Woman?

The higher mind vibrates to the need influences but the lower mind repels them in its desire-want influences. Which influence then do you more often follow? The Need or the Want.

Is your palate more important than your minds? Is your belly your God? Is excessive sleep, over-sleeping more



important than your Active, Aware, Alert Life is?

Is your being in a stuporous state more important than being in a fully conscious one?

Are you a willing victim to the “poor-me” syndrome?

“There is no strength in sorrow.” Why? Simply because Sorrow by itself does not exist. It’s a relative “self” conception that comes into being with you and exists with you. Sorrow, like Fear, Doubt, Anxiety is of your own manufacture, your own punishment, an illusion, ignorance and an evil. We need to realize that a necessary condition of the work we are severally and collectively doing in the flesh is mainly done by means of being a living sacrifice. All the tragedy of the past and the present have been necessary to it, and will continue to be so until God’s great end is achieved.

Sorrow here then is the opposite bliss there - opposites then that we need invoke the Ordinance of Formative Causation to. We may say then that the opposites of things here as they exist there are illusions and therefore they are ignorances and therefore they are our evils!

So, as ignorance on this plane is synonymous with illusion, so on this plane is knowledge synonymous with Truth.



Our better “high” here is our unity with our higher mind. The higher mind awaits our completion of that task, therefore, we must not stand around idle and expect it to unite with our mind for it will not; it cannot!

But we have the Mind of Christ. All we need do is activate it fully in our words, acts and deeds and we will find ourselves united, in a state of being Fully Human and Fully Spiritual then.

From that state of being and Doing we find our Real Freedom here, safe from illusion and evil. Delivered from the Natural Man, the “Self,” then, and free to act natural without pretense or contrivances. Fully protected, called and chosen!

The soul man-woman is the life man-woman of the natural man-woman, the “self” then. The Real man-woman is the spirit filled ones and who give Recognition to the True Man, True Woman, the spirit then, the “True-Self,” the deathless, eternal “I,” “You”! The “I Am” of the “God Is” then!

The question is “which are you?” The Choice, is of course, yours and yours alone. Which do you give Recognition to? - you or You or to the Unity of them? You see, the Real Man-Woman goal is Unity with the True Man-Woman and the True Man-Woman goal is the Soul - its

## Unity and its Peace.

The Soul then is the Supreme Mind, the Ultimate Intelligence, the Universal One.

Now since repetition is the mother of All Good Memories and Active Intelligences allow us to be so herein for your good edification and well-being.

Man-woman has a spirit that incarnates in such at birth of the body. The spirit resides in this body which acts as a sheath for the spirit. Man-woman's spirit is the positive side of their being. The energetic, forceful, qualitative, and formative aspect of the Divine outpouring in distinction from the negative, quantitative body-soul, the form taking aspect of matter. Spirit is the Life side - body-soul is the matter side. The spirit is the higher mind, the body contains the lower mind, its sole connection, link then, to the spirit mind, the psyche's then, not to be confused with the visible brain of man-woman.

As stated, the spirit uses (never abuses) the body-matter form and structure as a sheath which envelops it like a cocoon, hence the intense energized vibrations of spirit gradually dissipate it and brings the body-matter to naught.

Prior to this state of "nothingness" being manifested the Unity of the higher and lower psyches or minds need be

made manifest in order for the whole “True-Self” to leave the Involutionary plane and embark upon the Evolutionary cycles.

How well the lower mind does its task on this lower plane determines where the Whole True-Self attains to. Be it the plane of earth-boundedness, the Darkness or the Light Realms.

Therefore, we should be able to discern that man is a vessel, mind and spirit. This is not to be misconstrued as a tripartite nor as a duality either for you to take everything with you as the higher and lower minds-psyches unite and traverse the higher planes and realms to the Highest Mind wherein ALL is made One! Soul, then. And is this not, as the Message of I Paul states, the Truth of the Soul, the Truth we were all asked to remember well?

Repetition then is the key to the memory of the Good, the Right and the True which brings Recognition in all of its glorious aspects. It's the key to Karma; the destiny of all that is, was and ever will be. Yet one must beware though for the repetition of an untruth, a theory even, often makes an untruth a supposed truth in the mind of many who are spiritually and physically ignorant.

And what shall we say about Karma itself? Is it “Deed,” “Fate,” “Destiny” or “Reincarnation”? It is in the Sanskrit.

But what does “karma” mean to a Christian Spiritualist? Is it not that of what we sow we also reap? That of being or becoming the victims of our own punishments? That of being Judged as we also Judge others? A matter of Light or Darkness? A matter of Change, Changing until we are Changed? A simple matter of minds then?

Combined it is a “matter of causation and interaction” between the higher and lower planes, between the higher and lower minds, for the express purpose of bringing about equilibrium between them and gradually raise the spirit through its evolution of the higher planes.

It’s the intricate, unique and Absolute Universal plan that binds the higher mind to the lower mind which rise through their union with the “knowledge of” the Will that Wills above all wills - The Mind of Christ! (This “knowledge of” then, clearly implies choice - your choice.)

This “matter of causation and interaction” then estimates the experience of the minds as expressed in effects on the higher planes. It relates then to the process underlying spiritual evolution and adjustment upon the higher planes as needed. As the Soul sends forth the spirit into the life experience, so shall the spirit upon each succeeding plane level account for its “karma,” as it were, so that each successive stage carries it to its relatively

appointed Pillar.

This fact underlies all religions, sects, cults and philosophies dealing with the supernatural whether known or unknown for it is obviously implied through such conceptions of heaven, hell, purgatory, limbo, soul, spirit, minds, under world and over world, angels, saints, martyrs, saviours and so forth.

Any religionist etc., who looks for compensation in a heaven or fears punishment in a hell is holding credulously, crudely and unintelligently, the Truth that what we sow here we reap the result of upon the next state. The spiritual laws of cause and effect in the minds are made to yield just the right effort and the right results so that through the temporal period of Involution a perfect balance can be attained and maintained with the outcome of it all stored in the inner being. Yet, if the lower nature maintains control, then what is called “karma” is incurred, but when the lower nature is overcome, then the “Fruits of the spirit” are reaped by the Unity of the Minds at the Happening of the ALL in ALL.

According to scripture, when Man was first created a “living soul,” “karma,” in many circles, had the meaning of reincarnation, for how else, it was asked, can it rationally be explained by what obviously seems an incestuous re-

beginning after the fall?

The “living soul man” created immortal, fell then, to the victory of death, symbolized as a serpent in Genesis and it was mans’ lot from then on to multiply and die, generation unto generation unto generations as prisoners of this Earth, for God is no respecter of Persons that be natural. Man thus found himself in a condition of metamorphose from which he, alone, could not escape.

And he did not escape, that is, until the Incarnation of the Heavenly LIGHT into a son of man, Jesus of Nazareth.

From this Incarnation and through the Generous Mercy and the Glorious Grace of our Heavenly Father, The One Supreme Spirit, our Love, our Truth and our soul man became a “living spirit” and death lost its sting and its victory and such beliefs as reincarnation cannot possibly hold any validity whatsoever. A new term replaced it, something called resurrection. What it should have been termed and should always be termed is a Regeneration, a renewing or a re-creation of man’s true immortality. For it has been reinstated by the spirit of man. “Father I commend my spirit unto you” – Not “my soul”!

Therefore, dear sisters and brothers of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL I Paul clear up a mystery for you.

Since the Truth of the Cross, we, by natural conception are the children of Adam's children and are of a natural nature. But, being gifted with the spirit, with a "spiritual birthing" then, we are made the children of LIFE and the collective Family of LIFE through and for and by the LIGHT.

We are, the Generation of the Cross, wherein we have been given a "new Life." A Regeneration, a "new birth" of immortality with the certainty, if it be nourished and righteously developed it will rise up in glory to everlasting Life and Light.

Regeneration, Re-birthing, Renewing, then means change, a complete changing of condition then, a state of being born again, a state of being "called-back" to eternal life then, to be Changed from our present flesh and blood body into that glorious new spiritual body of Jesus, provided we do our fair part in the Changing!

Thus, our so-called karma is a spiritual regeneration and not a resurrection or reincarnation.

The spirit incarnates - it does not reincarnate then - it is not resurrected then! Flesh and blood cannot enter into the Kingdom of God!

By my own hand for your edification of which I have Faith and Hope in my prayers that you are all now a bit more



enlightened and clearer in your understandings of the Message of I Paul and the Book of Life.

I remain your servant and Spirit Guide,  
with all Love for your Unity and Peace,  
I Paul.

It is to the glory of our Being to be Spirituals and a greater glory to be a Christian or LIGHT Spiritualist.

I Paul.

## **2 - The Freedom of Self-Discipline Obedience to “The Spirit”**

Greetings:

Love, Unity, Peace, Joy, Happiness and exceptional Well-Being to you, the members of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL, and a call to all who would be Spirituals as you yourselves struggle to be.

I Paul beg not. I instruct only for the greater good of the Family.

The key to being a perfect servant to, and of, The Supreme Spirit Now and in The Future, lies wholly in your own self-discipline and your Obedience to the Mind of our Christ.

You and you alone are free to monitor your every Word, Act and Deed and to “see” clearly and not through a glass darkly, that they are all manifestations of those things that are, and are for, the Good, the Right, and the True, Righteous then.

To obtain and maintain such an illustrious position in life requires that you follow faithfully the following instructions for your Well-Being.

A daily examining of one’s Conscience, preferably in

the evening and/or whenever necessary to maintain such Well-Being.

A daily recreating of one's True-Life internally and your full Action externally, preferably in the morning.

A daily reviewing of one's desires, wants, needs, tasks, goals, devotion, directions, presence, good-works, dignity and respect.

A daily renewing of one's consciousness, one's well-being and the well-being of your own personal responsibility and of those who depend on you for their well-being.

A daily regeneration of one's minds then, through carnal fasting and spiritual enthusiasm.

A daily reinstitution of the Message's Principles and exercises in your life and a plan of Action to make them visible in their use.

A daily living then of the Message, in all your words, acts and deeds.

At the close of each day one should also reflect upon one's activities and relationships of the hours past. This involves one's Actions, "mistakes," errors and come to a decision of their causes, and from those, make a decision to

correct those needing such and to diligently retain those that necessitate no amending.

Here, we might add, is where the diligent keeping of a daily diary becomes of great importance, for all the above can be accomplished as you sit in peaceful solitude and reflection to record the details of your days activity, small and big, that are pertinent to your right actions and wrong ones, the Good or bad Things encountered or done and the True Things you accomplished or allowed to go by the way, ignored or forgotten.

All of those things are of the utmost importance to those who take seriously their involvement with, and devoted Obedience to The Spirit and their commitment to be a True Christian Spiritualist and therefore a True Servant and not a perfunctory or pretending one, but one who puts the Spirit and the Message First in their life.

Decide daily, then, just what you have accomplished in the past hours of your day and what you could have and should have accomplished but what you allowed to pass because of “self-wants” and wasted moments given to foolishnesses and to carnal desires. Make a listing of these wasted involvements and a promise to correct them immediately, once and once and for all.

Stop “starting over” and Begin to be the True Servant

and Do the Things necessary to make your service clearly recognizable to one and all, regardless of your own personal “wants,” “likes” and “dislikes.” You are free to waste your own time and “times” but you have no such freedom to waste ours. We will play no games; neither with you nor for you where the urgency of the Message is tantamount to our Well-Being and the Well-Being of the True Seekers of Truth, Unity and Peace through Love and Understanding.

This then, in its digested form, is what it takes, courage even, to be Fully Human and Fully Spiritual and therefore a True Christian Spiritualist.

One, who having been predestined and in a state of Preparation, ready then, of being “called-back,” chosen then, to fulfill the Universal Plan of “The Spirit,” LIFE then, through the Power and the Wisdom of The LIGHT.

A worker here is a Worker there, while an idler here is of no use there, useless then, and not called-back to Labor in the Light.

The simple but hard solution to all of the above is to exert the effort called for; a thorough self-disciplinary routine of a perpetual nature then, and of a Doing and being Righteous. Physical-Material Pride is one of the most insidious barriers we have to honestly face and overcome but it can be overcome quite simply by an honest and

unpretentious measure of humility and an understanding that it is to your credit and profit and to the Glory of LIFE and LIGHT to be an honest, earnest, humble and Active True Christian Spiritualist constantly in their Service, a servant and not a master then.

Disabuse yourselves of thinking that you are prepared to be all things to all people. Most of you are not even close to being anything to yourselves even in a Spiritual Way.

And when you Pray, do so within yourself and in the silence of your own mind and be sure that all your prayers are of a non-specific call for guidance for yourself and others who you do have a heart and mind to make intercession for.

Now you should completely know Who, What, When, Where, Why and the How of your being and the mechanics of your Doing. There is little more we can relate to you to assist you in your calling for Now the Way to “The Way” is yours and your Future hangs in the manner of your choice to treat it and create it. Choose Wisely!

With the exception of CPM #30 and CPM #31 which are not pertinent to you, nor a barrier to your success or failure at this time, you have the Complete Message of I Paul in your possession with the additional exceptions of some addendums to CPM #29, The Unknown Gospel, the Truth of

the Pyramids and Atlantis and the Four Earths, the correct interpretations of Romans, Galatians, Philippians and the Thessalonians, none of which can possibly hinder any one of you from successively achieving to the heights of becoming Fully Human and Fully Spiritual and a True Christian Spiritualist.

Therefore, Come Follow the Message to its origins and to its fulfillment at the Happening of The ALL in ALL.

May the Grace and the Mercy of the Supreme Spirit be made manifest in you all and may the Energy, the Power, and the Wisdom of LIGHT lead you and protect you in the Light of this Earth and Guide you all into the Light there.

Doing takes priority then over Being! Compromise with the Truth of the Message is impossible and indecision is tantamount to rejection of this Life and the Life within you. Let, then, the Dead bury the Dead.

In Faith, Hope, Love, Truth, Wisdom,

Unity and Everlasting Peace,

Your Servant,

I Paul.



## 3 - The Handbook for Family Members

Greetings:

Dear brothers, sisters, Partners, Apostles, Ambassadors, Disciples and Servants, Mystics, Chief Evangelists, Teachers, Adepts and members of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL of W-303, and especially to the Mystic of the 303's and their Director "T" and the Directors of the branches designated as Virginia Beach and Waquoit-Falmouth, "DH" and "G."

The Hand-Book for all Family Members will, as of this date, be as follows:

1. The Chief Patriarch Missiles Book and its Addendums.
2. The Communications of I Paul.
3. The Curse of "Self" - Yourself (Addendum #6 to CPM #29).
4. The Discernment.

These are the Heart and the Minds of "The Book of Life."

Love them, utilize them wisely and Righteously and Respect them as your Life for they are your Life!

The balance of the Message of I Paul is for your

edification and for your enlightenment in your tasks of Teaching and Preaching and in living and following the Spiritual Way of Life.

The yoke is loosened and the burden is lightened.

In all Love for Unity, Peace and Success,

Your Servant,

I Paul.

## **4 - A Laying On of the Truth About the Mammon Business**

Greetings:

My dear brothers and sisters of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL.

We, the Family, are no-wise in the mammon business and the preoccupation of the Religionists and their love of mammon for mammon's sake alone thoroughly disgusts me.

We are strictly into Spiritual Reality, first and foremost, yesterday, today and God Willing tomorrow also.

Yet, we do, as do all Families have financial obligations that must be met in a timely fashion and strictly on a freedom of choice basis - a voluntary one then. In this, as in all material-spiritual matters, your Conscience ought to be your guide to all your Sharing and Caring decisions and Acts.

If it be True that the Message is and continues to be a blessing in your life, then I am sure you will support it in all you do.

My thoughts on money are very simple and uncomplicated: Money is very religious. It has been written that money is the root of all evil and being anti-religion I

fully understand what that means - one's love of money and one's hoarding of it over and above their needs of it wherein it cannot possibly do Good-Works.

There is no Well-Being in the Hate of it either especially if that hate is directed toward the absence of it.

I've heard many a religionist state that money is at the very foundation of all "back-sliding." Don't you believe it. A religionist cannot back-slide, money or no money, it's an impossibility - there simply is no further space left for them to back-slide to and no greater ignorance left for them to embrace.

You see, the Christian religions' mother church was quick, too quick, to devise means to attain to Power and Wealth with no thought given to ends until now it is too late to correct their most grave "mistakes."

We shall never allow such matters to overtake or corrupt our Family. So do yourself and all of us a favor, don't waste your money and especially your breath here unless you are convinced that you have been gifted with the Way to "The Way" - The Message of I Paul.

In all sincerity and Love,

Your Servant, I Paul.

## **5 - The Immortality of the Human Spirit, the True-Self of Man-Woman**

Greetings:

My dear brothers and sisters, may the Grace and Mercy of Soul be with you and may the Power and Wisdom of LIGHT guide you All into the Light.

Immortality, for your enlightenment and for your teaching, preaching, sharing and caring efforts, means an unceasing duration of Life or a deathless existence as apart from eternity which means “no beginning” as of the Supreme Spirit, God, LIFE then.

Here it means that the human man-woman’s spirit endures forever even though the human body ceases to exist and of which there is no after-life or resurrection of the human body, i.e., life, soul, breath, physical-material-matter being. It is not a contrived nor symbolic immortality either. It is Real.

Neither does it mean a compounding into the eternal existence of the Supreme Spirit or transmigration into another being.

Immortality, then, means actual continuation of one’s True Existence through the uniting of the opposites, i.e., the

lower and the higher minds.

We can cite many arguments for this Truth of the Immortality of the human man-woman spirit. From its nature of being created in the image of God, Spirit. From its unlimited spiritual capacities, from the necessity of the Universal Plan of LIFE for Life and life, from the necessity of the future well-being of the Laws of Position, Order, Inheritance, Change, Will and Purpose.

And the best of all, needing no argument nor apology, is our own personal, individual and finally collective contact with the Spirit Realms and the spirits of the dead man-woman natural-physical-material bodies.

These Receivings and my own Receiving of the Message are the Real Proofs of the Immortality of the spirits of man-woman who have existed in the flesh and blood form here, on this Earth.

The spirit of man-woman being immortal is therefore also incorruptible, being simple it was created eternal, being spirit it is not subject to any dependence whatsoever on anything of a non-spiritual nature.

The spirits of men-women were created perfectly while man-woman were Perfectly Created but not created perfect. Hence, the spirit is immortal but the man-woman at death

cease to exist, here, there, or anywhere.

What God has made Perfect remains perfect.

For your own edification and the specific reasons stated above.

I Paul, in All Love remain, Your Servant.



## 6 - Only Two Kinds of Being

Greetings:

I Paul servant to LIFE and disciple to LIGHT not by man but by Spirit, for the deliverance of the Family of LIFE unto the New Worlds from the yoke of this present evil world according to the Will of God and The Father of Life.

With no trace of religion or theology, with absolutely no involvement of doctrine or dogma, with no contrivance or self-serving thoughts whatsoever, the simple truth then, we give you the following in all Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love for your very usefulness and toward the expediency of the Well-Being of All of mankind.

I Frank, my old, past man will ask and I Paul, my new Now and Future Being will answer.

What is the meaning of soul? - human life!

What is the meaning of spirit? Immortal created Life!

What is the meaning of Soul? The Divine Uncreated Eternal Eternity, i.e., God, LIFE then; The Supreme Spirit, the Three Omni's then!

What is the meaning of Spirit? The Supreme Spirit, God or LIFE; the Uncreated then and all of its Attributes of Being,

i.e., Soul, Love, Truth, The Three Omni's then and the Created Christ, the LIGHT then and the beginning of and the end of All Life and those others who were created through, by, and for the LIGHT as living man-woman beings who have lived the natural life, the carnal life, the soul life, the "me" life, the "I" life, the "we" life and who have gone over into the Higher Realms, i.e., the Light realms or the Dark realm as their True-Selves in the Unity of the minds or intellects.

Then there is also the matter, a grave matter, of those we cite as the earth-bound, the deceased who exited the natural life in a carnal state of distorted mind. A dis-eased and non-united state of the higher and lower intellects or Minds, then. These are in no-wise in any silly, contrived religious state of limbo, purgatory, sleep or hell. They are in a chaotic state of mind clinging to this nether world in a spiritual-material dis-ease. These earth-bound spirits need the Happening of the ALL in ALL for their release into the Light.

Now, I Paul, with the active mind of I Paul, tell you this about myself. I am a religious atheist, a philosophy agnostic, and a Faithful and Devoted expounder of Christian Spiritualism, highly Anti-religion then and Fully Spiritual in the Christ Way with the Fully Activated Mind of Christ

concerned only for the Well-Being of All, an Eater of Strong Meat, a spiritual genius, a spirit guide and medium of spirit for mankind everywhere, a Traveler to and a Mystic of the Fifth Pillar, Wisdom, but most of all I Paul am Servant to LIFE and LIGHT, to their Family and to the Happening of the ALL in ALL. Therefore,

In All Love and Peace,

Your servant,

I Paul.

Know your Needs, secure them well and cherish them and be Well!

## **7 - The Key to the Message, the Way to “The Way”**

Greetings:

When you Understand this you can Understand every section of The Message as well as Scripture.

In the Greek Adam (man) was created psychikos, a natural man, carnal man, then.

The “second man” was created a living pneuma, a spirit, then.

1st man = natural man, body, being, you, me, I, soul or breath or false man, then.

Second man = True-Self - spirit, immortal being in a body, vessel, sheath, soul or breath container; “True-man,” then.

From the language of Scripture, literally, man was created exactly as the animals were, nothing more and nothing less, just “beings” or more properly “living beings.” Then man and man alone was “upgraded” by being endowed with “a spirit,” this being the “True-Image” of The Creator, or the Created Image of God, and the distinction between man and other “living things.” [This incarnation is what activates the psyche (mind) of the

natural man; which in turn needs activate the Mind of Christ and unite with the psyche of The True-Self to complete the cycle.] This is the reason God will not do for man what man can do for himself. [And must do for other living beings, souls then but without the spirit]. It's the reason Death has no "dread" meaning, contains nothing to "fear" or "doubt" or cause "anxiety" or "sorrow," why there is no "strength" in "sorrow." Why the natural body, soul, ceases to exist, why it is "waste." It answers the questions of, the "mystery" of the Universal Plan. The reason why God is no respecter of persons. The "reason why" and the "Purpose for" becoming Fully Human and Fully Spiritual before the demise of the natural body here. It explains "who" and "what" the miracle is, the sign is, the magic-wand is, the "Secret" Panacea is. It explains "gift," "time," "Power," "Wisdom," "Called," "Predestination," "Chosen" and so forth.

True-Man then does not come into being at conception, it comes after The natural man is created, i.e., "born" of a woman in the natural manner.

There is no virgin birth, no assumption of flesh and blood, no resurrection, no transmigration, only Incarnation wherein the Soul sends out and Wisdom calls back, i.e., God-Christ. There are no "accidents" then, it, "Life" is all very

“simple” and very uncomplicated “as created.”

These then are the True Keys to The Kingdom. The Kingdom of God is the very heart of the “unknown gospel” and the “monad” of Jesus’ teachings and the Message of I Paul, the Book of Life, and the Book of The Two Ways, LIFE and LIGHT or Life or Death or Light or Darkness.

The problem of human existence and its distorted disease is not God or Christ but solely man-woman, i.e., their love of the physical-material-matter aspects of their being wherein they pay little or no true attention to the “True-Self” aspect of their being, their spirit. It’s strictly a “lip-service” attention, a “going-thru-the motions” attention, a “charade,” a “facade,” a “pretense,” a “procrastinating” and “perfunctory” performance at best, “rote,” then. And what is the end result of this love affair with the physical-material aspect? Death, Darkness then or Earth-Boundedness. No chance then to take everything with you in an “ease-of-mind.”

There are thousands of points in “The Message” to “guide,” “instruct,” “assist” “everyone” as to what is “Good,” “Right” and “True” and what isn’t - both physically and spiritually. There are hundreds of pure exhortations (expressions of Love for your “Well-Being” really) outlining the differences between “Mistake” and

“Error,” “Good” or “Bad” or “Indifferent.” They are ignored.

You see Jesus laid a horrendous sword across the hearts of living souls -physical man-woman then. They are either wheat or tares, good or bad fish, faithful or unfaithful servants, wise or foolish virgins, fruitful or unfruitful trees, saved or lost, light or dark, forgiven or unforgiven, for or against the Will of God, in the spirit or in the flesh, following The Way or following your own way. Jesus made it clear which one you should be but he left the choice up to you, example “Come, Follow Me; Let the dead bury the dead,” and so forth.

Isn't it now simple to “see” where I Paul in The Message is coming from? Where I have been coming from for so long a time?

The problem is still “self.” It comes first and not the Message, period!

In Mark, Matthew and Luke, Jesus was a Jewish man from Nazareth, a carpenter's son. Of course, this truth is clouded by glosses, interpolations, inserts, especially of a theological nature.

In John, the Jews are of the devil and Jesus is neither man nor Jew! John is the most blatantly anti-Semitic gospel



and of gnostic origin against the Jews, rewritten by early Church fanatics and scribes when the nascent structure made the break from the Jerusalem movement, the original Jewish-Messianists, the disciples, later called Apostles by the Church who were extricated, miraculously separated from their Jewishness through their “church” association with Jesus.

All of these manufactured and cunningly executed deceptions by the Church to bring in the pagans mainly and to make Jesus the Son of God did not happen “over-night” but over years of contrived doctrines, forgery, dogmas, councils, theology and papal bulls.

They changed the True meaning of soul, mind, spirit, sacrifice and man. They invented Resurrection, borrowed Immaculate Conception, Assumption, Transfiguration, Mother of God, Son of God, and although borrowed, they gave new but untrue meaning to evil spirits, Satan, Hell and out and out invented limbo and purgatory, indulgences, special dispensations, the forgiving of sins and so forth, all for the purpose of Wealth and Power which culminated in the “Holy Roman Empire” which led to schism and to the Christian Religion Faith as it stands today - a shambles of morals and ethics, split asunder into more divisions of sects, cults, denominations than I care to record herein.

From all of this and the true history of the Church, the Christian Religion and the False Papacy and especially from the points and keys in The Message, we can “see” how the “original gospel,” the so-called “unknown gospel,” the “Q Source” to the historian and the theologian was butchered to make “ends” conform to the Church’s religious “means”!

Mark knows nothing of a virgin birth nor a genealogy concerning Jesus, and so forth. The Epistles of Paul are also silent on these points, except as in Galatians 4:4 and 4:5. A great silence fell over the letters of Paul. They mysteriously disappeared from the scene only to reappear and the mystery solved - they were all, even the bogus ones freshened-up and “corrected” to conform with the Church doctrine and they necessitated the invention and forgery of the Acts of the Apostles to make Peter equal in status with Paul, the claimed, erroneously so, co-founders of The Church.

To Paul, the natural man body (psychikos), the mind (psyche), and the spirit (pneuma) are the basics of man as a whole being or entity - separate from all other “living beings or things,” quite distinct, unique, then, in the Universal Plan of the Father, the Creator, then.

Now if you can grasp all of this and carry it all with you

then you can discern all or any part of The Message of I Paul very easily. It's truly that simple. The only catch in all of this is that you must be in and on the Way to The Way in your every word, act and deed otherwise the Message and "the Way" will remain ever foreign to you. "We will play no games" becomes quite evident then in its primary usage and meaning.

This Communication of mine, numbered 7, is first for your perusal, secondly for the perusal of the Leadership and thirdly for the edification of the Family membership.

If it is used wisely and not abused then all trace of excuse should be behind us and the Way totally clear to finally get on with our tasks, goals and missions.

Begin Now by leaving all those matters that do not Matter alone and start Doing and forget about being a non-spiritual and carnal mess!

Place the Message of I Paul and I Paul First and "self" last, Now and in the Future.

It's that simple.

In all love for Unity and Peace,

Your servant,

I Paul.

## 8 - The Basis of the Message

Greetings:

The Message of I Paul, the Book of Life and the Book of The Two Ways are wound around two primary truths.

1. Proof of Life after death.
2. Personal spiritual needs in tandem with the collective human needs of ALL in ALL.

In the three messages above, or “Books,” Men-Women are called to live in two worlds at the same moment;

1. the physical world of persons and;
2. the spiritual realm of spirits (heaven) so that when the personal-spiritual eschaton comes they will be properly fit to enter into the Kingdom of LIFE with real Life having been Fully Human and Fully Spiritual prior to decease here.

Jesus, and Paul after him, spoke primarily to individuals and about them and their needs. We are asked to serve the Kingdom, first as individuals and secondly as a group. The bottom-line impact of God’s Kingdom power is the human mind and its personality. But most individuals today are still holding to the form of religion and in so doing they are denying the power of the Kingdom within them.

Our greatest need at present is to touch the individual heart and reach the individual mind by showing, telling then, and demonstrating then, the Way to The Way to them. We do this both as individuals and as a collective through gatherings, newsletters and the distribution of pertinent sections of the Message to these various “stuck-in” individuals.

And what are we to demonstrate? I am sure you will all say love. What is love? I am sure you will all say Truth. What is Truth? Unless and until you know this you cannot demonstrate it except by accident and you know what those are. What you need to demonstrate is your honesty to and in personal spiritualism, personal morality, personal discipline and the need for them, the love of them and the ultimate results of them. These are the very primaries of all Sharing and Caring and without them you cannot possibly share what you do not personally have and hold any more than you can love another until you have learned to love yourself, sans “self”! I find that human pride is still a barrier to good-works. People seem to forget that Doing is much better than Being, than being puffed-up and a seeker of personal accolades for doing things which, as Christian Spiritualists, is their individual responsibility in the first place. Seeking praise is bad enough in itself but to seek praise for doing something that should have been done

automatically and with no hesitation simply because it needed to be done is the very height of vain-glory and spiritual ignorance. It's pretty dumb from the human viewpoint also.

Being highly motivated by spirit is not demonstrated by any rushing forward blindly. On the contrary, it is a clear indication of the supremacy of "self" in such mannerisms.

A mark of a Christian Spiritualist's preparation is their ability to be fully conversant in, of, and from the Message and to be consistent in its application and use for the Good, Right and True.

We most certainly do not need to seek-out our competition - we're virtually surrounded by it. And we have nothing to fear but "self" for we have the Mind of Christ but we need employ it. We have the Kingdom Now if only we will utilize it for the benefit of All. For it is always within the range of our eyes and ears and we in its. For although the Kingdom cometh not by observation, neither shall they say, lo here! or, lo there! for, behold the Kingdom of God is within you.

Behold! Yea, for there is nothing that is not within you!

Are you not the miracle and all the signs? What! Know you not that you are Gods?

Why do you fear then? What are you afraid of, God? Why do you hate, anger? Why are you bigoted? Why are you unhappy, sad, in a state of misery? Why are you unloving, unfair, unjust? Why do you place “self” first and all others last? Why are you selfish, unruly? I’ll tell you why - You cannot separate The Mind from the brain - you have no Order, no Action - No Justice.

- Order - Action - Justice -

Let your light so shine among people that they may see your good works for the time is over-due for the ending of the charade and facade of the Great Schism of Man from LIFE and the Real Life.

You have the opportunity to be validated for your good works while I Paul standing in the shadows of men’s minds will accept their vilifications.

Action is the key to all things.

Action changes all things.

Action brings forth all good things.

Action heals all wounds.

Action brings help.

Action activates Energy.

Action is the Kingdom within at work.

Action is Power and Wisdom.

Action is tireless.

Action is Truth in motion.

Action is perpetual revelation.

Action is thought creating.

Action is LIFE and Life and life.

Action is LIGHT and Righteous Light.

All of these and more, are, of course, the things of Right Action, the products of Good Action and the manifestations of True Action.

Inaction is spiritual stagnation, the cause of all the wrongs, the troubles, the evils of this materialistically minded world. The light of the minds of men-women, for all practical purposes and spiritual righteousness, are buried, hidden under a basket and their salt has lost its savor. No one can eat Jesus and then follow him - no, we need to follow Jesus and then eat, Feast, with him! That's the supper we should all be preparing for and we have the invitation via predestination!

I have learned first hand that God's Justice works hand



in hand with mine. That's why I do not wish for something bad to happen to someone else for inevitably I know the same shall befall me. Be Righteous and Righteous shall be your lot. Be Action and action will bless you. Be inactive and inaction will be your destruction. Be trouble and reap trouble. Be miserable and find misery. Be evil and see darkness come upon you, engulf you, swallow you up.

Let your light shine forth to one and all and see the Light and the LIGHT of The ALL in ALL.

You see, the Good or the bad, the Right or the wrong, the True or the untrue are all equally simple to manifest and Be. The choice, the Freedom of choice, is yours for that is the love of God's Justice wherein God actually allows you to Judge yourself through your Actions and/or inactions. This way, you see, everyday is Judgment Day and you are the Judge under God's imperative.

You may be aware or unaware of this self-judgment, it matters not, for you are Aware of The Need of Order in all your thoughts, acts and deeds and it is this "order" that is God's Justice, yesterday, today, tomorrow; past, present, eschaton; Now-Future; you carry it with you no matter where you go for it is of the Spirit and not of matter, time or space.

Now can you truly "see" why slaying "self" and

“recreating” yourself daily is so imperative a matter and why Order should be so dear to our hearts and minds? I sincerely hope so.

Order then is Justice in Action and Right Action is Order.

In All Love,

I Paul.

## 9 - The “Rules” of Common Sense

“The Footsteps upward are the steps of the Now for The Way is Inward and Outward.” (Jesus)

I Paul, servant of LIFE and of The Power and Wisdom of LIGHT greet you one and All in Love, Truth, Unity and Peace.

The Family here has Seven Laws and Thirty-One Ordinances (lesser laws) to comply with. In addition, we have the Pillar of W-303, our Earth, which is “Righteous,” and in and of itself, a Law of Common Sense. A Rule then.

The Above thirty-nine should, therefore, suffice for all needs as we travel along the Way to The Way. We have also been Commanded to Love, to Think, and to Obey, i.e., The Mind of Christ.

We have, in addition to the above, the Way of Life Principles designed to guide us, not rule us. So we have no hard, fast rules or regulations other than those stated above and The Rule of Common Sense that pertains to Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love. But, we do have “rights,” both Spiritual and Physical!

It is of these “Rights” and their inherent “Rules” that make them workable that I Paul wish to convey to you herein.

Freedom, both Spiritual and Physical, not being a gift, per se, is earned, and for our purposes and needs it is earned via the route of the Way to The Way.

Physically, Freedom is just about whatever you wish and allow it to be, Period! Still, it is highly restricted by the mores and rules of Society and its variant environments, its body politic and its various races and creeds.

Spiritually, the correct and the only interpretation is “Obedience” to the Mind of Christ via the route of thought and Love in Action, in association with the Seven Laws and the Thirty-One Ordinances, the Rule of Righteous Common Sense as given and as explained in The Message.

This “Obedience,” then, cannot be Freely taken out of context, cannot be watered-down to fit anyone’s wants, cannot be, in any way, shape or form humanized, intellectualized, sectionalized or rationalized to fit anyone’s “self” or selfish physical wants nor their self-seeking or self-serving purposes whatsoever. This is its Rule, then! And, if it be “its” rule, is it not also, “ours”? Of course; since man-woman are the Highest Forms, “the” highest form, of life here, it is Common Sense that they live, and die, under some sort of Rule. And, if this be so, then there must be, also, some sort of Rule that governs “their” immortality also. And since it is a “rule” that flesh and

blood cannot enter the Kingdom of LIFE, it stands to Reason that another “rule” must prevail. Now how do you suppose we ought to address that “rule;” as one of choice, one of Change, or as one of Freedom? Or should we treat it, use it, respect it, understand it, as one of Freedom in our choice and our change to ward the Kingdom?

If one has been following the Message properly, then one would have discerned that the only difference between human life and all other life on this Earth is the Mind. And what makes some humans “different” from their sisters and brothers, their contemporaries then, is the Union of this human mind with its counterpart, the spirit mind. This Union of, or its absence of, is the difference between Ease and dis-ease, Right and Wrong, Good and Evil, Truth and untruth.

This Union of Minds is flexible, not always being in its possible state of Union, but possible of being so according to the effort exerted - the Need of The Union - the desire of it and the motivation, its depth, for it. It's one's human ability to adhere to The Mind of Christ, man's Well-Being, that determines the strength of, and the Reality of The Union. This Union of these essences of “the” Mind then is what determines the difference between the “animal” and the “brute-creature,” and, therefore, “True-Man,” that which

is Fully-Human and Fully-Spiritual. This Union, then, is the Rule above all rules and the Will that Wills above All Wills.

If you have been following the dictates, the guidelines, the rules of The Message, its knowledge, as it unfolded, as I have, then you have discerned the difference between human life and “human life.” The knowledge of it is not its paramount excellency - its Action in and of the knowledge is!

Therefore, there is no collectivity of fixed, hard-core rules, rites, dogmas, doctrines, and so forth, that demand or force your compliance. Only you have the Freedom to do that. The choice of exerting the effort called for by the Message and the act of enforcing the directives, principles, guidelines given by the Spirit of The Message are up to you as an individual, your choice then, your Freedom.

There is, in all respects, only one slave, one prisoner, one servant of the earthly Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL and that's by choice also. The Freedom of it. Forgive me if I boast but I speak as a man now and I am still free to do what I will as a man. Yet I still remain steadfast in the race for The Light and not a mere spectator. The side-lines are not for such as me who has the knowledge of the difference between the human being and “the human being.” This is the Rule for Reason - the Reason for Rule.

Now it would seem a rule to me that every human being wishes to live as long as possible here. Yet the statistics, even the daily ones, do not bear this out. The entire human race lives under a shadow of fear, some of it of their own making, some of it imaginary and some of it created by others of which they had no control, or believe(d) so. I won't spend time here with or about such things as mayhem on the highways, crime in the streets, injustice, be it social, civic or political, bigotry, hunger, poverty, unemployment, acid rain and other far-reaching pollutants, terrorism, political, religious or both, suicide, cancer, AIDS and so forth. All of these things cause fear, doubt, worry, anxiety and even death as do all acts of nature of which man is a part of under the Physical Law(s) of the Universe.

Yet, the majority of the human race lives, almost casually, with death and its various causes, reasons and meanings, every day without so much as giving it a second thought. Call it apathy, the thought of "it only happens to someone else" or "it is only happening somewhere else." It doesn't permeate man's thoughts, night and day, as does one cause and one fear of death. The Nuclear Holocaust. The question is why?

Starting from the point of truth that physical death is death, why, as it seems, is nuclear death the most dreaded?

Is it because it's so final, it could mean the end of our world? I don't believe so, simply because the religions have been preaching that end for hundreds, thousands of years even. Is it because it's so quick, so final? So close to home? Because of one's personal involvement, no place to hide? Is it because it includes our families, our children, our friends? Is it because we view it as all-inclusive and not exclusive such as a plague somewhere, a famine somewhere, a war, such as Vietnam somewhere, a natural disaster somewhere, where we are not?

Why is it, then, that man, surrounded by death and its myriad of causes which he treats as common(place) and so matter-of-factly, rises up, erupts even, over the possibility of a nuclear travesty? Not since the advent of Jesus of Nazareth has something come along in the history of man that has so drastically changed his thinking and his way of Life.

The New Technology Era, spawned by World War Two, which fostered The Nuclear Age, which in turn fostered another age - a new Age of Fear. And ever since then, the Nuclear Supremacy Race has in turn fostered an ever-increasing New Way of Life out of this Age of Fear and terror. The "I Want it right Now" Way of Life.

Tomorrow may be too late!



It's a way of life that is all Take and no Give.

It's been called an Age of Permissiveness but that's foolish, for man has always lived in and from a state of permissiveness, either openly or hidden - the State of Anything goes and usually does. It has been stated as the "eat, drink and be merry" state for tomorrow we die. Call these "Ages" anything you wish but in reality they have all been ages of Fear, and now, because of the Nuclear Age and race, we live in a New Age of Fear - The Fear that there will be no tomorrow - The terrible uncertainty of it all - Life, that is!

What we Need is a true return to LIFE and Life.

Here we are, mankind, living, existing really, in the shadow of our true being in a state of utter fear manifested by a nuclear supremacy race manufactured by human beings whose only goal is to rule the Universe, a Universe that doesn't belong to them, cannot belong to them and never will, in its totality, belong to "them," nuclear supremacy or not! The atomic power of mankind is minuscule compared to the physical and Psychical Laws-rules of The Supreme Spirit - and let me add - it's high time that all the fools of this earth collectively come to this understanding.

It's time mankind here stood on its own two feet and

stopped running away from “some-thing” and started running towards “Some-Thing” - LIFE and LIGHT.

I Paul fear nothing. Arms race or no race. I Paul know them all.

To me, to know the Future would be too much, it would take the mystery out of life, out of the Now and its purpose for my, your, our Being! The Past is important, but only because it explains the Now, the Present, where I AM.

Allow me, your brother and servant, to tell you this:

What is the Kingdom of God? The Kingdom, in essence, is The Spiritual dimension of The Supreme Spirit!

What's the difference between a human being and a “Human Being”?

me, you, others - In All Love, I Paul.

What is the Kingdom of God? The kingdom in essence is the Spiritual dimension of the Supreme Spirit.

What is Love? Eternity!

What is Truth? The Eternal Eternity!

What is God? The Kingdom!

## **10 - A Year of Love - 1986 to Eternity**

Greetings:

“Love one another as I have loved you” Jesus said. “People who love are the most valuable people on earth and so shall they also be in the Kingdom” Jesus said. “Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God” Jesus said. Those who truly love, you see, stand for Unity and Peace (the peacemakers then).

“Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God” Jesus said. Love is the only purifier of the heart.

“Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy” Jesus said. Soft-heartedness is a loving heart, compassionate love. “Ye have heard that it hath been said, thou shalt love thy neighbor, and hate thy enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, and persecute you: that ye may be the children of your Father which is in his Kingdom: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust,” Jesus said.

Now if you love yourself, love your neighbors and love your enemies, then you are Love in Action and if so, you are one of the most valuable people on this Earth.

You see dear sisters and brothers, if you can love your

enemies, and you just might need to include yourself in that category, then you can know, really “know” the Love of Life and of LIFE as did Jesus. If you cannot and will not, then you do know the wrath of God and the Judgment of God and the curse of “self”!

“Love is not blind, neither deaf,” Jesus said, “for those who do love see and those who do love hear.” “God is not the God of the dead, but of the living,” Jesus said; “and the living are the loving, the truthful and the Righteous,” said he. “If you live by love you will be saved by Truth” Jesus said, for it is the Truth that will set you free, but there can be no Truth without Love!

The Message itself is a Gift of Love from Spirits to spirits, from Spirit to men and women everywhere, in the name of the LIGHT and the LIFE, an ALL in ALL Message then.

“The heart is truly Faith for Faith is truly Love” Jesus said, and where your Faith is, is where your heart is.

My dear sisters and brothers listen!

Do you realize that All Life is the most precious of all jewels and Love is its insurance and protection? Love worketh no evils, causes no ills, is kind, is patient, is safe, sound and sober. For Love is Truth, yea! Just as Truth is Love

and they are Peace and together they are Unity, Oneness, Freedom in Life and LIFE and LIGHT is all of them, even the Soul. The Wisdom, the Knowledge, the Understanding, the Intelligence, the Love in all of it, for all of it is the fulfillment of Life in LIFE, LIGHT and the ALL in ALL.

Now if you say I'm free to love, let me remind you all, that the "love oneself" level and the "love one another" level are going to pass away among other things, and all that will be left to Love is the "LIFE IS - I AM" level of "I Love LIFE - LIFE loves me" and wants me! And that, through Grace, will never pass away. Now for those who do "see" and do "hear" I say unto you exclusively these things:

The Love of LIFE is an intuition or direct sense that all things in the natural, ethical, and intellectual orders work together for the Good, the Right and the True despite appearances to the contrary. Truth acquired best enables us to realize Wisdom, but not Divine Love, for which Faith is necessary.

To "know God" is to see in the laws and events of the Natural and the Supernatural the revelations of his Will, his eternal decrees. To "love God" is to accept the order of this Earth, with all its necessity and invariable sequence and even with its apparent indifference to moral character, as not only inevitable, but perfect. Further, to know and love

God is to know and love one's brethren, for they too are part of that real world which "expresses" God - and hence all that makes for their welfare makes for one's own. While we necessarily have only partial experience of the good, right and true, we have also what appears to be their contraries - but the appearance is illusory, it is of the form and not of the life. The spirit tends towards that with which it has greatest affinity, as the sunflower tends toward the sun, and this affinity in the human spirit (the true-self) is Love manifesting itself. The symbol of Love at its highest level is fire, for Love converts the object of love into the lover, as fire is of all elements the most active, the most potent to transform others into itself. It is the divine in man that makes him, or impels him, to Love God as God Is in reality, and the goal or aim of that Love is to take God into himself (or herself) to become one with God.

Therefore, men and women should wrap themselves in the Great Love of Life and LIFE and clothe themselves in the great garment of Light and LIGHT - and should account therein all things alike - because in The Creature they find nothing that can give them, without LIFE and LIGHT, the least satisfaction, and because also nothing of harm can touch them more while they remain in this Love. We love because God first loved us. God's Love is the very source of all of our love and that at every level of our expressions of

love, including sex. We are only able to love at all because LIFE and LIGHT indwell us. Therefore, Divine Love is the source then of all human love, but the latter must learn to know itself through human relations before it can rise to the higher level of immediate communion with that from which it came. Christ stands for Love divine made absolutely manifest in sacrifice, the fundamental fact of all existence, the fact, the Reality, the Truth that explains everything else. There never would have been any egoism, any violence, any greed, or suffering, but for the necessity of affording Love its opportunity to burst forth in all its splendor. The last in order of time is also that with which time began - the highest to be evolved is also that which was first involved.

God so loved the Earths, He Gave. That is an accurate and expressive summing up of the Great Mystery of the Divine manifestation in this world of worlds. God is Love - hence the impulse to Create. God is Love - hence the sacrifice of Love in the limited and imperfect life of the common, and the slow and painful struggle upward to ever fuller and richer modes of spiritual achievement, until at length the consummation shall be reached wherein all things shall be summed up in Christ, the Mind of Christ, and Love be All in All.

The Love of God is the Love of Good and Goodness. The

Lumerian term for God is identical with Good-God - The Good one - personified Goodness. (Jesus said, "Don't call me good, there is only One who is good.") There is in that derivation not a mere play of words, - there is a deep Truth. None loves God but he who loves Good. To love your neighbor is Good. To love God is to love what God is. God is Spirit and God is Pure, and he who loves purity can love God. God is True - God is Just - and he who loves these things out of God may love them in God - and God for them, because God is Good, Right, True, Pure and Just. No other love is real, none else lasts. "The Way" is to throw ourselves in Faithful Love on the Eternal Love of our Father. To do that is to "know" that there is a divine and good end to all. To know that is to know that all which we see, however dark it be, is education. To know the victory of Love and Goodness, Justice and Truth, and knowing it to throw ourselves on that side, and to feel in doing it we are chiming in with God, and yielding our lives into the very hand of LIFE.

There is no doubt, that if we can do that, that our pursuit of the Secret of Life, and the tragedy in which we live, will ennoble us. For so our minds will be steadily set towards right, and will company with the noble things of Justice, Love and Truth, so that, though we are involved in tempest after tempest of feeling and thought, we shall finally get the good of these tempests in the education



which they give to our whole Nature. Knowledge of the spirits evolution shows clearly that there is not an outside deity who superintends our progress or lack of it.

God limits himself in Creation and only interferes in his universe through his human agents and “other agents” who act from divine impulse within.

Love, then, the Uniter of All, is the attraction towards the within instead of the without.

Regard the True-Self as loving and wise, both on the planes above and the plane below. Behold all the virtues and all the qualities that endure, as living within It. And understand the outward manifestation of the Supreme, which appears to the ignorant, suffering lower nature, as inexorable law, dark, obscure and repellent. From the lower nature proceed the Foundations of human experience (for the sense nature is the basis of all that is of utility and beauty to the lower mind).

Through “strife,” or the struggle for existence on the physical plane, all the lower forms of life subsist in multifarious separateness. But the sense of separateness is overcome so far as souls unite in knowledge of their own nature, and in realization of Truth, for Wisdom brings them together in Love and enables them to live in harmony and mutual service. But just as it (strife) is constantly rushing

forward blindly, just so far there ever kept coming in a gentle, immortal stream of perfect Love - and all at once what I learned before were immortal were coming into being as mortal things. To that degree then in which the lower mind responds through its vehicles of consciousness, the higher mind forth pours energy and raises the lower mind to the higher - and so the immortal ideals tend to actualize as involution proceeds towards evolution. Thus the natural gives way to the spiritual and the spirit is purified and rises steadily to life everlasting. To know LIFE and LIGHT is to attain to the sublimest conception in the universe. To love them is to bind ourselves to Spirits who are fitted, as no other Beings are, to penetrate and move our hearts and minds; in loving whom, we love the great, the good, the beautiful, and the infinite One - and under whose influence the spirit unfolds itself as a perennial plant under the cherishing sun. This constitutes the Chief Glory of Spiritualism. It ennobles the spirit. In this is what its unrivaled dignity, happiness and Truth consist.

Therefore the year 1986 to eternity is the time of Love, for only Love is true, wise, vital, vigorous, vibrant and as it grows in you, LIFE grows in You!

In All Love, your servant,

I Paul.

## 11 - The Servant

Greetings:

I Paul, Spirit Guide and Servant to the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL gives this explanation of the servant.

“A disciple is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his master.”

Jesus said that and Jesus considered himself and all those who followed him the same. The “servant” stands in a special relationship to LIFE. He is given charge of the responsibility to watch, to be faithful, to be alert, aware, vital, vibrant, vigorous, to open the door, to show the Way, to do what is commanded, all of which are characteristics of discipleship - servanthship. A disciple-servant must transmit the LIGHT’S invitation - call all to the Light then. This demands a clear and decisive consciousness and a settled conscience at all times, day and night, and a mind free of want, selfishness, and “self.” They need be Love in Action demonstrating The Activated Mind of Christ and totally free of likes and dislikes wherein it applies to tasks assigned and quite especially when it comes to their brethren, neighbors, teachers and masters.

Their house must be sparkling clean. They need be the

salt of the earth and it must hold its savor. The Light need be in their eye at all times. They must hold the business of the Message uppermost and foremost in their minds. They must never be late for dinner and also dressed for the wedding. They need sow in season and harvest in season and they must be excellent weeders, careful always not to uproot the young and tender good shoots while properly dealing with the tares.

In summary then, they should emulate The Son of Man, love one another and treat all as they would have all treat them, in a just and loving manner with mercy and compassion and never, never make a Judgment until all the facts and conditions are perfectly clear in the minds and even then, only after asking for guidance and enlightenment.

A good servant always takes heed to what he hears for the servant knows that soundness in teaching will alone last - heaven and earth shall pass away but my words shall endure forever! A good servant is always sound, always practical, always educated, always wise, always encouraging and always frugal in his Discourse.

The True and Good Servant is as The Bread set before the Face of LIFE.

A True and Good Servant is an outward and visible sign

of an inward and spiritual grace. He or she, then, are always Present and in the Presence.

A True and Good servant realizes that he has the freedom of imperfect will, but he knows better and stays fettered to his or her Full Measure of Faith.

A True and faithful servant knows where his Soul is and how to obtain it.

Angels are LIFE'S creatures and servants in the Kingdom who also have duties toward mankind. Here on Earth and on other Earths which have been Christed, the earthlings who do obey the Mind of Christ are to be considered the angels of the LIGHT, its, his, creatures and his servants! Both types are guardians of specific matters in the interests of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL. And I might add that the called and chosen ones here on earth, men and women who are Spirituals, also have duties towards the creatures there for collectively we are all servants. Revelation 22:9 tells us a bit about this relationship as servants. You may wish also to see Hebrews 13:2. In this short paragraph we have a classic example of the visible and the invisible! (Revelation 1:20).

Every Good, Right, True and Faithful servant of Christ, the LIGHT then, knows who the Antichrist is. Its name is religion, its children are named Atheist and Agnostic and

their mother is called Invention. They live in the State of Wealth and their city is called Power.

A True Christian Spiritual servant knows that the true line of “the Way” is to fill out works with a Life of Faith and to clothe Faith with a body of good works.

Every Good servant of LIFE knows that Christ is the True LIGHT that lighteth everyone who enters this world and who subsequently enters the planes of Light upon leaving this Earth.

A faithful servant knows that an Apostle is “one who is sent.” That an Ambassador is “one who represents” and that a disciple is “one who follows” and that he or she themselves are “the ones who serve.”

A wise servant is one who “knows” that the sinfulness of sin is a belief in it. On the other hand they know that evil is the farthest away one can get from LIFE and the LIGHT.

A dedicated servant fully comprehends the following:

Accommodation is a word used to express the manner in which divine teachings-receivings convey and adapt divine truths-revelations to our comprehension. These, it is evident, must be fitted to the capacity, development, circumstances of those receiving these truths-revelations.

For example, Abraham, with his surroundings, could not receive what was given to David, or Isaiah, or Daniel, though he was the Father of the Faithful. So, again, is the use of parables an instance of accommodation. But, again, it is an accommodation to our limited power to speak to us of God's wrath or jealousy, or that his eye is upon us, his hand upholds us. It would be impossible for us to understand many things revealed to us of Spirit without some such accommodation from Spirit. But while fitted to our dwarfed power, yet they are themselves truths, which we are gradually enabled to understand better and to throw aside grosser, materialistic conceptions which the mere words would teach. Another form of accommodation is in the gradual addition to the fundamental elementary truths first received. Eve received a prophecy of a Christ, but a fuller one was given to Abraham, and still a fuller one to David and on and on up to the present moment. We practice this mode, rather of development than of accommodation, in teaching children. So Paul gave the Corinthians milk rather than meat in the beginning, just as he did with us. But a Positive accommodation perverts the truth and therefore it is inadmissible, and any attempt to explain difficult receivings upon such a principle must be condemned.

A Right and humble servant understands Casuistry, or "cases of consciences" as Paul called them. As a matter of

Christian Spiritual ethics, the solution of questions of conscience or duty should not be difficult if LIFE, LIGHT and the Message come first. One should look upon casuistry as the foundation for an 'ease of mind'. The devoted servant need not be told to Share and Care for and with his sisters and brothers and those less fortunate than themselves.

The very Wise and "seeking" Servant realizes that there is an "IF" in The Message and in LIFE'S relationship with Persons, through the LIGHT, that places them under responsible judgment. "Love your enemies so that you may be sons (and daughters) of your father." Sonship (daughtership) is conditional upon our accepting the Love of LIFE and so reflecting this Love in our lives. The loving of others is not a good deed or a "good-work" that we do in order to become children of LIFE - it is rather the spontaneous reflection of the inner fact that we have already become children of LIFE because we have accepted his Loving presence in all its imperative power. The Wise Servant knows that God's condition is an expression of LIFE'S Justice, the "other side" of his command - for we are given a command to obey, the ability to disobey, and the obligation to choose and the promise of reward and punishment conditional upon that choice. Yes, you do have a choice! And yes, LIFE does allow you to be the victim of your own punishment and you can make it as hard on



yourself as you, and you alone, see fit.

You wise servants know that all of this is a very truthful description of the Justice of LIFE. These conditions are also a sort of divine self-control, and are very significant in explaining the truth of LIFE'S Wrath and Love. The Condition then, is declaration that we are free, and testifies to the divine respect for our integrity. It is LIFE'S declaration that we are persons, not animals, not slaves, and that Freedom is one of the most precious marks of our humanity and our way as Christian Spiritualists. It is, then, LIFE through the LIGHT treating with Absolute seriousness both our Freedom and Its Command - and the Condition, too, is an imperative. The condition is the environment, the occasion, and the area of operation, for the Christian Spiritual ethics and principles. As humans and as spirituals we must make choices, we must make decisions, and by these we do Judge ourselves! So the Wise and "seeking" servant knows better than to have or to hold onto a broken relationship with The Supreme Spirit, whether it be at the LIGHT level, the Mind of Christ level, the True-Self level, the Message level, the neighbor level, the brother and sister level, the leadership of the Family level, The Family itself level, or at the "self" level!

The lazy and neglectful "servant" is the one who

professes to love but really doesn't. The one who claims to follow the Message, but neglects it to follow the dictates of "self" and "wants." The "hypocrite" is what Jesus often called them, the ones who pretended to be what they are not. The Family has them and they are "known." Nothing escapes Spirit and therefore Nothing escapes I Paul, not even the deepest recesses of your mind and your thoughts. We "know" those who live up to and fulfill their responsibilities to their own and to the Family. We "know" those who love their neighbors, their brothers and sisters, and yes, even their enemies as well as we "know" the ones who do not but, even worse, pretend to do so. These are, by nature, the children of wrath. Freedom, you see, is a demonstration of LIFE'S Love for us but LIFE'S Love will not be mocked, this LIFE will not tolerate and the Spirit's Wrath shall befall all those who attempt it. LIFE'S Love must be accepted and continually reflected and it must be obeyed for it to continue flowing in and it must be observed in your every word, act and deed.

The lazy and neglectful "servant" (which is no servant at all) is lost and must be found - is "dead" and must be returned to LIFE and "Life" and that returning begins at home as does charity. No, there is no reward in finding Faith, it's what you do with it that counts and if you neglect it, lose it, treat it perfunctorily, imagine how LIFE and

LIGHT are going to treat you, for the mills of LIFE grind exceedingly slow but they grind extremely fine. You see, in the Kingdom there is something that cannot be ignored because it must not be ignored. Woe to them who try! It can be very Dark there.

My dear brothers and sisters I Paul needs to inform you that I spend more time now, in my mind, in Spirit Space than I do in Human Time, so forgive me my oddities and my oral and silent wanderings for I Paul too am a servant and I exert all the effort I can possibly muster and arouse to serve. My obligation of Abandoning and Surrendering though is not just to Spirit, but to all of you also, and I need now to be better in your Presence for I Paul knows that where you are LIFE Is. It is in you that LIFE and LIGHT act. You are where the invisible Spirits wish to act in visible ways and you must be Prepared and totally receptive to this Action or you will be passed by. Please, for your own sake, do not allow the Spirits to pass you by. You have no idea, really absolutely no idea of what you will miss. But I Paul warn you, they will not visit a house of “self,” of hate, of anger, of revenge, of intelligent fools, of lazy and neglectful ones, of schemers, of the disrespectful, of the irresponsible, the selfish, the self-serving, the effortless, the all-knowing, the I can do it alone ones, the uncaring, the doubters, the fearful ones, the impatient, the meddlers, the backbiters, the pretenders, the

liars, the cheaters, the aloof, the hypocrite, the defiler, the “outer” ones who neglect the “inner,” the pompous, the tyrant, the braggart, the seeker of praise, the unjust, the unrighteous, the “foxes,” the betrayers, the unfaithful, the bad parent, the abusers, the ascetics, the sacrificers, the mammon lovers, the wasters - oh yes - the wasters, the greedy, the stingy, the self-sorrowing ones, the self-fettering, and the I don’t care ones. I Paul could go on and on but by now you should all have the picture clearly established in your minds.

The simple questions one and all must ask themselves are: Am I really prepared? Am I walking after “self,” still, or am I walking after the Spirit, or, even, with the Spirit? There is no need to agonize yourself by asking The Ultimate of questions, Am I walking in the Spirit - that’s for another moment.

To be a servant of LIFE is a reward in itself. Just to be allowed to plow the master’s field is a great privilege, to sow his seed is a blessing. Just to be a part of the Universal Plan for the Kingdom as a servant is all the compensation anyone could ever ask.

An excellent Servant is never a spectator - always a participant in the race for the Kingdom of LIFE and the happening of the ALL in ALL.

Be you then a great and good servant by Doing, by being Present, working for Unity and Peace always through Love and Truth.

your servant,

I Paul.

## 12 - The Unworthy Servant

Greetings:

My dear brothers and sisters, I greet you all with a spiritual embrace.

The title, a contradiction in terms, spells but one word and needs but one explanation which it gives. DARKNESS!

In Love for Unity & Peace & Light,  
your servant,

I Paul.

## 13 - On Personal Spiritual Needs

Greetings:

I Paul, the servant of LIFE and LIGHT and the Family of them, and a laborer of the ALL in ALL, Grace be unto you and Peace, for you are always in my mind for your fellowship and friendship and for your generous support of me and my work.

The “bottom line” for the glory and the power of LIFE’S Kingdom is the human mind and its personality. It should come as no surprise that LIFE’S redeeming Love is directed to individuals first. LIFE Commands us to serve as persons first, before we serve as a group, a Family then.

And since we have been called unto liberty let us use that liberty, through love, to serve one another, to assist one another, to steer one another along The Way to “The Way.” None of us, not a one, must ever be found guilty of keeping anyone from “entering in” because we neglected to assist them. There are those who are “spiritually alive” right now and there are those who are “spiritually dead” right now among us.

The very center of our problem is two-fold. It is the groups called Family and it is the individual hearts, minds and spirits that make up that Family. Our great need as a

Family, other than the constant need to continually introduce new faces to the Message, is a mission to the Family itself to discover the relation of the individual Family Member, not only to the Family, but to the Kingdom of the Supreme Spirit. What we need then is a session, a lesson in spirit therapy and Kingdomology.

You would believe that by now we all would know who we are, but the fact is most of us in the Family really don't know what we think we know.

All the religions have an aversion, not only to the nature of persons but to their personal faith and way of living, of their personal life then. We are not here speaking of prying into personal affairs, but only into their spiritual way of living, thinking and expressing themselves, spiritually. Yet we are and must always be concerned about the Well-Being of each and every member and this then could very well spill over into what some would call the "none of your business" sector. Not so, for if one of us is hurting then we all are hurting and we must do everything within our power and within the concept of Common Sense and reason to heal such "hurt," etc.

A concern, a love for persons, the individual as well as the Family as a whole, is a must for Christian Spiritualism.

We must first act and prepare as individuals before we



can act and follow as a collective, a Family then. We must never be guilty of burying personalities within the structure of a group. Every person as an individual is quite important to the Family as a whole. While attention to the Family is a great and very necessary responsibility (which, sadly many do not uphold) of us all, any inattention to the individual Family Member who is struggling is a grave Mistake. Sharing and Caring as spelled out in the Message is first an individual mandate to be executed on an individual basis and second, on a collective or Family one.

After All, the Family is a collection of individuals, persons seeking the Truth through friendship and fellowship, attempting to become of one mind with the truth and for the Truth.

If we, as a Family, treat each other as individuals and so with love, compassion and understanding, first and foremost, then the Unity and Peace of the Family will come about without anyone actually seeing it happen.

The Message itself is first a personal and individual Message, it calls for personal involvement and commitment, it calls for personal effort and self-discipline and above all, it calls for the slaying of “self” and the rededication of oneself to it and to LIFE and LIGHT on a daily basis, even hourly, if necessary, in order to reach the

very pinnacle of being Prepared. And it is this Preparedness that leads directly to the level of becoming one's own best witness which is on this personal, individual level, I Paul am addressing herein.

Preparation is, of course, the major task confronting us as individuals, in the entire Message. The effort called for cannot be approached nor gained as a "collect." The "Love oneself" level is a command of a very personal nature which leads to a collective love of individuals loving one another, as Jesus commanded, which is the very foundation of The Family. Love is Truth, but not everyone realizes that Truth is also Love and collectively they are Freedom, Unity, Peace, Power and Soul - the Kingdom then.

For Jesus, the individual came first. He never once said to a crowd, Come, Follow Me, that's something he reserved for individuals, his disciples and the rich young man for examples. His statement of "Let the dead bury the dead" has a very profound two-edged sword meaning. He was saying let the spiritually dead bury the "spiritually dead," the actually deceased ones, and come, follow me and I will make you spiritually alive - fully human and fully spiritual Now, right here on this earth where I will take you out of hell and place you into heaven, right now, here on this earth. Some theologians, especially Kung and Baird touch on this, but

they do not go far enough, their respective church doctrines hold them back. They teach Freedom but they deny it to themselves out of fear! Yes, the individual was of great value to Jesus and they came first in his love and his thoughts, but hidden in this, in his parables, you can find Jesus himself, The Supreme Spirit, the population, the nations, the Kingdom, heaven and hell. Examples are the prodigal son - the sower - the marriage feast - the virgins - the laborers in the vineyard and such statements as "He who is not with me is against me;" "You are of more value than many sparrows" and so forth.

It was after his attention to the individuals that he turned to the collective groups such as the Pharisees and scribes, but more importantly, to the Family of God with his "Father" references. Jesus continuously interrelated and interlocked both individuals and the listening crowds into the Kingdom, the Love, the Truth and the Justice of God and never failed to touch upon their (his listeners') evil ways and their non-spiritual religious ways. No, Jesus did not come out to destroy the Law, Paul did that, Jesus came out to destroy doctrinal, ritual, rite-ridden religion and replace it with Pure Spiritualism and Pure humanity, opening the doors of The Kingdom to one and all and hopefully destroying man's inhumanity to man, both on an individual-personal basis as well as on a collective one! This

is the real Jesus of Nazareth and not the one portrayed by the schismatic Christian Religionists. What he said to an individual he usually meant for all within his hearing. That's usually how I Paul meant his Message to be accepted. Repent, the Kingdom of God is at hand was for everyone. But, was Baptism for everyone as John performed it? Apparently not, for Jesus never baptized anyone, until, that is, the "happening" of The Cross. For Jesus did not leave us in darkness and in death any more than LIFE left "Him" in darkness and in death. Jesus left us with a collective baptism of his blood and the almost immediate possession of something new - our spirit, our power to "enter in" to the Kingdom of LIFE. It is "the Promise" of Life and Light at our end, "If"! and the Reality of that Life and Light in the Now! Right Now!

Jesus' term "Our Father" was an all-inclusive one, nobody was left out except by their own choosing. The point of all this is that Jesus paid as much attention to individuals (who touched me?) as he did to the Family of LIFE and this is something the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL should emulate.

There can be no question that at official Family Gatherings there are always some individuals who feel "left-out" simply because they cannot follow the drift of

what is being taught, preached, said or discussed. Those who speak “above” others in their presence at such gatherings are guilty of placing barriers, stumbling-blocks even, in their brothers and sisters way and in Reality they are barring them from “entering in” and those who do this continually will find, as the rich ones do, a difficulty in entering into the Kingdom themselves. It’s like speaking in tongues – don’t unless you brought along interpreters or can interpret what you have said yourself.

One-on-one with those who cannot fully follow the Message nor understand its teachings is a very, very important task for those individuals who are more advanced and something the leadership should step into wholeheartedly. House meetings are also very, very helpful for such members needing assistance and it is, as you know, mandatory that an A.A.D.S. (Apostle Ambassador Disciple Servant) always be present at such meetings whenever any part of the Message of I Paul is to be discussed to assure that the line of the Message is being properly toed.

After all, the “good seeds” are the Sons and Daughters of the Kingdom and out of the abundance of their hearts and minds, the mouth speaks, and it should speak clearly for the edification and enlightenment of one as well as many. The good man or woman out of their good treasure (the

Message) brings forth good - Just as mistaken men and women out of their mistaken rationalizations and intellectualizations and assumptions bring forth confusion, foolishnesses and chaos!

It is a “mistake” not to share The Message and not to care for the individual, as well as the Family, as “a whole”! Give for alms also, those things which are within, and behold, how everything becomes clean and well for you. It is in the sharing of the inner fruits of your effort - knowledge, understanding, Love, Truth, Joy, Unity, and an ease-of-mind that you set the example for others - the spirit, the power, the presence of the Kingdom within, the Mind of Christ, the Message, is what you need all share with one another and with the world.

And remember this, you must be Prepared for if the Light in you is darkness, how great is that darkness, and how far awide will you spread it?

We have a Mission also, not to be crucified, but to be the Light of this Earth and to sound the Trump for the New Worlds. Let us get on with it, for the Way is a process of Spiritual maturity to “the Way.” You see, we are not sons and daughters of The Supreme Spirit by moral achievements for they are a personal, individual goal, but we are sons and daughters through Spiritual Growth and

achievements, i.e., becoming Fully Human and Fully Spiritual while still in the Flesh! I leave you with Galatians 5:22-24.

In Love and Peace,

your servant,

I Paul.

## 14 - Heaven, Hell, Kingdom

I Paul, servant of LIFE and LIGHT and for the Happening of the ALL in ALL greet you all with a spiritual embrace and a warning.

Beware lest you become a spiritual vacuum, one of the living dead, destined for the darkness. Be careful of what you do and what you believe.

There is no “original sin” for how can man derive “a sin,” any sin, from a symbolic-mythical Adam? Man “is,” simply because “God Is.” Life is, simply because “LIFE Is.” Our “True-Selves” know no evil, no sin, no “mistake.” These are qualities and notions of man. Men-women are punished or rewarded here and they do it unto themselves, by themselves. For that is the Justice of LIFE, and that’s his or her whole lot here insofar as the physical-material aspect of their being is concerned.

Life is precious to most human beings on an individual basis, but life as a collective has proven not to be quite so precious as it is on the individual level with the one exception, suicide. Murder, wars, terrorism, fratricide and so forth bear out the Truth of this. And how shall we explain the Love and the Justice of God in the light of these happenings as well as the disasters of Nature? It would



appear, on the face of it, that human life is of no great concern to the Supreme Spirit. As Paul wrote, God is no respecter of persons, and if not as persons, does he respect nations or races? Is God fully concerned with man, the Natural man, or is God totally concerned with Man's True-Self, his spirit, that which was truly Created in his own image? Since we were created we must be of some concern to LIFE. We are, or more truthfully, we should be the caretakers of this earth, a task we have not lived up to.

Perhaps, if we turn to Jesus, we can get some insight into the questions above.

Jesus himself led a very productive and purposeful life, an extremely meaningful life, a life, according to many writers, that came to a horrible and tragic end. Yet, if we are to believe the gospels, his end was prearranged and predestined for our salvation and that would, of necessity, point the finger at God for his demise and not the Romans nor the Jews. Of course we know The Truth of the matter from the Message of I Paul. We know nothing authentic about Jesus except what the New Covenant tells us and a lot of that is contrived, contradictory and spurious. Yet, it is safe to say, that for at least three years he lived his life on behalf of the Supreme Spirit extolling LIFE and exhorting his countrymen and neighbors to repent and to Worship

LIFE and when he was tried and sent to The Cross he made a very profound statement just moments before his death, to wit, Father, I commend my spirit unto you. Not his soul, mind you, not his body, mind you, just his spirit! This, then, must be the very foundation of Jesus' theology, the spirit of man, not the soul of man nor the body of man, and for the Life of me, I cannot understand why the Christian religionist's theologians do not "see" this. Jesus knew exactly what was created in the image of God just as Paul did and just as we, the Family, do.

Therefore, we too, as Christian Spirituals must also live purposeful and meaningful lives in the flesh and we must recognize our need for a complete commitment to someone or to something that gives our physical lives their real meaning and proper direction, so that we too may say, in all sincerity, "Father, I commend my spirit unto you also, for I have followed Jesus to the very best of my ability with all my heart and with every thought of my mind.

Paul's theology was right in line also for he taught that there is a physical body and a spiritual body and he further informs us that flesh and blood cannot enter The Kingdom of the Supreme Spirit. This presents a difficulty for the Christian religion theologian, to-wit: How then, they ask, shall we be judged in the spiritual body for the deeds done in

the natural body? Or, in other words, they say, how shall that personal identity which we now wear be brought up at the Judgment?

You see, dear brothers and sisters, these religious theologians really don't know. They say that we cannot now understand, but it is no greater difficulty to accept the future fact than it is to accept and act upon the present fact that our souls and our bodies - two distinct and, in some respect, antagonistic entities - form but one person though we can never understand the ultimate principle of their union. Indeed, it is less difficult to admit that in a perfect state of sinlessness a spiritual body, with spiritual capacities, now beyond us, may be the only fit habitation for the redeemed Soul. But the words of the bible are to be accepted without question, and the explanation to be patiently waited for at the Resurrection.

This is "senseless theology" to my way of thinking and it would be better if it had not been written.

The religionists are a bit confused about body, soul, spirit and mind; some say man is all four. Some believe "soul" and "spirit" to be one. Some believe the human soul is spiritualized at death and is what is resurrected. Some believe the soul ceases to exist when the body expires. Some really don't know what they believe especially their lay

people, their laity.

The truth is, and we have it direct from Spirit, that man as a whole entity, is soma, psyche, pneuma, or, in English, Body, Mind, Spirit. The Christian Religionists are totally and irreversibly tied to the doctrine of a future Resurrection of all who have died, in the flesh, to be Judged by Jesus and the Apostles, which is, of course, a non-sensible concept. It's a myth.

That part of our natural physical "whole" which is to be Judged is the lower mind (also called the physical mind for identification purposes), the psyche, the only segment of our natural whole being that survives death, that "part" of us which is, was and has been predestined and which unites with our True-Self's Mind, the pneuma psyche or in English the spirit mind or higher mind as I Paul has sent it to us for our edification and enlightenment. This uniting or better, compounding, takes place only at the demise of the soma, the natural physical body. What goes to the grave, stays in the grave, there is no resurrection simply because there is nothing to resurrect.

Therefore, my dear sisters and brothers, the Judgment, LIFE'S Imperial, Sovereign Imperative, a major segment of the Universal Plan of The Supreme Spirit, is of the True-Self which is Now-then whole, for it consists of the compounded

lower and higher minds and the Judgment will be made via the Mind of Christ by the LIGHT for LIFE.

You see, dear ones, the Soul is truly a simple matter of Minds!

Can you “see” Now how I Paul am slowly and painstakingly discerning the whole Message for you as it regards the Supreme Spirit’s Love, Truth, Justice and Grace and its Christology in my Communications to you? Be of One Mind. Be One minded! I Paul knew what he was about while here.

With but a very few exceptions, The Christian Religion’s Theologians are making a mockery out of The Supreme Spirit’s Universal Plan and its Truth. They go so far astray in their Mythological concepts as to make an Idiot out of LIFE and LIGHT. Ah, Forgive them Father, they know not what they do. They are victims of preconceived ideas, interpolations, half-truths, untruths and glosses. They have been led astray by false doctrines, lies, forgeries and the like. They have been brain-washed by what they call your Holy Word, the bible. They simply do not have eyes to “see” nor ears to “hear” any more than Jesus’ disciples did, and yet, the Church attributes the four gospels to them. Is that sanity? I think not, it’s tragic. Their brand of theology is the ultimate tragedy. There is nothing so black, so dark,

as that which stands in opposition to the Light and the LIGHT of the Almighty Supreme Spirit, LIFE itself, then!

And now to deepen the tragedy, the Christian Religion and its multiple theologians (who, incidentally, cannot agree with each other and therefore deepen the schism) stumble again blindly when they attempt to describe and justify Satan and Hell as truths, which, in fact, in Reality and in truth, do not exist as they picture it. The Truth is that Satan and Hell exist nowhere else except here, right here on this Earth - Surprised? Don't be.

Men and women who spurn God, who do evil are the real Satans and their evil acts are what creates, constitutes hell on earth. What these "satans" do not understand or do not care about is the truth that they incur the Wrath of the Supreme Spirit and the Spirit withdraws its presence from within them and, therefore, hell is where the Supreme Spirit Is Not! And that, my dear ones, is how the Wrath of the Supreme Spirit operates. Heaven is where God IS in the sense of Omnipresent and the Kingdom is where our True-Selves can go, "IF"!

Hell and the Kingdom to Jesus was also the "eschaton," the end time. Hell here meaning being cast into The Darkness, the Shadow Side of the Kingdom, not by any silly Satan, but by the LIGHT itself - Away, away, I know you not!

## The terrible rejection.

But to Jesus, hell was also a present reality as was Satan. “Get thee behind me Satan” he said to Peter (Simon barJona), “you are not on the side of God but of men.” Now that’s a stinging rebuke – a tremendously serious charge. Further, he called the Pharisees “children of hell,” another very serious charge – the Pharisees thought they were the children of God. Jesus was asking for it, wasn’t he?

Hell is the love of “self” as opposed to the Love of God and respect for The Mind of Christ. LIFE is “Fire,” not some silly, man-manufactured devil or satan. Better yet, it is the eternal, enduring, sometimes agonizing Love of the Supreme Spirit for us that is the Fire of the Kingdom! The unthinkable, the unfathomable, the unapproachable Fire that can never be extinguished, but one which we can refuse to warm ourselves by for that is the Condition of The Almighty, our Freedom.

Jesse, when he was Paul here and when he wrote that Flesh and Blood cannot enter the Kingdom of God, should also have written that it could not enter into hell either. You simply cannot “enter in” to where you already are, and even if there was a hell, you couldn’t get into it anyway, death and the grave is your physical-material lot.

Man, the creator of all evil – not a spirit Satan or a fallen

angel, that's ludicrous and spiritual ignorance.

Men and women are in hell right now because of their "evil works" and they do not even know it. And I might add that other men and women are in Heaven right now because of their "Good-Works," and they do not even know it! Then again, the suicide rate is so high these days, perhaps some do, and did realize where they were, in hell, and took their own lives to escape it, and themselves. How tragic.

As J. Arthur Baird pointed out, it is very interesting to follow the elevation of Satan from the human being itself to finally a rival God. Sound familiar?

Yes, dear Jesus, history does repeat itself in very peculiar ways!

Now all of the above brings us, finally, to The Mind of Christ.

Up to The Cross, mankind had a Free-Will. The "happening of the Cross" cost mankind its Free-Will but mankind was compensated for its loss. It was given Absolute Freedom, LIFE'S Condition then, and the paraclete sent was none other than the Mind of Christ and from that moment forward, mankind had a choice, a simple Yea or Nay, for or against the Mind of Christ! "Satan," then, is any man or woman who is opposed to, in opposition to, the Mind of



Christ. “Satan,” then, truly is the enemy and we all have met “Satan,” every one of us and truly it is us! The Mind of Christ, then, is our only defense against the satanical forces of evil men and women among us. They are not demon-possessed, they are “self” possessed.

The Mind of Christ is the Well-Being of the Cosmic and Earthly creations, especially toward mankind and spirits for LIFE explicitly charged them with the safe-keeping of, and the good welfare of, the separate (but in essence, one) realms of the physical and the psychical where the Laws remain constant. Within these Laws lie the Power of the Kingdom and the power of transcendence, the freedom of motion of the lower and the higher minds, which when in union can seek out the Highest Mind and which, when compounded, comprise that glorious and fully spiritual body that I Paul has already told this world about. Therein lies the only “resurrection,” “the Raising” of the lower mind to the Higher Mind and becoming one.

Yes, the Kingdom of God is in us, if we obey and follow the Mind of Christ. The Kingdom within us, clearly means the True-Self, our spirit, the Omnipresence of the Supreme Spirit and the Mind of Christ. The Kingdom of God is not heaven (you call it heaven and that will suffice for now). We are, right now, in heaven or in hell, and we can, all of Us, be

in the Kingdom, the Light now and after decease - but regardless, at decease We will be in the Spirit Realms somewhere as Spirit, not as soul, mind you, but in an evolutionary search for Soul. But, keep in mind, that there is no searching possible in the stark, utter darkness of the lower Spirit Realms. Is it not a mystery that East, North, South 303, the Life Man or Etheric man, the Light Man or Astral man, the Cosmos Man or Planetary man have no religion, know nothing about a heaven or hell, a God or a Satan as the Vessel Man or us, the physical man does? They know only Life and LIFE and LIGHT!

I say to you, Seek you first the Kingdom within and all these other things you need-desire shall befall you.

For the Greater Glory of Life and LIFE and LIGHT,  
and the Unity and Peace of The ALL in ALL,

I Paul am

Your servant in bondage.

Much Love.

## **15 - “The Full Measure of Faith” What it Is - How to Use It**

Greetings - Peace to All.

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earths and he gave them LIGHT and this gave them Life in all of its Abundance, as we have known it and know it now. There is Involution and Evolution involved in both the Physical Laws and the Psychical Laws. The very source of ALL Life is in, and has been in dispute since time immemorial. The First Cause, the Reason, the Creation has always been disputed, argued over, especially between this Earth's Religions, Philosophies and the multiple branches of Science. One theory, religion, is based solely on Scripture of its kind and on Faith. The other, Science, is based solely on conjecture and theories. Just as this Earth's religions are divided on what is truth, so, too, are this Earth's Sciences. One thing, one very startling thing, out of all this division, strife and multiplicity of theories, is the fact, the Truth, the stark reality that no one knows who or what this thing called God, etc., really is or isn't, just as none of us on this Earth actually knows who or what Man really is! And nobody knows the source of God or Man on a provable level!

This, then, is the bottom line, the bare facts, the actual reality and the Absolute Truth of where such matters stand

today. In the beginning a Mystery and even Now, Right Now, still a Mystery! Faith and Theory are as far as mankind has advanced since the very Beginning, of which there seems to be no dispute that it all did have a beginning. There is though, in some circles, a belief that Life of some sort or kind has always existed, the “no-beginning theory” and therefore the belief that there can never be an end.

There is also the theory that everything that has a beginning, therefore, must have an end.

Faith is “trust.” Religiously, it is an “unquestioning belief in God.” Theory is “to view.” Popularly, a mere conjecture, or guess. It is also a speculative plan as to how something can be, or is done, without doing it. Superstition is “to stand.” It is any belief based on Fear or Ignorance or a belief in the Supernatural!

Religion means “to bind.” Actually the Latin word “religio” has no meaning or, as yet, is unknown. Religion also means a belief in a superhuman or a supernatural (spirit) being. It also means faith, and faith in its pure religious meaning also translates out to theory and speculation and a guess! Science means “to know.” Originally knowledge. It should also be understood from the viewpoint of theory that it is also fiction. Yet there exist some theories based on actual phenomenal happenings

which are in a class by themselves and which we must not label as fictitious or speculative at the present time.

We all know that there is No Reward in finding Faith. The reward comes from, or lies in, what we do with it. Faith, as explained above is a speculative, emotional belief; actually, then, a theory in and of itself. Yet there is another kind of Faith, one that is not based on speculation, on chance, on the emotions, not a mere belief in a preconceived idea, but a Faith based on fact, on Reality and on Truth - a Faith that is not based on Trust alone, on scripture or a religion or philosophy or a science. We know this outstanding and unquestionable and unbeatable Faith as The Full Measure of Faith, based purely on Knowledge, or to be more exact, and to steer clear of Gnosticism, it is Faith based on Wisdom, Understanding, Knowledge, Intelligence, Love and Spiritual Revelation! The Full Measure of Faith, when acquired, is unique in that it allows us, as individuals, to become our own best witness. No “blind faith” here, no emotional faith here, no false faith here, no faith based on theory, speculation, guesswork or chance or maybe’s. No superstition, no fear, no ignorance. No science, no religion, no nonsense, no foolishnesses, no doubts.

So, what is the Full Measure of Faith?

In all Truth it is more than one Thing. Quite obviously,

it is set apart from, and higher and more profound than, mere faith, i.e., belief. The Full Measure of Faith is not a physical-material manifestation but a Fully Spiritual one. It is obedience to the Mind of Christ. It is the uniting of the lower mind with the higher mind. The Full Measure of Faith is to be spiritually minded. The Full Measure of Faith comes from the spirit of Faith. The Full Measure of Faith is Righteousness unto the Righteous, each to his or her calling. The Full Measure of Faith is held by those who are led by the spirit and not by the flesh. The Full Measure of Faith befalls those who are of one mind in the Spirit. The Full Measure of Faith is blessed in them who comprehend what is the breadth, and length, and depth and height of the heavens and the earths. The Full Measure of Faith is for those who have forsaken “self,” for it is the absence of “self,” the purity of such a one, that the Fullness of Faith becomes active and Recognized.

LIGHT, the image of the Invisible LIFE, the Firstborn of every creature, of all Life everywhere, is the “Advocate” of The Full Measure of Faith. Yet, above all things the Full Measure of Faith is the Way to the “putting on” of charity, the bond of perfectness, the fulfilling of the Commandment of Love, i.e., “Love one another as I have loved you”!

Therefore we can “see” that the Full Measure of Faith

is “the Work” of ordinary faith with Power in all Things Good, Right and True, for LIFE has not given us a spirit of fear, but of Power, and of Love, and of Truth, and of a “sound mind” for our own edification and for The Greater Glory of LIFE and LIGHT and “the Happening of the ALL in ALL”!

Be you all, then, of One Mind in this, and of all spiritual matters, for that is what will bring about ALL Unity and ALL Peace to one and ALL. For it was through the Grace of LIFE, the Architect, and the Love of LIGHT, the Builder, that we have come to this high calling and through our measure of Faith we understand that the Earths were framed by the very Power of LIFE, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. Make straight ways for your feet and follow Peace with all men and women, and Love, without which no one shall see the LIGHT nor enjoy its embrace!

What, some may ask, is the advantage in the acquisition of The Full Measure of Faith? Simply put, it enables such a one to secure an answer to such a question, for example, as “What is this Image of God?” (as in Genesis 1:26–27). Right off, those who have been following the Message diligently will say, Christ is The Image of God, the Spirit Image of The Invisible God, with Form and Structure, and that would be

correct, as far as it goes, but it doesn't go far enough. Let me enlighten you. Our True-Self, our spirit, is the image of Christ and that leads us to our physical-material-matter selves. How do we fit into this "image of"?

God Is LIFE - I am Life, that's one comparison. LIFE is Invisible - I am visible, that's not a comparison, but my True-Self is invisible and that is. But this image of LIFE which is found in all men and women, male and female, then, should be considered under three aspects: First, as a natural aptitude for loving and understanding LIFE, which belongs to the nature of The Mind and is common to all of mankind. Second, as actual and habitual knowledge and imperfect love, which is the conformity of grace, and third, as that perfect love and knowledge which constitute the Image of LIFE in a state of glory. The first is in All men and women, the second in The Righteous, the third in The True-Self. The Image, the Presence of LIGHT in us is according to the Divine Nature, the Divine Consciousness, the Measure of Faith and the Obedience to The Mind of Christ. If the light in your eye is bright, how great that brightness is, but if the light in your eye is dark, how great is that darkness.

Of course, to understand all of this, one must "know" that the creation story in Genesis is pure fictional Mythology and the First Instance wherein man created God



in his image. The Second instance of this I am sure you are all well acquainted with. These two incidents completely destroy the validity of the Old and The New Covenants and all religion along with it called Judaeo-Christian as well as others.

God is Spirit and therefore, God must be Worshipped and Glorified in The Spirit! That's what Christian Spiritualism is All About - the Supreme Spirit, the Creator of the Spirit Realms and spirits, LIFE, the giver of All Life yesterday, today and forever. The Eternal Creator of the Eternal Creation with No Beginning and No End for wherever LIFE Is - Life Is!

Paul was the only Apostle who wrote letters. He was highly educated for his time and a linguist. He was also a Spiritual Genius and a Mystic and the only Apostle, in fact the only writer in the New Testament Canon, to speak of the Full Measure of Faith. Jesus never mentions it directly but implies it in many exchanges with those who were ill or diseased and their Faith made them whole while in some cases it took more than just faith to bring about the desired results. It required "fasting" (from the carnal) and "prayer" (meditation and cogitation) and "knowledge" (Creative Thought) on the part of the healing medium, all of which are segments of the Full Measure of Faith.

We travel a road in our life that begins with belief and trust in our own being and the being of others and then, somewhere along the road, we graduate from belief to Faith and a higher Trust. It may be merely intellectual or it may be an intensely practical Faith in “something other” than ourselves. It may mean a trust in, and devotion to God or Christ or both. It may only be a Trust in Humanity, in oneself and friends, or in a particular philosophy or a particular way of life in which one excels. To others it’s a belief, it may also be faith, in a church and its Doctrines, dogmas, rites, rituals, creeds and so forth. The problem with these kinds of beliefs or faiths is they are built on foundations of sand simply because faith has become a “once a week” obligation controlled mainly by the emotions, and what “others” do. In some circles it is “fashionable” to have faith, while in others, it is not. Faith exists naturally rather than being acquired, existing then, as an inherent attribute. It is this Faith we give each other in the belief, credit and trust which is the bond of all society. On it all Science, all government, all commerce, all covenants of daily intercourse are based. Without it, the fairest share of all our work, and certainly all our well-being, would vanish. We trust each other rightly by our nature, despite so many disappointments. You see, these capacities are not really learned, they are innate, a gift from Spirit which we are obligated to perfect in this lifetime.

Perfect Faith, then, is the Full Measure of Faith totally activated on two levels, the spiritual and the physical. You see, your True-Self has all faith in you, simply because it cannot disbelieve what it already knows, the problem lies with us, here in the Physical Realm, we can disbelieve and many do.

We were endowed with Faith for two basic reasons. The ability to know and have life more abundantly and to believe in LIFE and from that belief grow in Faith so that we can “know” LIFE, its Love, its Truth, its Justice, its Mercy, its Grace, its LIGHT and its Kingdom, which is Power and Glory beyond our comprehension.

Since Faith is a gift of the Spirit it has every Right to demand it from us, and does. To yield it is within our natural capacity to do so and this also entails our performance of Good-Works and to live Righteously. Yet, The Supreme Spirit does not require of us any act which is not within our capacity, or any belief that is not reasonable, nor any principle which does not raise us up and ennoble our natures. If one understands the Justice of the Supreme Spirit and its Condition, then one can understand the above. Our ability or capacity may be lessened, or weakened, or blurred, or even blotted out, either by inheritance (Romans 5:13) or by defect or default in ourselves – it is our failure or loss

individually, not that of the Spirit's Family as a whole, and above all LIFE has seen it, and provided for it - The Message of I Paul and The Book of LIFE and The Book of The Two Ways! Not a bible, not a Koran, not a religion but pure and True Spiritualism which recognizes LIFE and LIGHT and in turn is given Recognition by LIFE and LIGHT and all other Spirits in the Kingdom of LIFE!

Mere belief is, therefore, not Recognized. Mere Faith without works is not Recognized. Religious Faith is noted but it is not Good enough for the Supreme Spirit for it demands worship and Obedience from a spiritual stance and not from a hypocritical stance, wherein Jesus pointed out to his listeners about those who prayed in public and not in their closet and in silence. Or those who fasted and let the whole world know about it for the express purpose of seeking praise. Or the ones who do good works only for the praise they may reap unto themselves, the vain glory ones. Or the leaders of religion who were all puffed up over their own importance and playing God, all dressed up in their finery like little Solomons.

When we become co-workers with Spirit and a servant to LIFE and LIGHT a much increased ability is bestowed upon us until we have acquired the Full Measure of Faith, which can be summed up in a few words such as

Recognition, Responsibility, Self-Discipline, Love, Truth, Obedience, Abandonment, Surrender, Unquestioning Trust and Power! Faith without such bonds as these is but a futile grasp, a feeble hold, easily lost and therefore purposeless, a slight mental act and struggle, without the slightest adequate Results. This is physical-material Faith which most people erroneously believe to be spiritual also. You cannot serve two masters. The Full Measure of Faith is purely Spiritual Faith and serves only the Supreme Spirit and its Kingdom and all that it contains, it is the "Knowing" Faith of "LIFE IS" - "I AM"! It is the Faith-full who are in The LIGHT and The LIGHT is in them and active. It is the very measure of Faith that allowed Paul to declare that "I died but I live, yet it is not I who lives, but the Christ in me who lives for me." The bible says Man and Woman were created here and fell here and because of The Fall sin came into this world. This is, of course, pure fiction, pure myth. We are aliens here having migrated here and we did not bring sin with us. There was no Fall, there is no sin and there was no Creation here, except that which we Created, Good or Evil, and that only as a result of our individual measure of Faith. If Man had not grown so materialistic and Faithless here on this Earth, the Happening of The Cross would never have happened. Faith is not even a proper word or term. Belief is really not what LIFE demanded of his creatures, our

ancestors did not need Faith or Belief in a God, they knew God, LIFE then, in their homelands. What LIFE demanded of Created Higher Life was “Obedience” and that, my dear brothers and sisters, is the real meaning of what we call Faith today – it’s really a religious word and not a Spiritual one. (The entire explanation of all this is in CPM #30, which you will be privileged to pursue when you have acquired a measure of Obedience to the Mind of Christ.)

So seek ye first the Obedience and all these other things will be freely given unto you, including the Kingdom of God which is within!

In Love for Truth, Unity and Peace, May the spirit wax great in you

Your obedient servant,

I Paul.

## 16 - The Ways Spirit Communicates

Greetings:

The Christian Religion places its reputation, the Truth of its existence, on the claim that Jesus of Nazareth was The Word made Flesh. For this very purpose the Nascent church secretly composed the gospel of John and then laid claim to its authenticity to support their doctrine and creeds of a Trinity which turned their God into a man and a man into a god.

The truth is there is no such thing as a word of God or the Word of God. God, LIFE, then, is a Spirit and spirits do not “talk” as we talk or as we understand what “talking” is. LIFE’S “Ways” are not our ways and LIFE’s “thoughts” are not our thoughts. If LIFE is Omniscient what does life need to think about? To talk about?

Now The Wisdom of LIFE does communicate with both spirits and humans here and in the spiritual realms, but that communication is not and never has been in the form of words, speech, as we communicate. All Spirit Communication with non-spirits is done through visions, dreams, thought transference and various phenomena such as Automatic Writing.

LIFE communicates with the LIGHT and the LIGHT

communicates with Life, spiritual and physical, through Spirit Guides to called and chosen Earth Mediums and at times directly to these accepted mediums or servants of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT who are co-workers in and for The “Happening” of The ALL in ALL. We speak - spirit sends! So if you hear voices, especially when you’re alone, you are either talking out loud to yourself or you are in need of a shrink!

Now allow me to put all this on a higher level of thought but in such a way that even “babes” should be able to understand, and clearly so.

The “True Notion” of LIFE says that there can be no Good-Work which is not done in The LIGHT - that we cannot escape the vast circle of LIGHT - that all men and women are dwelt in by the LIGHT, “IF”! - That all Good-Work is done through an inspiration of the LIGHT - that all the Earths are peopled by the LIGHT for LIFE whose presence in time and space is eternal - and that in every movement of Force and Energy, as well as in every thought and feeling and act of every spirit - LIFE IS! There is but One Being in the Universe and One LIGHT in the Kingdom, and the Universe is, because LIFE IS and the Kingdom is, because LIGHT is! No atom of matter, if matter exists, can divide itself from LIFE, no personality, no consciousness, no



conscience, no will nor character can get away from LIFE, for they only exist because LIFE exists. There is nothing that is not LIFE, and to yield to this Truth, to live in it, and to obey it and its calls, is Power, Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence, Love, Happiness and Certainty of seeing the LIGHT. To find and obey all this is to “know” that “We” are immortal. This is not a belief or a faith that stands on religious authority. This is the knowledge of and communication with our True-Selves who know the LIGHT, who in turn knows the all-containing Omniscient, Omnipresent and Omnipotent One, LIFE!

Obedience, then, is the key to all things Perfect, Good, Right and True, and they that have found it have found the Secret to each Plane and are able to control and manifest, with permission, on all Planes of Being! And I am glorious therein - I drink therein - I feast therein - I plough therein - I reap therein - I move unfettered therein - I am wedded therein - my utterances are Powerful therein and my Wisdom is as a cup that runneth over.

In these experiences of life, I realize myself - I derive Love and Truth - I fashion the bodies and conditions wherein the lower and the higher are engaged. I sow and reap the Fruits of The Spirit. I Live therein. Power is mine and the Mind of LIGHT is Activated to its greatest extension

within me. Yes, dear brothers and sisters, I, even I Paul have piloted this great ship through many “seas” to the very Pillar of Wisdom. It is therein that one learns that The Way of Love is LIFE and that Love is the Way of Life for Love is Obedience.

Now that may not seem startling to anyone on its surface, just some more words on paper, but when one thinks it out thoroughly it may very well startle them. This very Obedience, this Love, is what Allows the Message to flow through me. Revelation (receivings) by means of symbols is not suggestive but authoritative. Yet there are instances wherein that received is intended to correct flaws and to give erroneous information to drive us to prove all things that are historically provable. This is, in part, what “exerting the effort” and “following the directions exactly as given” are all about. Some receivings have little or nothing to do with revelation at all but are pure exhortations to move us and to drive us towards an illusive perfection.

One outstanding example of these matters is, this is a Message from I Paul, I Paul mind you! How many times did he die, in how many ways and in how many places? If he doesn't know then we should burn the Message and be done with it. But he, of course, does know, it's simply the Spirit's Way of proving to us that we don't really know what we

think we know and we do not practice the carrying of everything with us, in our minds, that is, and we can't carry anything in our "Minds" unless we have the knowledge of "The Minds" and not simply "our Mind" alone!

Receivings are symbolic communications from Spirit imparting truths, for the most part, of the invisible universe and the spirits. As revelation does not, and cannot, arise from the lower mind, it is self-evident that the lower or objective mind of man-woman does not compose the revelation, but is merely the receptive vessel into which the Divine Message is poured. The evidence for this view of "revealed truth" is overwhelming when appreciated. All one has to do is compare The Message of I Paul with the fictional myths of this earth and with the so-called sacred writings and scriptures of all religions wherein they are almost all obscure, nonsensical and in such disagreement, one to the other, that it is easy for a knowledgeable person to see that they are mostly the inventions of the human mind reduced to writing. The gospels of Mark, Luke and Matthew are cases in point. The religious history of mankind here is loaded with writings, creeds, doctrines and scripture that are obviously man's thoughts, man's compositions and much of it is "self" revelation or man feebly attempting to reveal God instead of God revealing to man what The Truth actually is.

Today there are multitudes of Truth Seekers, people who have a burning desire for a special and authoritative Spirit word of revelation as contrasted with all merely human and naturalistic explanations of things as they are. These are the scattered strangers who have given up on their religions and are wandering around in search of something better than what the world's religions have to offer. They say, almost with one voice, that if they are to have any faith at all, it must not be based only upon what they can discover for themselves, but upon an undoubted revelation of Spirit to men and women - an opening of the door between the seen and unseen, between the earth and the heavens, and the coming through from the higher side to the lower of that which is eternal, Spiritual and divine. These "strangers" want to know for sure that there is Life after the physical demise and the Message of I Paul is the very answer to their seeking. We have an obligation to see that they receive it as we have, and the quicker the better or we shall lose a golden opportunity and so will they!

There is another side to revealed Truth that not too many people on this earth are familiar with and that is its unique use in being able to interpret written documents that on the surface seem simple enough to understand, but on a closer examination one can "see" that which is hidden within. For an example I will use a much disputed gospel in

The New Covenant and a highly suspect Chapter, Matthew 27:62-63. “The chief priests and the Pharisees were gathered together unto Pilate, saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.” What is this saying to us? Let me give you an interpretation: the state of mind in literalism, formalism, and dogmatism (religion, priests, Pharisees, etc.) does not wish for Christ (Messiah) to rise in the mind, for that would put an end to the practices it finds wealth and pleasure in. It therefore appeals to worldly mindedness (Pilate) to crush out the Spirit. Yet “after three days,” which here signify a period of time to complete a condition of development, Christ would rise in Glory in The Minds of humankind, and become the actual ruler in men and women’s lives and not only The Ideal of their spirits, for the ideal of life of one age is the actual conduct of the next. So you see, there really wasn’t any resurrection as the church claimed and still teaches. But am I Paul correct in this? Can I point to something belonging to the church to prove this? Listen! Curiously enough we find the story of the resurrection of one Dionysius, after his dismemberment by the Titans, compared by the most learned of the Christian Church Fathers with the resurrection of The Christ. This Origen (in Contra Celsum IV, 171, Spenc.) after making the comparison, remarks apologetically and somewhat bitterly:

“Or, forsooth, are The Greeks to be allowed to use such words with regards to the soul, and speak in allegorical fashion, and we forbidden to do so?” - thus clearly declaring that the “resurrection” was an allegory of the soul and was not historical!

What say you?

For your Understanding,

Love, your servant,

I Paul.

## 17 - Casuistry

Greetings, my dear brothers and sisters in LIFE and LIGHT. May their Love and Truth, Unity and Peace be with you and yours always.

Our dictionary explains “Casuistry” as follows: the solving of specific cases of right or wrong in conduct by applying general principles of ethics; subtle but misleading or false reasoning, especially about moral issues, sophistry. “Sophistry”: unsound or misleading but subtle argument or reasoning.

The Message, without specifically using these two words, has much to say on the subjects of casuistry and sophistry. Herein we will explain Spiritual Moral Philosophy and Spiritual Ethics and their applications in the lives of all Christian Spirituals.

Casuistry is the name given to that “spiritual science” whose aim is to solve “cases of conscience.”

I Paul, am a spirit incarnate in a vessel of flesh and blood, and being a True Christian Spiritualist, I am faced with “cases of conscience” daily as a fully spiritual being and a fully human being, and I must resolve these “cases of conscience” through the Light of the Mind of Christ. My Faith is not one of belief but one of knowledge and

therefore, my Full Measure of Faith can only be translated as pure Obedience to the Supreme Spirit. It is in this condition that the goals of “casuistry” come into play in my everyday life and into the lives of All True Christian Spirituals and those who are exerting the effort to attain to such status.

The constant conflict, warfare as I Paul stated it, between the lower mind and the higher mind, between the carnal and the spiritual are “cases of conscience.”

Casuistry stands out in many of Jesus’ Parables, for example, the Unforgiving Servant, the Foolish Virgins, the Prodigal Son and the Good Samaritan. We find it hidden in Paul’s Epistles, for example, the meat dedicated to idols, the son who took his Father’s wife, and the placing of stumbling blocks in one’s brother’s and sister’s way. With these as examples you should have no problem in discerning where “cases of conscience” are salt and peppered all through the Message of I Paul!

These “cases” are commonplace in the everyday life of all human beings wherein they are in doubt as to what is their duty, the doubt or hesitation arising from the fact that there are two or more duties, each of which has claims upon them, which are so situated that they can perform only one of them.



The honest and truthful practice of casuistry, as taught by Jesus and I Paul, and as the Message still attempts to teach us, has fallen into neglect and disrespect, for all too often, it is used and regarded as a means of finding out how to escape the performance of some duty that is distasteful or inconvenient, rather than as a means for finding out in a conflict of several duties, which one of them is truly and really the duty that ought to be performed.

Yet, in spite of these abuses, casuistry holds a very important place in the lives of All Spirituals. Properly regarded and properly treated it has its place and its use, and it ought not be omitted from any work that undertakes to show a person what their duties are, or to assist them to decide how they ought to deport themselves, and what they ought to do under all conditions and circumstances of life, whether it is a teaching on Spiritual moral philosophy based on reason and the light of nature alone, or a preaching on Spiritual ethics based chiefly on The Truths given in The Message of I Paul. In the former case, the rule is one of Directions and Directives, the fulfillment of which is exact and complete righteousness, with always a possibility of going beyond the requirements of duty and doing what will thus become “great-works” of “supererogation.” In the latter case, Spiritual ethics, where the attention is directed both to the purity of heart and the uprightness of the

motives, it is hardly recognized as a possibility that one can go beyond the requirements of the rule – the freedom of the rule and the grace of it – and do more than is needed to fulfill one's obligations. No, in fact only one human Being is supposed to have ever done so much as to fulfill the requirements of the rule.

In this code there are but two great duties – Love to Spirit and love to All human beings – these, when properly understood, can never be in conflict by any possibility or in any case. No human being can, in fact, come fully up to the requirements. Still, however, there is a place and a sphere for casuistry even here. For although there can be no conflict between our duty to the Supreme Spirit and our duty to our brothers and sisters everywhere, when both are fully understood, there will be many cases in the life of an earnest and conscientious person when he or she will be in doubt about their duty even from a Christian Spiritualist's viewpoint.

As examples of questions that have or could be discussed under the head of casuistry let us take the following. Under the head of the use of truthfulness, how far is one justified in withholding the truth and misleading others by telling what is known to be false, when the telling of the truth would put the person who tells it to an

inconvenience, a loss, or damage to his friends, his family or his faith? Or, again, as coming under the head of honesty, how far may a servant whose wages are most insufficient to support him and his family, take the property of his employer without his knowledge or consent to make up the deficiency? It will be readily seen how and why the subject of casuistry should fall into disrepute when it is occupied by such queries. Still, there are many, many occasions for the exercise of genuine casuistry in its proper and higher sense, whether we regard the matter as Spiritual moral philosophy or Spiritual ethics. As a matter of the former, I think you may get a very important insight from a recognition of the fact that your duties may be referred to those classes, with reference to their grade of importance or claim to preference in making your selections. In the first place we may speak of those duties which each one of you may be said to “owe to yourself,” second, those that you owe to your brothers and sisters, and thirdly those that you owe in the several orders of humanity, the Message, the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL and especially to your own immediate family and loved ones.

Among the duties that one owes to his or herself are their health, purity of mind and heart, to act soberly and sanely, and such like. Now it is hardly possible that there should occur any conflict between those duties owed to

oneself and the duties owed to others as a Christian Spiritualist. On the contrary, the performance and perfection of those duties are a great help towards the performance of the higher duties. Health, material fasting, Patience, Responsibility, Purity, Recognition, Effort and a high degree of culture make you more valuable to others and enable you to render duties of a higher grade, or to perform them more fully and more acceptable than you could if you were deformed and degraded by the “mistakes” which are the opposites of those virtues and accomplishments. Then as between your duties to your families, your friends, your Message, your spirit, to LIFE and LIGHT and the Family, there is less often a conflict than you are apt to imagine. But when there is really a conflict, there can be no doubt that the objects rise in superiority the one to the other, in the manner given above. Anyone who is fit to be a Servant to the Truth, to the Family of LIFE and LIGHT and an expounder of The ALL in ALL should have no hesitation when it comes to “cases of conscience.” Those who are worthy to be True Christian Spiritualists are the ones who have earned the respect and esteem of their brothers and sisters, their friends and their neighbors for their efforts, excellence of example, spiritual ethics and excellence of knowledge of The Way to “The Way.” No one, then, can render effective and acceptable service to The Family who does not

command the respect and confidence of his brothers and sisters, both within The Family and without! Those who suffer from a “self” imposed vision of grandeur and self-importance, who are all puffed up over their supposed knowledge of Spiritual matters, who know nothing about genuine love and who flaunt the Truths and directions of The Message are the very ones who have serious “cases of conscience” but are too blind to see this fact, or too complacent to make the necessary changes called for. The cure for this lies in self-discipline and the slaying of “self” which is still rampant within The Family. When even the Leadership cannot gather without violent arguments, divisions, backbiting and ignorance the whole Family suffers. Again, such matters are “cases of conscience” and must be dealt with and very soon. It would appear that some haven’t heard or simply ignore the fact that the time for likes and dislikes is long over. If petty feelings and personalities cannot be kept out of all gatherings, then something will have to be done about it by yours truly and I Paul will play no favorites or games in the doing of it for to me it is but a simple “case of conscience” that I obey and do justice to.

I Paul with a very clear conscience, inform and forewarn all who willfully place stumbling-blocks in their sister’s or brother’s way are not going to be tolerated any

longer in this Family. Such hindrances to our Unity and Peace have stretched our patience to the breaking point so take heed. The Responsibilities and duties of a Christian Spiritualist are clearly and concisely outlined in The Message of I Paul so there are no grounds or excuses for anyone in this Family to be ignoring them. If anyone insists on playing games then I am going to insist that they pick up their game boards and go play somewhere else. My responsibility as the Family's Earth Spirit Guide is for the collective Well-Being of The Family and not to those individuals who insist on "going their own way" and "doing their own thing" to the detriment of others.

Although I love each and every one of you more than you'll probably ever know, my priorities and duties lie with LIFE and LIGHT firstly and the Message secondly and the Family thirdly. To be sure there are also my very personal loved ones of whom I am terribly devoted to and very much in Love with and I have no problem of conscience with that, either physically or Spiritually. But I Paul know that regardless of my human feelings the Kingdom is always first with me. Things here pass away but The Kingdom is forever and I am driven to be a part of that foreverness. All it requires is Love, Truth, and Obedience to The Mind of Christ. No sacrifice and no "cases of conscience" there to solve!

Now the majority of the above deals with what I Paul have cited as Spiritual moral philosophy and now I would like to more fully tackle the question of Spiritual Ethics.

As a matter of Christian Spiritual ethics the solution of questions of conscience or duty becomes a very different thing from the Spiritual moral philosophy. Here we have not only The Message and Paul's scriptural epistles but the Family in general, and each branch its own immediate and particular leadership to inform, to advise, to set examples, to teach and to preach and to overlook the Well-Being of The Family and its members and to increase that membership in any and all ways possible. The Message of I Paul itself has put these matters in such a clear light that the solution of such questions becomes comparatively easy. And should there be a breakdown of this ease, the Family has its safety valves - The Director of All The 303's and its Spirit Guide. Christian Spiritualism directs attention to the motives by which one is actuated in what one does as a chief and controlling element. It distinctly Recognizes the Fact that one may do from the best of motives what ought not to be done, and may, on the other hand, do from very bad motives, the very thing that ought to be done.

I Paul furnishes us an example of both cases - the one in his own person, and the other in that of some of the



persons with whom he was brought into contact in the course of his mission. Before his dramatic change of ways and when he was persecuting the Messianists, in a spirit of determined opposition to the very Way which he afterwards so effectively taught and preached, he, as he himself informs us, did it from a zeal for God and the Truth. The act was about the worst that could be done as he came to regard it afterwards, while the motive was of the highest order, and that one which of all others he regarded as the most holy and commendable. For an example of the other class of cases we refer to the Epistle to the Philippians, Chapter 1:15, where he says that some have preached Christ “of envy and strife,” “not sincerely,” but from mere “contention,” supposing and intending to add “affliction to his bonds.” “What then?” he asks, “notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretense, or in truth, Christ is preached; and I therefore do rejoice, Yea, I will rejoice.” Hence manifestly the motive was bad, although the act was a very proper thing to be done. And so in fact is a large share of what many of you undertake – there is always the possibility of some element of bad motive. However good and commendable the work you are engaged in, if you are coming from anger or a dislike towards someone, it harms the possibility of Unity and onemindedness of The Family.

Christian Spiritualism strives for perfection in its



moral philosophy and in its ethics but it also allows for our humanism, our “mistakes,” our carnality. It does not teach contrary to the Divine Gift of Freedom or the exclusivity of the Justice of the Supreme Spirit. Therefore it does not teach, contrary to what some of you may have not discerned, that the character of acts depends wholly and exclusively on our motives. It recognizes the fact that the motives may be wrong while the act is good, and the reverse, which it hopes will happen more frequently as one progresses in their Preparation and then in their Following. The motive may be perfectly good and pure, while the act performed is one that should have been left alone. And although we may look to the Spirit for forgiveness, as I Paul did, and obtain it, as he assured us he did, there are often natural consequences that will follow our acts which no amends can avert.

If and when I am faced with a “case of conscience” I have a rule I follow - LIFE first, LIGHT secondly, the Message next, then The Family and then all of humanity and then myself. Not having the Responsibility of an immediate family and children to support, I make no place for such in my list, but if I did they would be very high up, naturally.

Therefore, whenever a “case of conscience” arises, whether it’s a question of a little more enjoyment or ease on

my part, or a duty or call for charity (and all that that word implies) or forbearance for the Well-Being of others, my principle of Position and Order leads me swiftly to a very simple solution and leaves me with an ease-of-mind.

By self-discipline and self-denial in order to do a good-work or to promote the happiness and well-being of some other person or persons we are doing a double-duty and conferring a two-fold benefit - one on ourselves and one on some sister or brother in this common humanity of ours, on someone in reference to whom Jesus has said, "Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of these, ye have done it unto me."

In the light of The Message and the Spiritual moral philosophy and Christian Spiritual Ethics set before us, one does wrong only when he or she chooses to do so, and that deliberately. And there is no excuse or defense for it.

Perhaps now you can all see a little clearer something that has been in The Message all along, so visible that you have made it invisible. And I might also add for those who thought they knew enough about this subject of "Casuistry" from a Spiritual standpoint to adequately teach on it, that perhaps now they can "see" that they really did not know what they thought they knew well enough to do so. And that, my dear brothers and sisters is also a "case of conscience"!

In Love, Unity and Peace,

your servant,

I Paul.

“By their Fruits ye shall know them.”

We cannot be Judges, but we can be “Fruit Inspectors.”

## 18 - Trance State - One

Greetings:

My dear brothers and sisters, may you walk in the Spirit of Power and Wisdom and visit the Light before your time.

This communication has been a long time in coming and even now, perhaps, it may yet be premature for many. Premature in the sense that to reach up into the Trance Levels one must be Prepared, and this in, and at, all levels of the Message of I Paul received to date. Time and again the Message has spoken out about the necessity of being Prepared and has repeatedly informed you that you really do not comprehend what it is that you have in your hands, the Way to Spiritual Power, which belongs in your Mind, and the acknowledgment of The Spirit Realms and Absolute Proof of the Life there in which you may one day be a part of if you reach the Light.

In this Communication, and in one to follow, “Trance State - Two,” we are going to be discussing and revealing “The Gift of Power and Wisdom, The Minds.” This will include Creative Thought through dynamic Concentration; Creative Imagination through dynamic Conscious Awareness; Meditative Cogitation; Meditative Trance States and the “Hidden Observer” which watches over us and also guides “Us” while in The Trance State.

All of you have the liberty to Think freely, but as Family Members you also have an obligation to think Spiritually, Highly, Clearly and Concisely. I Paul cannot and, of course, will not exert your Effort for you. If you are not now familiar with all that the Message has had to say about Trance States and everything related to them, then my advice to you is to get with it and practice all that even remotely deals with the subject. I cannot create your sincerity, your honesty, your truthfulness, your Love, your Purity of Mind and Heart so that you can thrust yourself upwards and into The Spirit Realms.

Most of you believe in a Life hereafter, you must, or I would find it strange that you are here, but how many of you can prove it? Those who have the Activated Will of LIFE and Life, The LIGHT and Light then, within them, have proven it and so may all of you “mere believers” if you follow the directions of The Message exactly as given.

Now for those who doubt, panic over or even fear the Trance states I must inform them that their physical and their spiritual ignorance is showing. Every normal human being has experienced types of trance states since they were born, in fact even during the process of being born! Sleep, dreams, comas, day-dreaming, hypnosis, deep or high meditation, cogitation, contemplation, reflection are all

types and levels of trance states and there are others. The Trance State puts us in touch with our True-Selves. It is a pathway to our inner or higher mind. It's the entering into a different order of Consciousness. It's the means to focus in and visualize, "see" that order and the increasing of one's awareness of it to the point of thrusting ourselves up into it.

There are, of course, conditions to be met and necessities to be fulfilled if one is to be successful in breaching the barriers between the Physical and the Spiritual realms. In addition to those things already noted, we are talking about such matters as Self-Discipline, Drive, Desire, Motivation, Action, Good-Works and the like. The reason for, the necessity for such preparations? Simple - you need to establish and give Recognition in order to receive "Recognition."

Now for those of you who are deeply, sincerely and honestly interested in the Trance States and really want to participate in the experiencing of them, we are going to assist you in locating the "entrance," the "gate" and the "well" to them. But first you must understand and appreciate the fact that you are fully capable of summoning up the Powers of your own mind yet you are going to need the full cooperation and Recognition of "other" minds! The spirit mind is not going to come to you - you must go to it.

How well do you know your own Mind? Odd question? No, most people really do not know their own mind. They haven't developed an introspective quality or ability, necessary to "the knowing" of one's own mind.

How well do you know your own body? Odd question? No, most people do not really know their own body. Most allow the body to control the mind and in view of what we have just said about the mind above, it isn't too difficult to understand how this can be. This is the real reasoning for oversleeping, overeating and the like.

How well do you know your True-Self? The Truth is that hardly anyone really "knows" their True-Self. And herein, my dear sisters and brothers, lies the real reason why you do not know your own mind and your body! If you do not know the Real You how can you possibly expect to truly know anything about your mind or your physical attributes.

To induce the Trance States one must know his own body and his own mind. You cannot wish yourself nor pray yourself into Preparation and you can never be prepared as long as you're a slave to "self," to foolish notions and preconceived ideas, to illusions and to an ignorance of the Message and its practice.

Now you are persons and what you need to do is

become, “Be,” what you truly are, a Person! You see, right now you live as if you were a Trinity, your body as one unit, your mind as one unit and your spirit as one unit. This is wrong. This is why you do not really “know” your own “Being.” You need to consolidate, Unite, all three units as a dynamic “whole” and be One as LIFE intended you to be during your physical life span here on W-303. Together, the Soma, the Psyche, the Pneuma spell Power. Separated they spell chaos. Together they are the three commandments, Love, Think, Obey and that spells Well-Being! Let the Heart (soma) Love, Let the Mind (psyche) Think and let them, united together, Obey the Conscience (pneuma) come what may!

You cannot possibly start out separated and then separate the Separation for the purposes of the Trance States, O, No! You must start out as One and then you may separate for the purposes of the Trance States, OBE’s and for the higher purposes of Transcendence! At no other time in your life should you live separate but always as a Whole Person who is Fully Human and Fully Spiritual – One whole Being then, one Person, then, United and Totally in control of that Unity. This, too, is a simple matter of minds. This is what “being yourself” means, it is the height of an ease-of-minds, it is the epitome of Acting Natural, i.e., to be your True-Self within a duality of Minds that are United and you



are Whole now in the Involution-Evolution phases of your Whole, United, One Life! This is your Divine Unity.

The Mind then, not the brain, nor the body, is what should be living and directing your life for you, but most humans have placed a veil over their minds so that nothing good spiritually comes out of it and nothing good can enter into it even from a higher source - you hold to an inactive intellect while all the while you Need access to the “Active Intellect”!

Persons look at me, and at times, think I’m disturbed or upset about something or that I’m out in “left field” somewhere, alone, but they are mistaken, for I am not out in “left field” but in a state of, or level of, the trance medium, and I can assure you that I am not alone. I have never in my life been alone although before I became cognizant of that truth “I thought I was” and that’s part of that veil I mentioned earlier on, part of that inactive intellect, then.

Today, being qualified, I use the mind powers, or the states, if you prefer, Obediently, instructively and automatically whenever I wish or need to get on the other side of my mental capacities, the side that throws no shadow, and the capacity to do this is to “shut out” the material-physical aspects of this world, employing my

water-signal to signify my readiness through my vibrating and vigorous concentration and deep motivation to be “there.” My Creative Thought and Creative Imagination place me there before I actually am “there” and all these things are what creates an atmosphere around me of “total silence” and then up to “Absolute Silence” within and without. This is the place where I am able to “hear” the voice that never speaks and I am able to “see” the light that no one else can see and compels them, those around me, if any, to think that I’m not acting normally or naturally. The truth being, of course, that I Paul am acting absolutely normal and natural at that very moment, more natural than my observers are. For as you should all be well aware of, to “act natural” is to be your true-self within a duality of minds. And that’s what a Trance-state is all about, the “searching out” and “the compounding” of “the minds” and then the Separation of same but the maintaining of the essence of that Unity on all levels. The state, then, of carrying everything with you - up or down!

There has been, and still is, a great amount of misunderstanding, misconception, doubt, fear, anxiety and so forth in regards to the term Trance State. Since the inception of mankind the Trance States have been known and are as common as sunshine and rain. There is nothing unusual or unique or tricky about entering into a trance

state. Most human beings do it without even being aware of it. Daydreaming is one example. The half awake-half asleep state is another. The act of becoming totally absorbed in something such as a book, a Task, a communication from The Message, a listening, a viewing, wherein everything else is mentally blocked out or blacked-out are also very good examples of trance state levels, as is also true of some “meditative” levels and “visionary” states - the abodes of prophets and Mystics (that’s True Prophets and True Mystics, not the “after-the-facts” types).

Other levels of Trance States which are not usually recognized as such are pure Contemplation in the act of practicing The Presence of Spirit and that level attained through Pure Prayer wherein one experiences the very heights of devotional Recognition of, and conscious contact with, the Spirit. Some of these are what I call automatic, spontaneous, involuntary manifestations of the Trance State, or the semi-trance states or the low “trance-state” levels. It’s a sensation of being outside of your body, a feeling of being alongside of yourself and watching yourself in Action. This is “parallel awareness” of the divided consciousness of the lower and higher minds, and when you reach this state of awareness it’s an easy “step-up” to the Uniting of The Opposites, “IF”! If, simply because the “parallel awareness” level can only be fully utilized from a

complete state of freedom wherein there is no presence of fear, of doubt, of “self,” of anxiety and the presence of a driving desire and motivation to be One.

Self-Discipline and Preparation are, of course, the keys to the proper and safe attainment of the Higher Trance State Levels. This means that you must have in hand, and in Action, The Full Measure of Responsibility, Recognition and Faith as clearly and concisely spelled out throughout The Message of I Paul. These qualifications, absolute in their nature, automatically disqualify just about every single member of The Family from the Highest Levels of the so-called Trance States, the Transcendent Levels, then!

Many of you, most even, openly or secretly believe it is impossible to slay “self” and to keep “it” slain. This is a fallacy. “Self” is an Illusion and it is employed by ignorant, lazy, irresponsible persons, just as the spiritually ignorant religionists employ the illusion of a Satan or evil spirits. It’s a crutch, an excuse, a defense for the non-defensible actions of those who are not Prepared to face Life and its inherent hardships and demands upon them. These are “the Wasters,” the ones who practice “being” over “doing,” the ones who are experts in “talking the Way” but simply will not “walk” it, some of these are title holders who are of the opinion that the title makes them more pious, more

intelligent than their peers and they abuse their positions to “put down” others or to lord-it-over others. They completely forget that they are Servants First and are not to be served more than they serve. To be in “self” then is not only absurd but a true declaration of one’s ignorance, unpreparedness and irresponsibility to themselves, their immediate families, to their jobs and their work places, to The Family of LIFE and LIGHT and to the Well-Being of the ALL in ALL. They lack “Recognition”! and they show it! By their Fruits ye shall know them, and we do. And the “self,” being an illusion, isn’t really all that difficult to shed. When you are totally absorbed in something, oblivious to all that surrounds you there is no “self” present. Where did “it” go? Nowhere. It wasn’t there to begin with. What has happened is simply the fact that your attention has been diverted, subconsciously, from thoughts of your self, your wants and your selfishnesses including your visions of self-importance. That’s how easy it really is to be free of “self” and when you come out of this semi-trance state “self” doesn’t automatically re-inject itself into your consciousness, it can’t, no, you re-institute it back into your consciousness by reverting back into your old, business as usual life style instead of having learned from the experience and making the necessary changes called for to keep “self” out of your life. This is known as self-discipline

and responsible Action. The Higher Minds will not accept “self” or any part of any illusion and that may be the very reason you have not been capable of uniting the opposites and entering into the Trance State Levels. Think about this!

You must completely understand that you cannot enter into the Realm of Divine Consciousness with impurities of any ilk burdening the lower consciousness. A Troubled Mind only breeds trouble – it needs to be cleansed, spiritualized and Free – owe no one here nothing and yourself ALL for that is the way and the Way is Love in all of its Pureness and Trueness. It’s Love that purges and Purifies and it’s the Truth that sets you free and together they Prepare you for the “Stepping-Up” in Consciousness.

Now as regards Trance States we must mention two of the greatest and most authentic examples of these phenomenas – “Automatic Writing” and “Receivings.” The former is thoroughly explained and documented in the Message itself. The Receiving of “thought Transferences,” and that’s exactly what it means, the transfer of thoughts to you by spirit, not your thoughts or “self” thoughts, but the Spirit’s thoughts coming to you and not from you or your illusions.

If you do not hold a free, safe, sound, sane and sober consciousness don’t delude yourself by sitting to receive –

you can accomplish just as much by talking to yourself. And if and when you believe you have received, very carefully peruse that supposedly received and if it is something that you could easily have said or thought, throw it away, it's "self" leading you down the Primrose Path. Furthermore, you should compare your "believed receivings" with the authentic Receivings of The Message of I Paul, and if they are like night and day, again, throw them away.

You can receive, make no mistake about that reality, and if you do actually receive then you can also "enter-in" at the Trance State Levels and you then should have very little trouble, if any, in Uniting All of the opposites and of being transformed! Also in regards to receiving, Common Sense ought to tell you that if you hear voices you are not really receiving - you are hallucinating! We must all keep in mind that the Spirit's ways are not our Ways and Spirit thoughts are not as our thoughts, for if they were, what would be the sense or reason for their "sendings" to us? Simply none, I Paul would venture to say.

The Way to the Kingdom, i.e., the Way to "the Way" is a movement, a bold, revolutionary movement perfectly in keeping with the movement begun by Jesus of Nazareth, later entrusted to Saul of Tarsus and now entrusted to all of us in the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL. This



“movement” involves many tasks, a few missions in comparison and only one Goal worthy of our Total Attention and Recognition in this life and that is the redeeming of our rightful place in The Kingdom where our Soul IS! Everything else pales in the sight of this, falls by the wayside at the very thought of this. Yet to most people today, this Goal is hardly ever given the “time of day” in their materialistic pursuits and doubts and fears about a tomorrow. We live in a world today where religious terrorists have great countries wringing their hands and gnashing their teeth in frustration. There is much weeping. We live in a world today where human life goes hungry, thirsty and naked, where the suicide rate has reached epidemic proportions and the Super Powers keep on rattling their toys of total destruction, all the while stockpiling toxic, deadly nuclear waste which will eventually destroy all forms of life, as we know it, on this Earth of ours, if the “toys” do not do it first. All right, you say, we realize we live in a sick “me,” selfish and “self” dominated society, generation, world but what can we do about it? Simply put, Nothing or Everything! Again the choice is yours. And you may be asking yourself, Pray tell, what does all of this have to do with the subject of the Trance States? Everything, of which you will see clearly as we progress herein and in Trance State - Two.

Our Tasks? To Prepare and Be Prepared and to display



the Following that this instills. This places you in a comparable position to Jesus' eighty-two disciples, the original followers of The Way, the twelve and the seventy then. This means, that in addition to your own Preparation and Following, you have the Responsibility to recruit a membership, a following of dedicated, devoted, Responsible, Patient, Preparing and Prepared, watchful and Alert Christian Spiritualists obedient to the Mind of Christ, to LIFE and LIGHT, to the Message of I Paul, to the Family and its tasks, missions and Goal.

In the very doing of these things we are also beginning to accomplish another task, that of destroying this world's faith in its religions by exposing their fallacies, their untruths and their empty promises and supposed mysteries. In the Doing of this we are also restoring Spiritualism to its proper and rightful place here on W-303.

Our Missions? Cutting through the massiveness of the Message and simply put they involve the bringing about of the Spiritual Age and establishing the Lower New World of Unity and Peace with Love and Truth and Justice for ALL in ALL. This is the very Want of the Mind of Christ, the Well-Being of ALL for ALL.

This Accomplished, the Higher New World, as promised, will automatically come about by its own Power

and the “Gathering” of The Four Earths, the very Gateway to the Kingdom of LIGHT, which will be open to one and all from the East, the North, the South and the West. The very Happening of The ALL in ALL may then commence according to the Mind of Christ, which is not an End but a New Beginning! Fantasy? No! Simply “the Emulation” of what Jesus of Nazareth began, Saul carried on and what the Family of LIFE and LIGHT must, nay, will finish. Remember, unlike others, we can fall but we cannot fail! I must leave you now and you cannot come with me, as yet, but while I am away you will do greater things than I have done - and we will. And that has a great deal to do with The Trance States, OBE’s and the privilege of Transcending!

Now for those of you who feel the Message is too demanding, too stringent, too disciplinary let me inform you that it’s a lot less demanding on you and me than Jesus was on his followers.

Jesus laid a terrible sword across the lives of all who would follow him and on those who wouldn’t. They were either wheat or tares (weeds), good or bad fish, faithful or unfaithful servants, wise or foolish virgins, fruitful or unfruitful trees, saved or lost, light or dark eyed, forgiving or unforgiving. There was no room for compromise, you were either for Jesus or against him and his movement.

All of the above can be found in the Logia of the synoptic gospels of The New Testament. And so too, may the following: most of the Parables picture Jesus in some sort of campaign activity, building up a dedicated following for some very specific purpose. We know that the Kingdom of God was his main theme and that the Justice of God was his secondary one. The nagging question about this Jesus is this: what did he need a following for if all he was was an itinerant preacher and teacher of The Word of God? Why did he acquire “fishers of men”? What were their duties? Why did Jesus entertain tax collectors and wealthy business men at his house in Capernaum? Why did he feast and mingle with “sinners” (non-Jews) and “harlots” (wealthy Jews doing business with non-Jews). Such questions as these are almost endless, the answers, as contained in The New Testament, are striking.

Jesus had but one Goal and he pursued it relentlessly and would allow no one or no thing to stand in his way - he was determined and totally dedicated and devoted to acquiring The Kingdom of Heaven in Palestine and was determined to sit on its restored Davidic Throne as its King! This necessitated the replacing of Herod, its present puppet king, and the destruction of The Temple so that he would be the sole ruler of and in The Kingdom!

Now for those of you in the Family who have at least some inkling of the times and the prevailing conditions in Palestine during Jesus' "coming-out," "mission," "campaign," you should recognize what the deposing of Herod and the destruction of The Temple entailed. If you do not know and if you do not "see" why Jesus laid such a terrible sword across the lives of his people and his nation, let me enlighten you. To depose Herod meant to overthrow The Roman rule over Palestine and to defeat the most powerful military force in the world at that time! Secondly, to destroy the Temple meant to destroy the National Religion of his people and his Nation. He did not come out to destroy "The Law" but to destroy the religiosity of the Sadducees, the Pharisees and the Scribes and retaining only the Spiritual things of the Law. Jesus did not consider the Ten Commandments religious but Spiritual Laws to which he added, amended, to include three of his own choosing. I'm sure there will be questions. Can this be the real Jesus? Can all of this be supported from The New Testament? From the Message of I Paul? I Paul, in turn, ask all of you some questions: What do you think? What have you gleaned from The New Testament and the Message? Was Jesus an insurrectionist in the eyes of the Romans and was he crucified for this reason? And if all of this is true, how in God's name did the Christian "church" emerge from the

midst of this ensuing disaster? And, finally, is the Christian Religion actually nothing more than a cunning lie?

The biggest problem facing all historians, theologians and lay persons who try, is the one of: is it possible to discover the Real Jesus and his Movement from the mess the gospels are in? Let us see. We will start out by telling you that All of Jesus' sayings and parables have either Spiritual, Social or Political meanings, or all three even, hidden in them. It has only been in the last few decades, with a few exceptions, Tolstoy and Schweitzer for examples, that these truths have become self-evident. Why is this so? Simply because this is a prime example of Preconceived Ideas and Untruths working their magic on the human mind. No one interested in Jesus and his movement who were of The Christian persuasion ever took the time to look for anything except for Jesus' religiosity and his founding of their Church. Their Faith blinded them to the Truth. And those who were of the opposition went to such extremes in their hatred that they made no sense at all. Neither did the early Church fathers and scribes who made, created, the mess of the gospels as we now have them. And the reality of this mess, this chaos, is the fact that one can interpret the "sayings" and the "parables," the Logia then, in more than one way and make a very convincing case for oneself. This is the very reason why there have been so many books written

about Jesus, about what he said, taught and preached and what he actually did and didn't do and about his religion, spiritualism, political, military and social leanings and practices. When one wades through all these writings, their rhetoric, rationalizations, intellectualizations, opinions, assumptions, theories and the like, one is compelled to dig deeper for the Truth, the Real Jesus and what he stood for and what he was up against and up to. When one of them states flatly that Jesus was The Messiah you really have to dig deeper to find out what they really mean by that statement. Do they mean that Jesus was the Son of God, the heavenly or Kingdom Messiah or do they mean Jesus was the Son of Man, the earthly messiah?

Here, then, are some of the things you should consider about Jesus and what he really was up to!

It would appear that Jesus was also a man in a hurry. A great majority of his supposed sayings and parables attributed to him lay a great stress upon such things as haste, urgency, seriousness, crisis situations, importance of decision and great demands. The "sayings" of Jesus show him on the road actively recruiting followers who would leave behind all they had, contribute their immediate wealth to the common fund of the movement and accept all the hardships necessary to Prepare themselves to acquire the

Kingdom of God on earth! The Ebionites, a religious sect of Jesus' time, were known as "the poor" but there is also evidence that Jesus' followers also called themselves "the poor." The demands upon them were tough, stringent, and consistently rigorous; followers would have no base or home camp place to lay their heads, they could not take the time to satisfactorily settle their family responsibilities, they could not even bury their dead and they could not put their hand to the plow and then look back.

As the movement gathered momentum and strength, the Temple at Jerusalem would be destroyed bringing thousands of liberated religionists into the fold. Only those who would do the Will of God, i.e., follow Jesus come what may, would be blessed. While all of this would be going on Jesus certainly didn't expect Herod or Rome to sit still. Luke 13:31-32 tells of Herod's threat against Jesus' life and Jesus' terse reply to it. And in Luke 19:39-40 we find the Pharisees again saying to Jesus "teacher, warn your disciples." They wanted them to cease from their recruiting and exciting the people into revolt against the Roman Rule. The movement was too far along for it to be deterred because Herod posed a threat to it and neither could the disciples be expected to keep still in order to avoid a confrontation with Rome. Fishermen were asked to leave their nets to fish for men. Laborers were urgently needed in the movement, but that



did not prompt Jesus to lower the stringent standards of his growing Family. “While he was still speaking to the crowds, look, his mother and brothers were standing outside seeking to speak to him” (someone said to him, Look! your mother and brothers stand outside, seeking to speak to you). He, replying, said to the one speaking to him, “Who is my mother, and who are my brothers”? Then, extending his hands to his followers, he said, “Look! My mother and my brothers, for whoever does the will of my Father in Heaven is my brother, sister and mother.” (Matthew 12:46-50.) This wasn’t a church Jesus was designating, it was a Family - his Family of Spiritual Messianists! Now if this isn’t proof enough for some skeptics, consider this saying also: Jesus said “Whoever does not hate his father and mother cannot be my disciple, and whoever does not hate his brothers and sisters and does not take up his cross in my way will not be worthy of me.” (Gospel of Thomas which the Church rejected during the canonization process.) All of these “sayings” ask followers to do what Jesus did, reject his own family in favor of the movement, the fellowship, the sister and brotherhood, The Way, the one Family whose followers would do the Will of God. Only those who entered the straight gate would be saved. When women wept Jesus told them to weep for themselves, not for him or his way. You see Jesus had a purpose, a cause which he considered the most



important in the world, and because of his “vision” he employed extreme pressure and measures to recruit others to enter into the tasks and missions required to bring about the fulfillment of his Goal! He called all to repent (change), Prepare, Follow and Come after him. Those who followed him then had to commit themselves absolutely to Jesus’ Goal of acquiring the New World, the Kingdom of God come to this Earth and the beginning of The Spiritual age for his Family and eventually for all humans everywhere!

It has been reported that this Jesus quite often went off alone, presumably to pray. Either this Jesus was crazy, or was a religious fanatic or he was in touch with a higher-power via the Trance States, and this I Paul will leave up to you to decide! But I will tell you this - Jesus’ program involved the acquiring of The Kingdom of God on Earth. This would be impossible without some kind of communication with spirit. Furthermore, this acquisition was so important that no ethical demand would be allowed to stand in its way by Jesus, not the people, not the national religion, not Herod Antipas, not the Roman Government, nothing then! Jesus was truly all things to all people and he used every maneuver in the Book of The Two Ways to get his Way before the people.

No theologian or historian worth his salt today denies

that Jesus' major theme was The Kingdom of God and that his secondary theme was the Justice of God, which is, simply put and accurately so, "Freedom"! Now Jesus knew, of course, that his people were not free, and worse, they were not free on two fronts - they were enslaved by a legalistic religion and a great military power, the Romans. And he also knew that Freedom was not a gift, that it had to be earned and the only way his people and his nation were going to establish their Freedom was to turn their backs on their religion and replace it with pure Spiritualism (The Kingdom of God) and to throw off the Roman yoke, oust Herod Antipas and place Jesus on the throne. After all, if you are going to "experience" a Kingdom and sit on its throne as King then you must first get control of one! And this Jesus didn't do. There can be no doubt, no question in anybody's mind that Jesus was a spiritual genius, a Mystic, a Medium, a Psychic, a Healer, a Teacher, an Orator, a Leader, but he wasn't a good politician or militarist as the results of his movement bear out. In these sectors, the political and military, he failed, but that turned out to be a blessing for all of us because spiritually he won the Victory for all of mankind, its immortality and access to The Kingdom of God! Yet one thing is certain - Jesus was a pretending Messiah and that is the Truth! Not that Jesus was a fraud or liar, but in the sense that he was "made" a Messiah by the

New Testament authors, the Church then, who also made him Son of God and even God.

They did this through “cunning” and “deceit,” through “myth” and “lies” which the gospels of Luke, Matthew and John are composed of, intermingled with Truths.

This is the history, the back-ground though, of all pretending Messiahs – pretenders because there is only One True Messiah and that is The Heavenly Messiah, the First Creation of LIFE, the LIGHT then.

The most poignant question before all of mankind, especially here on this earth, is one of: If Jesus was simply another messiah in a long list of Pretending Messiahs, what made him Unique, different then, in that category and why, after his crucifixion, did his movement continue to live on and eventually, and sadly so, turn itself into another mystery religion, of which there were as many, or more than there were, saviors or messiahs? We must turn to the LIGHT and to I Paul for our answers and to our own knowledge of our spiritual and physical minds. We must first understand completely why religion is a false concept. The answer is so simple, so uncomplicated that most people fail to see it. God is Spirit and no Spirit can be what man has created, and man created religion and all of its snares. That’s the answer. It’s

so visible it's invisible to almost all of mankind here. It's so simple man simply cannot "see" it, "hear" it, nor accept it!

There it is, The Truth, God is Spirit and must be Recognized in the spirit, through True and Pure spiritualism then, not through untrue, tainted religionism, then! Without this Absolute Freedom of Truth, the Truth cannot set any man or any woman free to redeem themselves and enter-in to the Kingdom of God, here and there!

What people fail to recognize is that they have given up the Freedom of their own minds by belonging to a religion, for what they have done is allowed their religion to talk to God for them and this is pure spiritual ignorance for no religion can, has or ever will talk to God, for they are contrary to all that God stands for and means for them. Their inventions of soul, Satan, Hell, purgatory, limbo, forgiving of sins, blessings, sacraments, sacrifices, rites, rituals, dogmas, doctrines and so forth condemn them, and rightfully so. But in spite of all this, billions of people have turned their minds over to these enslaving religions with all their bigotries, hates, so-called "holy" wars, unjust taxations, untruths about LIFE and LIGHT elaborately presented as the Truth, their absence and abstention from any True Spiritualism and their overabundance of foolish and contrived religious practices contrary to the Love, the

## Justice and the Will of God.

People the world over do not take the time to investigate, study and understand their religions and their origins for if they did they would reject them in droves, just as Jesus rejected his religion and set out to free his people and his Nation from both the enslaving tenets of their National Religion and the enslavement of Roman Rule under puppet ethnarchs.

This Jesus, being a Righteous Person, torn by his preconceived religious ideas and traditions, his love for his people and the Truth of God and Life, as he saw it and as he read the signs, took unto himself a tremendous burden worthy of “a messiah” and through this undertaking captured the “Recognition of Spirit” which is the key to the most “Poignant” question.

This Jesus, being a “Righteous” man, set out to destroy All the Laws that were unjust and contrary to the Will of God in order to bring about the Kingdom of God.

Why do you suppose a Spirit (in this one case the LIGHT) incarnated in this man Jesus, to establish a new religion? Of course not. It came for the reasons given in the Message and those we shall give herein and in Trance States Two. All of this is the “Secret” the Message of I Paul holds, The Truth that all the religions, past and present, of this

Earth do not know or, knowing, do not hold to. Its simplicity is what renders it so difficult to accept and to understand, and it is adversely contrary to all that the religions have written about this Righteous man Jesus and what they preach and teach. The question is whether what they Preach and Teach and whether or not their writings and the gospels are inspired writings received from Spirit or simply the concoctions of men's imaginations? Let us look at what they had to work with and what they finally came up with and canonized as The Truth.

From the evidence we must conclude that religious Christianity is a man-manufactured "mystery religion" and nothing more than a myth in a long list of fictional myths called mystery religions. From this very beginning its mystery was formulated: Jesus was "the Leader" of a radical movement whose main purpose was to acquire The Kingdom of God, on Earth, beginning in Palestine. This, of course, required the ways and means of throwing off the Roman yoke and re-establishing the autonomy and national freedom of his people, the destruction of The Temple (the end of the National Legalistic Religion) and the seating of Jesus himself on the throne as King and Lawmaker of The Jewish Nation. This "movement," the Way, was both Spiritual (the Kingdom of God vs. religion) and Physical (the revolt against Rome). The very sayings

and parables, The Logia then, of the gospels bear out these facts. Jesus' command in relationship to this was one of Come, Follow Me and his demand was be ye doers of The Way and not just hearers. Jesus, then, was anti-religious and anti-foreign rule. He was, though, Pro the Chosen People and Pro the Chosen Nation of God, which together, Realized and functioning, constituted the foundation of the Kingdom of God on Earth, or "the Spiritual Way"!

Because of these traits, Jesus was tried and crucified as an Insurrectionist (as was, before him, John the Baptist, his Partner) and Crowned at the Cross by the Romans as the "King of the Jews" as a warning to other would-be Messiahs.

Now this Jesus had to be an Adept Spiritualist and in-touch with spirit and an advocate of the Trance States for everything he seems to have said and done came almost completely from "The Book of the Two Ways" - LIFE-death; LIGHT-darkness, Spiritual-physical; Righteous-unrighteous; Kingdom-slavery; Faithful-unfaithful; wheat-weeds; and so forth.

Biblical Christianity is a hoax, a myth, and most certainly not the inerrant-infallible word of God as claimed by most Religious Christian Sects! These sects save no one, in truth, what they do is destroy them!

Now that's a very strong statement and needs to be proved so let us "see" how the church wrote the New Testament, biblical christianity then. And, let us keep in mind those tenets of Common Sense that tell us that Spirits do not establish something foreign, alien to themselves, to their very being. They establish what they are, spirit things, not material things such as churches, temples, gods, goddesses, saints, altars, sacrifices, rites, rituals, dogmas, doctrines, mysteries, sacraments, virgin births and all the rest of the man-manufactured illusions and myths, such as Satan, Hell and "self." Religion gets you a grave. Spirit gives you Life and Light everlasting. The choice is not only "ours," we are not exclusive, but every human being here on the face of this Earth and we must present it to them and soon!

We should also keep in mind that insofar as we know, looking through a glass darkly, that all things are possible with God. Let us see if God, LIFE then, was involved in the writing of The New Testament gospels and some of its letters.

What did this church and its scribes know about this man Jesus? Actually no more than the historians of the time and even his disciples were strangers to him and he to them. The best any one can come up with is this: His name was Jeshua Ben Joseph, born in 4 B.C. in Nazareth. He had four



brothers and three sisters. Raised in Nazareth and being the oldest son of a builder, he learned the business himself. He left home for reasons that are unclear and joined a “solitary” group with his cousin John (the baptist). He began his ministry at the legal age of Thirty. The gospels say he was baptized by his cousin John and that his mission lasted for three years at the end of which he was crucified by the Romans and with the Jewish Religious leaders’ acquiescence. Three days later, or thereabouts, his followers ecstatically proclaimed his resurrection. All of this can be found in The Synoptic gospels. For further “history” one must turn to Pliny (65 A.D.) or Josephus, born around the time of Jesus’ execution, or to the Jewish Talmud for references made after his death. There is no record of Jesus or his life before his death except what is listed here. Yet the church wrote “a history” of Jesus – the following is an exposure of their magic and the “mystery” of their religion!

After the crucifixion a rather massive collection of Jesus’ supposed “sayings” and “parables” cropped up, some very legitimate and some very suspect, and this is all the nascent Church really had before the construction of The “synoptic” gospels took place. These told only of Jesus’ activity during his mission on behalf of the Kingdom of God. It is not surprising that they knew nothing about Jesus’ life beyond this simply because Jesus “came-out” as a stranger,

collected strangers by his call of “Come, Follow Me,” and he was never in a “me” or “self” state of thought. He ignored his past life, he didn’t dwell on it or talk about it and he even denied his own mother, brothers and sisters and he only acknowledged God as his Father, as he instructed all of his followers to do, as well as all his audiences. Jesus gave up all the comforts of life, including his wealth, and gave it to the movement, “the Way” for The Well-Being of its followers and this he demanded everyone else to do who joined the Way (II Corinthians 8:9).

Now we know that there is a force of both Good and Evil, Obedience and Disobedience, inherent in all of mankind – not an evil spirit, a demon, or a satan – but one inherent in the “Wants” and “Selfishnesses” of all human beings. The causes are many – Greed, fear, anxiety, jealousy and so forth, but the drive for Wealth, Power, Importance and glory are the greatest contributors of evil and despicable acts!

It was these “greater contributors” that drove the authors of the New Testament gospels to write what they presented to the world of their day and age as The Truth, which it was not, as we shall see.

Ancient authors were quite prone to attribute to great leaders and personages miraculous stories that are quite obviously mythical, just as many great, and not so great,

leaders and personages were eager to claim for themselves miraculous stories about their births and their powers, especially the source of their powers.

Many of these miraculous narratives were of virgin births. These miraculous births were either “self-proclaimed,” as in the case of Alexander The Great or Apollonius of Tyana, or attributed to the personages by authors, as in the cases of Pythagoras, Isaac and Sargon of Akkad, which, incidentally, is very much like the birth story of Jesus in the gospel of Matthew some two thousand or more years later. There is a rather lengthy list of claimed virgin births in CPM #30 and some of these are closely related to the birth of Jesus as given in Matthew and Luke. All claims to virgin birth in those times, as of now, with the exception of artificial insemination are false claims motivated by blind faith and expressed in fictional mythological terms.

The birth of Isaac is a case in point. The renowned Jewish Philosopher Philo of Alexandria, a contemporary of Jesus and an interpreter of Scripture, took literally Sarah’s complaint that she could not bear a child and then bore Isaac, Philo termed this as being a virgin birth. Philo claimed that God was Isaac’s Father. How did Philo reason this out? Simple. Philo reasoned that when a virgin had

intercourse with a man she became a woman. But when a woman had intercourse with God she became a virgin again! What Philo meant by all this was that he believed Isaac was at least as great as all the Kings who were said to be virgin born. Since their greatness could not be explained by their natural ancestry, they were said to be born of the gods which meant they were virgin born. Virgin birth, then, was a fictional mythological explanation for greatness and this is how it came to be attributed to Jesus!

Since the early church did not know the details of Jesus' birth it assumed it correct to structure the narrative in virgin birth terms because they viewed him as the greatest leader of all time. From this beginning of greatness from God it was a simple matter of graduation for the Church to install him as God in the second person of the Trinity!

When we come to Matthew and Luke we find two different birth narratives. Why? Can they both be true? Most certainly not. Let us see how the author of Luke came to write his narrative.

When the author or "authors" of Luke set out to construct the gospel and the early life of Jesus, certain customs pertaining to all Jewish males were familiar to them, such as rank in birth, i.e., first son, second son and so on, circumcision, purification of the mother, bar mitzvah,

and the Jewish age requirements for holding positions such as National leadership. It was around such factual Jewish traditions that the authors or author of Luke composed their fictional narrative. They began with the knowledge that Jesus had been crucified under the rule of Pontius Pilate, A.D. 26-36, they also were aware of the religious Law that a National officer had to be at least thirty years of age and no more than fifty years of age. The gospel of John said Jesus was not yet fifty years old (John 8:57) and Luke says that he was Thirty when he came-out and began his mission (Luke 3:23).

Now we know that Jesus was born in 4 B.C. but the author(s) didn't know this so they worked backwards from A.D. 36 and they came to the important event of the Roman Taxation by Quirinius (A.D. 6/7) and found a mythological reason for supposing that Jesus would have been born at the same time as this event. The taxation came as a great blow to the Jews and caused much suffering among them and their Traditions and Prophets foretold the birth of a Messiah during such a tragedy involving the chosen people. This provided the author(s) of Luke with a mythical date for the birth of Jesus and one that was reasonably close to the required age limitations for a national Jewish Leader. This was as good a place for the fictional story to begin as any other.

The difference between fictional myth and factual history is that the myth simply tells how people feel about events than in the precise historic data. This method of writing is clearly false and illusionary inspiration. Luke was very definitely a “pretending historian,” attempting to relate his (their) beliefs to actual, datable events in history, but he (they) was primarily dealing with false and blind faith and attempting to turn myth and falsehoods into Truths. Whoever wrote this gospel called Luke and who we shall call Luke from hereon, had at his disposal the following traditions:

1. Jesus lived in Nazareth,
2. as the son of David he was predestined to be born in Bethlehem,
3. from some source (Josephus?) or another he had learned that John the Baptist was actively leading a movement during the reign of Archelaus (4 B.C. to 6 or 7 A.D.), and
4. Jesus was closely related to John the Baptist (and possibly a follower of him, but not a point Luke or any of the early church scribes would ever reveal).

To follow this kind of twisted thinking it is necessary to presume that Herod's son was also at times called Herod and was at times also known as a king, when in reality, he

was never more than an ethnarch. Even with this transfer of Herods there are still some chronological inaccuracies in the narrative. Statistically, this implies that Jesus was crucified before he even began his ministry! As to what kind of trance the author(s) was in when he wrote this can only be guessed at, never mind the kind of mesmerization the church faithful are still in for accepting this kind of cunning sleight of hand. Historical Truth was of no great consequence to the early church fathers and scribes, they simply changed it to fit their own purposes.

So with these “facts” before him, Luke composed his gospel which included filling in only the details of the myth, whose outline appeared obvious to the author. Before the birth of Jesus, there is the miraculous birth of John the Baptist taking into account John’s priestly heritage. Elizabeth’s condition was patterned after the typology of Sarah giving birth in her old age (Genesis 21:1-7), and Hannah, whose son, Samuel, was born after Hannah’s vow to the priest, Eli, in the temple (I Samuel 1:1-9 & 2:10), prophecies attributed or related to Elijah and Samson were applied to John (Judges 13:4-5, Malachi 3:1-23-24; Luke 1:15-17). This style of writing was accepted historiography for both Jewish and Christian theologians since these were the days of the Messiah(s) and all prophecies were made to be fulfilled in those days (the Magnificat was composed

following the typology of the Song of Hannah on the presumption that many Old Testament prophecies were being fulfilled in the birth of The Messiah. The Benedictus (Luke 1:68-79) was also composed on the basis of many prophecies that were thought to be fulfilled in the days of the Messiah in relationship to the Messiah and his leadership role for Israel). The reason Jesus was reportedly born in a manger, rather than at the inn in Bethlehem, was that mothers were always considered defiled when birth took place. Therefore it was necessary for pregnant women to give birth in stables or in isolated corners of their homes so that the rest of the family would not be defiled. This is still the practice of some Jewish sects today. Some later writer added to Luke 2:7, not knowing the custom or looking for sympathy for Mary and Joseph. The messenger of The Lord (Luke 2:9-10) who announced good news to the shepherds was as the messenger of the Lord who brought good news of peace to Zion (Isaiah 40:9; 41:27; 52:7). Just as the prophecy of Isaiah 44:20 was for the Lord's chosen people, so the good news to the shepherds was!

Glory to the most High God  
and on the land, peace,  
for his chosen people (Luke 2:14)

Because of the numerous prophecies, typologies and



traditions associated with The Messiah, Luke was able to compose an extensive mythical saga around Jesus' birth. With the traditions about Nazareth and Bethlehem, Luke had only to deduce how Jesus could be born in Bethlehem and live in Nazareth. The taxation of Quirinius gave him a basis for his plot and to explain how the two locations could be resolved. There was very little tradition or legend about the circumcision of The Messiah, so Luke took care of that detail in one verse, noting that Jesus was both circumcised and named on the eighth day as was normal for Jewish males. The next event in the normal life of a Jewish male was that he, and not his mother, would be cleansed after the required forty days had been completed, just as the scripture directed (Leviticus 12:1-4). For Jesus, Luke conjectured this would take place in the temple at Jerusalem (Luke 2:22-23) and he reported that Mary gave the atonement offering required of someone who was not rich (Leviticus 12:8). Luke also took this occasion to insert a prophecy of Simon, based on Isaiah 40:5; 52:10; 42:6; 49:6; 25:7; and 46:13, and the prophecy of Hannah, relating to Jesus those who expected the redemption of Jerusalem (Luke 2:38), but he did not mention Jesus as being virgin born.

Since there was no reported tradition about what a Jewish male should do between the ages of forty days and twelve years, Luke skipped over this period and reported

what he conjectured to have happened to a Jewish boy destined to be the Messiah at the time of his Bar Mitzvah. Luke was consistent in holding that Jesus lived in Nazareth, so he arranged a situation whereby he could get to Jerusalem so that his event could take place in the Holy city before the greatest of all Rabbis. All Jewish boys were given chances to show their knowledge of the law before adult males of their own congregations, but it would seem that The Messiah would have excelled all normal performances. Instead of the local synagogue, it was the temple; instead of the laymen, this was before the scholars. The situation was centered around a normal trip to Jerusalem for one of the feasts which devout Jews attended three times a year.

The next age that is important to Jewish males is twenty. At that time the youth becomes an adult, he is no longer a child, he is responsible for bearing arms, paying taxes, offering sacrifices and is allowed to marry, in fact expected to do so. But Luke skipped over Jesus' life from the age of twelve to Thirty, when Jesus presumably began his public leadership role (Luke 3:23).

Now in the Matthaean narrative, worked with many of the same assumptions as the Lukan ones, there were some differences of emphasis. Whereas Luke began with the conception of John the Baptist and tried to tell what must

have happened at the most important periods in a Jewish boy's life, Matthew began with the birth of Jesus and then told nothing of Jesus' life until he confronted John the Baptist for baptism as an adult. Furthermore, he emphasized the importance of prophecies fulfilled and typologies repeated more than Luke did. On the basis of five Old Testament prophecies, Matthew structured the saga under consideration.

1. Isaiah 7:14 prophesied: "Look! a virgin will become pregnant and will bear a son, and they will call him Emmanuel." Since all prophecy is made only for the days of The Messiah and these were the days of The Messiah, this prophecy must apply to the birth of Jesus. The Semitisms in this narrative indicate clearly that the authors knew Hebrew very well and could have rendered the translation properly and correctly as the Hebrew means "Young woman" and not "virgin." Matthew chose the Septuagint text which was incorrectly translated as "virgin" because he wanted to apply to Jesus a "proof text" that would claim for him all the glory claimed, erroneously so, by other great kings. This one verse in Isaiah then was used to justify the virgin birth myth.
2. From Micah 5:1, 3 Luke found the following prophecy

“And you, Bethlehem, are by no means the least among the chiefs of Judah, for from you will come a chief who will shepherd my people Israel.” This text provided “proof” that the Messiah was predestined to be born in Bethlehem, so there would be no reason to interview witnesses to learn where Jesus had actually been born. Since he was the Messiah, there was no other possibility. The scripture was the only place to look for information, so the writer of the myth prepared a narrative that took Bethlehem into account. Since Jesus was born there, the author also assumed that his parents had lived in Bethlehem at the time.

3. Hosea had said, “Out of Egypt I have called my son.” Since the Messiah was the only Son of God, this text must apply to Jesus, the only question was how. Somehow the Messiah must have been in Egypt so that the Lord could call him out from there, as he had done with Moses. The task of the “historian” was to deduce how this could have come about.
4. Jeremiah prophesied, “the voice in Ramah was heard, mourning and great lamentation, Rachel weeping for her children and she did not want to be comforted because they were not.” (Jeremiah 31:15.) Rachel, of

course, had lived more than a thousand years earlier and would not have known about the children around Bethlehem at the time of Herod the Great, but that was not a deterring factor. According to the rabbis, there is no before and after in the scripture. Jeremiah was a prophet too, therefore he would have been speaking only of the days of the Messiah. Why would there be weeping in Herod's day? Herod must have slaughtered Rachel's daughters and sons (descendants) the way Pharaoh had done with the Hebrew children in Egypt.

5. Knowing that Jesus had been called a Nazarias, the author assumed that this also had been prophesied. Upon studying the scripture, he found in Judges 13:5 that, with reference to Samson, it was said, "He shall be called a Nazarite." Here, then, was another prophecy that was fulfilled in the days of the Messiah. This prophecy accounted both for the fact that Jesus was called a Nazarias and the likelihood that he was from Nazareth. Actually the term Nazarias has nothing to do with Nazareth. It was the name of a Jewish sect that has survived to this day. (See "The Gospel before Mark," C. Parker, Chicago, 1953.) They trace themselves and their sect back to John the Baptist! When Paul became a Jewish Messianist he was also considered a Nazarias (Acts 24:5 & 26:9

pertaining to Jesus also).

We know Jesus lived in Capernaum where he had a house (Mark 1:9, 21 - Matthew 9:7).

So, these five prophecies provided Matthew all the scriptural authorization he needed for the foundation of his narrative - but these were his only proofs for the construction of his “saga” or “myth.” Whoever the author or authors of Matthew were, they were in a trance state alright - one of blind faith. For anyone to believe that these gospel scribes were inspired by Spirit is to openly display one’s spiritual ignorance. The gospels were manufactured and done so with very little factual history being utilized.

Let us summarize the Matthean account and then “see” how the events of The Cross were put together by these church scribes. We should keep in mind that it is this gospel that the church gives preference to with John running second followed by Mark and Luke.

Like the author of Luke, the Matthean scribes really were writing a fictional myth and a saga rather than a factual, historical report. A report written from a religious and prophetic viewpoint - a “new” but borrowed religion from The Prophets of the past who were not really prophets but preachers (see CPM #30, Addendum #2). The virgin birth narrative was designed to attribute to Jesus that which

was the claimed heritage of the greatest leaders. The writers simply told what they felt about Jesus, the facts didn't enter into the picture at all. They also confirmed these feelings by other tales that were suitable testimonies for kings. In Matthew, this included the arrival of the magicians from the East - for Luke it was the Magnificat, the Benedictus and the Nunc Dimittus, giving poetic content to Old Testament prophecies confessing the conviction that this child was predestined to grow and become the one who would redeem Israel from the yoke of the oppressor. Although the typological identities prove nothing actual about the events that took place in New Testament time, they show what the writers felt and assumed must have happened since it was already made known by the Prophets of the past. Following these prophets closely and reading the signs, they designed their narrative in such a way as to convince their readers that their analysis was correct. It was much more important to the Jews of his day to know how long it would be before God expelled the Romans and restored the promised land than it was to know the exact age of John and Jesus when they began their mission. Matthew and Luke were after-the-facts type of prophets more than they were historians, but they were educated enough to be believed as astute in deducing unknown history on the basis of prophecy, typology, Jewish customs and other convictions which were



central to their sagas. Other materials, such as the date of John's conception, the length of Mary's pregnancy, the date of the Roman taxation and the number of miles between Nazareth and Judah were secondary details. According to Matthew, Jesus was called Joshua which means "Jehovah saves" because he was predestined to "save" his people from their sins (Luke 1:31). This passage makes sense in a Semitic sense and language, not in Greek, indicating that it was written originally in Hebrew or Aramaic. From a true historian's point of view, these sagas provide nothing useful about where or when Jesus was actually born. According to John, people said Jesus did not qualify as a messiah because the Messiah was expected to be of the seed of David and be born in Bethlehem, whereas Jesus came from Galilee and people seemed to think he had been born there (John 7:41-43). Matthew and Luke followed different logic. Since they were sure in their own belief that this Jesus was The Messiah, he must have come from, been born in, Bethlehem, and he must have been a descendant of David's line, so they wrote their sagas to express that conviction. The fact that they thought the prophecies were fulfilled, however, does not mean that what they wrote was truthful and historical. It wasn't. And these gospels are the foundation of the Christian religion! From these attempts of religious leaders to write sagas, we learn their thinking, not



history and certainly not The Truth. If we didn't have the sagas of the Hasmonean revolt in I and II Maccabees and the histories of Josephus, we would not be able to locate all of this from reading Daniel alone. From the birth narratives, in the same way, historians and other seekers of Truth have to be agnostic about such reports as the place and time of Jesus' birth, the place where the family lived, the appearance of a star, the visit of the wise men, the shepherds, the slaughter of the infants, the trip to Egypt, the virgin conception of Mary, the dreams of Joseph, and all the other concoctions of this fable that are based on prophecy or typology rather than known history and honest facts! These gospels were attempts of the later church to reconstruct the unknown history of Jesus' life as they wanted others to believe. Luke had another way of constructing his fable over and above what Matthew used. He took oral reports from all other sources and greatly expanded them. Luke developed his gospel from Matthew, which in part came from Mark, and those other sources, where he "filled in" many uncertainties to fit his purpose. Unlike Matthew, which didn't say what Jesus' home town was, Luke named one, Nazareth instead of Capernaum where it was reported that Jesus had a house and supposedly performed miracles. From Matthew, Luke learned that Jesus taught in the synagogue, meaning that he taught there

many times. Luke altered this to concentrate on one special event where Jesus gave his opening sermon. Luke further thought that the statement “He taught them,” meant that he first read a text and then sat down and interpreted it, so Luke added what he thought was the appropriate words from Isaiah which itself was a commentary on the Leviticus text on Jubilee release (Leviticus 25:10). Then returning to his own text, Luke conjured up the response of the congregation with more expansion over Mark and Matthew. Luke then supplied Jesus with a proverb (which he called a parable) and two illustrations from the Old Testament to support his argument, after which he made up further response of the congregation, accentuating the response of Jesus’ rejection by them.

This was just another way the church wrote “history.” Luke had already “traced” the events of Jesus’ life from birth to the beginning of his campaign. Here he provided a specific occasion for that beginning, but he did not believe he was writing pure fiction because the text (Matthew) he was using for his narrative he assumed was reliable. He simply “developed” that text homiletically the way other gospel writers did (Matthew 15, Mark 7). This “filling-in” by the writer of Luke with inaccuracies prove conclusively the authors purpose and intent to mislead the ignorant and superstitious people of his day. The problem is that even

today it is believed, which doesn't say much for modern day knowledge and intelligence of the religionists. It's not really the greatest story ever told, but it is the greatest story ever "sold"!

The miracles these gospel writers attested to as being "history" pose a real problem for historians and scholars simply because there is no real way of testing them as we can test teachings. Did they happen or did they not? The evidence given, at its very best, is terribly inconclusive, and different people will assess them differently and no religion is ever without its own miracle stories. There is, though, a great amount of similarity between ancient demonology, fairy tales and emotional healing performed by ancient magicians and magicians of Jesus' day, all of which are described in mythology and which are currently being used by modern psychoanalysts via guided imagery. Ancient mythologists and magicians (magi) knew that one of the important ways to emotional truth and health was through fantasy! These magicians were as well respected and followed in Jesus' day as Jesus was, in fact he was called a magician. And the psychoanalysts today are respected for the same reasons the magicians were in their day. The name has changed but the basic method is still the same, but we don't call them "miracle workers" as they did in the days of old. Yet Jesus said the works I do you shall do and even

greater ones.

Jesus would not have been unique then even if he did perform “miracles.” Pharisees of his day were held to have performed miracles (Matthew 12:27). In those days miracles were attributed to all great men, religious, pagan or otherwise. Rabbis were said to have performed miracles and many people claimed they were healed in the Temples of Asclepius. Moses and Aaron had a wand by which they were said to perform miracles in Egypt and the wilderness. Apollonius of Tyana was a contemporary of Jesus and it was claimed that he out-performed Jesus in the miracle department, and he, a Pagan no less. Messiahs, and there were lots of them, were expected to perform miracles to prove their claims to the office (Matthew 24:24). In the 7th century A.D. a messiah gathered a following because he healed a leper. Much later another claimed messiah, Moses Dari, acquired a following by predicting that on a certain day it would rain blood – and it did! In France another, Ben Arich, attracted a following because he could flutter in the air in the tree tops at night. Some messiahs were accepted without performing miracles – one, Bar Kokhba, in the 2nd century A.D. and another David Alroy, during the Crusades.

Those who believed that all prophecy was fulfilled in the days of the Messiah, and believed Jesus to be the Messiah, looked to the Old Testament to learn what had

been predicted to take place in the Messiah's days. This is exactly what the gospel writers did in order to compose their narratives.

Today is Friday, March 28, 1986 so it's appropriate that we explain here some of the facts that surround the writing in the gospels about the crucifixion of Jesus.

When Jesus was captured his disciples fled for their lives. How, then, could later generations know how Jesus reacted to the suffering? The only detailed writings of the event known are the gospels? Why? The Jews, who wanted a Messiah to come in those days more than ever before, rejected Jesus as The Messiah. Why? Why is it that only "false" historians wrote about Jesus - the gospel writers. Why? Why? Why? So, what happened at the Cross? No apostle and no disciple has ever been reported as being there. So without witnesses how were the gospel writers so knowledgeable about the event they wrote about and presented as The Truth years later? A. Schweitzer said the biggest mystery of the whole New Testament is, "What happened to the body of Jesus"? And so, too, is what happened to Jesus prior to and at the Cross insofar as actual, factual history is concerned? Why? Because there simply isn't any. So we must ask, just how good and how truthful was the reporting of these events that occurred on this

church's holiest day of holy days - good Friday? Keep in mind that crucifixions were a dime a dozen during the Roman occupation of Israel as well as they were elsewhere. It was the common method of disposing of Rome's enemies and there were thousands.

Matthew and Luke didn't need any witnesses to the events to compose their sagas, all they needed was the scriptures to describe how Jesus must have felt and responded to the whole agonizing and gruesome event. So our two authors simply asked themselves what were the typological possibilities for a person facing death unjustly? There were two lengthy Psalms that fit the bill very nicely for their purposes. These Psalms expressed the feelings of men in despair, crying out to the Lord. Jesus, they thought, must have reacted as an anti-type to these. Therefore Matthew wove these two Psalms (22 and 69) together to construct the "unknown" and "unknowable" "facts" about the Crucifixion!

Psalms 22 begins with a cry of despair of one who thought God had forsaken him. In times past Israelites had cried out to the Lord and he had delivered them. The psalmist however had become an object of ridicule. People mocked him for trusting the Lord. The psalmist suffered hunger, thirst and physical pain. People pierced his hands

and feet, divided his garments among themselves, casting lots. Nevertheless the author cried to the Lord in confidence, sure that God was not far off. He vowed that he would continue to praise the Lord, knowing that he alone ruled over nations, and that all the proud people of the earth would have to bow down to the Lord (sort of like Job, isn't it?).

Psalms 69 describes a man who had become hoarse from crying out – he was stuck in the mire with no place to stand. Multitudes gathered around him attacking him with vicious lies, desiring his death. No one came to his rescue – all his friends had deserted him, he was given poison to eat and vinegar to drink. All of this suffering and embarrassment came about by the psalmist's defense of the Lord. Therefore, he called on the Lord to come to his defense and rescue, destroy his foes, rescue the psalmist, and blot out his enemies from the Book of Life. Then the psalmist would praise the Lord for his salvation.

With these two Psalms as the required two witnesses to prove his case, the Matthean mythologist reconstructed the experience of Jesus at The Cross. There his attackers must have offered Jesus vinegar to drink (Matthew 27:33-34) because this was “prophesied” in Psalms 69:21. They also must have divided his garments, casting lots for them, because this was “prophesied” in Psalms 22:18. They



“blasphemed” Jesus, shaking their heads (Matthew 27:39), because that is what Psalms 22:9 foretold. They mocked him for trusting in God, thinking that God would rescue him (Matthew 27:43). This was obvious because Psalms 22:7 “predicted” it. While he was on the Cross, Jesus must have cried out, “My God, My God, why have you abandoned me?” (Matthew 27:46), because that would be the anti-type of the psalmist (22:2). Again they offered him vinegar to drink because the psalmist “prophesied” it (Psalms 69:21 - Matthew 27:48-49). Convinced that Jesus was the Messiah and armed with these two Psalms the author or authors of this narrative must have been fully aware that they were palming off fiction as truth. For sure the church itself knows this today, but they are trapped - they dare not reveal The Truth for it would destroy them. They are compelled to hide the lie, and worse, to live it every single day they keep it hid! The author, like any good religionist, was simply applying scripture that was available to him and the only source in the world available to construct the myth. That which was “prophesied in the scripture just had to have taken place at the time of the Messiah.” And who says those Psalms are prophecy? Why, the church does!

You should now have some insight into what the Christian Religionists mean by “inspired writings” and “The Word of God.” They have been in a trance state now for



almost two thousand years and they have mesmerized millions upon millions with their mythological God and Son of God. It's truly a shame Jesus isn't coming back, for if he were, he could take up his whip and clean up and clear all the liars and the fools out of all those temples the religionists call Christ Churches. Yet, they have done very well for themselves with their three major tools: the lie, Satan and Hell! And all of it in the name of God, the God of Truth and Love!

Now all of you know that the Christian Religion exists, and exists in a state of disunity. Yet how many of you know how it came into existence? We will be giving you all the facts about its existence in an I Paul Communication in the near future. I believe the Truth of it will be news to you and will astound you. And if you have eyes to "see" and ears to "hear" it will greatly assist you in being a better Spiritualist.

It was through a trance state that I first "saw" and "heard" the Truth of The Cross. It was nothing like the story in the gospels simply because they are the concoctions of men whose motives were not entirely kosher. In fact kosher isn't entirely kosher either! (See "The Truth of the Prophets," CPM #30 - Addendum #2).

A Trance state is not always something you "enter-into" - some are there all the time - in "self," in "vain

glory,” in the state of being “more pious than thou” and so forth. These are the citizens of this Earth who are guilty of “Earthly and Universal Racism” for believing they are the only intelligent Life here and in that Universe.

I Paul know things from “the beyond,” both intuitively and through “thought transference” and “Creative Thought transcendence” of a going-out and coming-in cyclical process through Divine Consciousness! Revelation never ceases, never stops, simply because man-woman never stops nor ceases!

Why do you suppose the time of the “Dark Ages,” as the historians labeled them, came about? Simply because the Western Churches declared that All Revelation ceased with the writing of the Christian Religions’ gospels and you know, people bought that and brought in those Dark Ages. That was one mass Trance State that most Christian religionists have, as yet, to be delivered from. You could deliver them if only you could get out of your “personal trance states” and get into the one true Trance State – the Mind of Christ – the Well-Being of All in All.

Love, your brother and servant,

I Paul.

## 19 - Predestination

Greetings:

My dear brothers and sisters I Paul salute you as fellow travelers on The Way to “The Way” and wish you every good thing at every right turn in your lives.

The bible says that Adam was created in God’s Image. It also says that Adam was created a “living being” which has been incorrectly interpreted, to the very detriment of the Christian religion, as “living soul.” Yet, it matters not, for the creation story in Genesis is a fictional myth.

Yet we Christian Spiritualists must address this creation fable in order to do justice to “man” and to the Spiritual Family of LIFE and to the physical Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL.

Simply because the bible says that man was created in the Image of God doesn’t make it so. We cannot even prove that this God created anything or anybody. We have no way of proving whether man came first or woman came first! For sure, someone was first, somebody was the original man or woman, there had to be a beginning, true?

Now if we were to say that the human race was formed upon the prototype of God’s Image, would that be different

from what the bible fable states? God is a Spirit, a Self-Existent Spirit. Christ was created as the Image of God with a form and structure from The Invisible God. Does this mean that Christ is visible, and if so, to whom is he visible? We are visible, Jesus was visible, Paul was visible, Moses was visible, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Joseph were all visible, even Melchisedec.

Now since God is Spirit and Spirit is Invisible, how can such have a material image any more than it can have a shadow?! And what is this “form and structure” that Christ was created with as the very Image of God? Paul knows. He was blinded by it! Could Light be considered Form? Structure? Can Wisdom? Can Power? Can Energy? Can Creativity? For it was through and for and by Christ that man and woman were created, but not here, on this earth, but on another earth and this Creation Story is no fable, no myth! But we are getting ahead of ourselves. The question before us and all of mankind that demands an answer, a solution is: How can we be created in the image of God if God is Spirit, self-existent, no beginning, no end, and invisible? And, furthermore, how can we be the Image of God, if that Image is Christ? And what does the Message say about all this? That man is a spirit, inhabiting a body, a vessel or a sheath then. And if this be true, that True-Man is a spirit, then that takes care of the Image problem, but it still leaves us with

the question, where did “the vessel” come from, you, I, us, me, the physical, the natural man and woman? Evolution? Not on this earth. The human-race as we know it here today, migrated here from another earth, and they “evolved” in the sense of adjusting to the environment and atmosphere and the very Nature of this earth. (The full explanation of all of this is an Addendum to CPM #30, entitled “Mankinds, Antarctica and Evolution and Involution on this Earth, W-303”).

This earth, once a sun, was predestined to be inhabited by creatures who were endowed with a body, a mind and a spirit. These are the foreordained characteristics that separate the heirs of the Kingdom from all other created creatures in the Universe. The body is the form and structure of the vessel, the totality of the physical-material aspect of the whole Man-Woman. The mind is the essence of the One Mind. The spirit is the image of that very Image of God, Christ. The visible dies - the invisible survives, i.e., the mind and the spirit, which has a mind of its own and which is also of the essence of the One Mind.

The psyche or lower mind of the soma or the natural body is the life-line or redemptive link to the higher psyche or mind of the pneuma or spirit - our True-Selves,, i.e., “Man” is a spirit inhabiting a body (vessel). Know you not

that you are the Temple (soma) of the spirit? You can destroy this Temple but you cannot destroy its “life” for it shall rise-up again in three days! This “life” in the temple, the body, is not soul but spirit. Jesus, prior to his death on The Cross said from that Cross, Father, I commend my spirit unto you. Not “my body,” not “my soul,” not “my life,” mind you, but “my spirit”!

Now you would suppose that that would have been the end of it, i.e., the controversy between spirit and soul, the arguments of, or over, which is the immortal essence of Man-Woman, but it wasn't and still isn't, as you have been informed in CPM #29, Addendum #20 and in the I Paul Communications. It's time that the religious theologians come to the Truth that the spirit is distinct from the body and is the body's True-Self and immortal. It is also high time that they come to the proper understanding of the word psyche and its dual meaning, i.e., the life breath (soul) of the soma (body) which expires and the mind, which is not the brain, but the essence of the One Mind that is in Man but whose function is to Unite and become “one mind,” i.e., be of one mind, be one-minded, be not divided in consciousness and conscience! – A “collective,” then. This is what we mean when we say “The Soul is a simple matter of Minds”!

Flesh and blood (the entire body - the breath) cannot enter the Kingdom of God. The mind and the spirit are not flesh and blood. There is a physical body and there is a spiritual body - W-303. There is an Etheric body and there is a Life body - E-303. There is an Astral body and there is a Light body - N-303. There is a planetary body and a Cosmos body - S-303.

Hence the “missing-link” hasn’t been found on this Earth. It is simply not of this Earth. Nowhere, in any of the above, is there to be found a “soul body” per se. The Supreme Spirit is Soul, the very self-existing LIFE, then. The Soul then is Spirit, a Self-Existent Spirit, having no End and no Beginning - Uncreated, then, and being Uncreated remains Eternally uncreated but most Creative!

Now if LIFE, being Uncreated and hence Uncreatable, unchangeable, then, and not capable of being created or recreated, we most certainly must include in ALL of this, ALL that LIFE IS! This, by necessity, would have to include such attributes as Grace, as Soul, as Love, as Truth, as Glory, as Justice, as the Three Omni’s, as The Supreme Spirit Being with Absolute Sovereignty over All Life, its very Oneness, then! The One Mind. And none of these can be created, recreated or changed either. We can Receive them, Discover them, Recognize them and use them for The Good, The

Right and The True as Righteous beings for our own and the well-being of others.

We know full well that LIFE'S Ways are not our ways and that The Spirit moves and acts in mysterious ways simply because the LIFE SPIRIT is a Mystery, as is Predestination! which includes all of the attributes listed above.

We might, just might, mind you, move a bit closer to solving the Great Mystery of LIFE, that Awesome Mystery of The Spirit if we could first solve the Mystery of who Man-Woman truly are, for we are almost as Mysterious as the Spirit and spirits are. It is no secret that the collective Sciences of this Earth cannot Absolutely answer the question of Who or What Man-Woman are, nor can they agree on the question among themselves. Yet, there is one thing they do agree on though, and that is that there is nothing unique about man-woman.

Now we know that if we are to understand Man-Woman then we must understand the Mind because it is The Minds that are unique and the very key to the Secret of Predestination.

God is Spirit and we must worship God in the spirit and in Truth. Can we not also say, then, that LIFE is Spirit and therefore we must worship LIFE from the spirit and from



the Truth? Certainly. And how would this be possible without the Psyches, i.e., the Minds? It simply wouldn't be.

The religionists opt for the translation of The Greek Psyche as soul, following Plato and the neo-platonists. We know it to mean mind, following Jesus and I Paul. Furthermore, Omniscience cannot in any way, shape or manner be interpreted as meaning soul. It refers to the One All-Knowing Mind. The collective Omnis can be interpreted as meaning LIFE, God, SOUL, Grace, Love, Truth, Justice, Glory and so forth as given above.

The religionists cling to the concept of man-woman as being composed of body, soul and spirit with the soul having the potential of being spiritized and becoming immortal. In this context they do not explain exactly what the function of the spirit is, but whatever it is, it is the soul and not the spirit that has the potential of immortality and if the soul "makes it" the body, the flesh and blood then, will join it at the mass resurrection of the dead on a coming Judgment Day. Where the spirit is and what its function is during all this is a vague mystery!

Then, of course, there are those religionists who believe in the concept that man-woman are composed of only two substances, body and soul, with the soul being the seat of immortality - that which enters hell, purgatory or

limbo to await the Resurrection of the dead body and the Judgment!

Never in the Physical-Material Realms of the Universe has any human physical body ever reincarnated and it's impossible for a human body to die, real death, and resurrect or reincarnate as stated. Death is final to the physical being, the remains revert back to their original element components as does all "waste."

The Minds, The Predestined components of the lower and higher selves that have existed in, of and from LIFE, eternally, are a different story entirely. These minds have experienced an "essence of Life" eternally and they have carried everything with them in both the physical body, the soma, and in the spiritual body, the Pneuma. Therefore, the only "natural thing" common to both the physical and the spiritual beings are the minds, the Psyches, then!

Now using Adam, allegorically, we find that Adam was Created as One Unit, i.e., body and mind, or as a Living Being, not, as mis-translated from the Septuagint, as a Living soul. This One was all inclusive, immortal even. Then "the Fall" came and physical death came upon this Earth as a result of it and it Reigned until "the Cross"!

Now when Adam and Eve were exiled from the Garden that they had desecrated through their Disobedience, LIFE

saw only one thing undefiled, untouched, by Adam and Eve in The Garden and LIFE set up his Angels and so forth to protect it. This was the “Tree of Life,” and it was on and from this Tree of Life that mankind was reconciled through Truth, Love and Obedience to LIFE and his immortality restored by the receiving of the spirit, through the One Sacrifice of physical and spiritual Life for the Well-Being of all Human and Spiritual Life on this Earth.

Where does Predestination fit into all of this? What is it that is Predestined? The body itself? The Soul? The Spirit? The Mind?

Again, using the myth of Genesis allegorically, the Garden of Eden was the “Kingdom Come” and the Human Life in it was Immortal up to the disobedience and the institution of and the Reign of Death and Banishment from the Kingdom on Earth. In an extension of all this, Cain, a creation of Adam and Eve, slew Abel and Cain was banished from this world to another world! (Presumably to live out his remaining years.)

Since the physical body is mortal and must expire it can have no place in Predestination nor in any resurrection for flesh and blood cannot enter into the Kingdom of LIFE simply because it is not Immortal. And, if it cannot resurrect it cannot reincarnate! Death, then, of the Physical Human

Body, is Final!

The soul is a “poor soul” indeed as used by religious Christianity. As noted it is a poor and mistaken translation of the Hebrew and an Orphism. It has nothing to do with Predestination at all. LIFE, being the One Soul, is the Goal of Predestination. The spirit, our true-being, is the vehicle of Predestination!

The Soul, you see, is a simple matter of minds. And “the Mind” and its Essences are Eternal as are The Created, Gifted Spirits, so Predestination is certainly no mystery at all.

As we know, death reigned from Adam to Moses. From Moses to the Cross Death and the Law reigned. From The Cross on the spirit and the minds have reigned. O death, where is thy sting? O death, where is thy victory? It no longer has any and this is what Predestination is all about, in the “short-form”!

Predestination is no respecter of persons, races, colors or creeds. It is not Exclusive but Inclusive. So, then, they who are in the flesh cannot please LIFE. But those who are in The spirit can! And you are in The Spirit if it so be that the Spirit of LIFE dwells actively in you. And this activity comes through the Spirit of LIGHT and the activating of the Mind of LIGHT in your Whole Being. So if the LIGHT be in you the

physical body is of no account, for The Spirit is Life because of Righteousness (our Pillar is Righteous). For if the Spirit that raised up the spirit of Jesus from the darkness dwells in you, It that raised up LIGHT also from the darkness shall quicken your bodies also by its Spirit that dwells actively in you. Therefore, brothers and sisters, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh, but to the Spirit, to live after the spirit. For if you live after the flesh you will surely reap the things of the flesh, the Dark Places, but if you live by the spirit you will most surely reap the things of the spirit, The Light Places. For as many that are led by The Active Spirits, they are the sons and daughters of The Spirit. Yea! even The Spirit Itself bearest witness with our spirit that we are the children of LIFE and the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL! And if Children, then heirs; heirs of LIFE and joint heirs with LIGHT to the Kingdom of LIFE. And I Paul know that ALL things work together for good to them that truly Love LIFE, to them who are the Called according to LIFE'S purpose. For whom he did foreknow he also did Predestinate to be conformed to his Image.

Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also calls and whom he calls, them he also justifies, and whom he justifies, them he also glorifies. What shall we then say to these things? If LIFE be for us, who can be against us?

For in All these things we are more than Flesh, more than conquerors, through him that loved us. And those who search the heart of things know what is The Mind of the Spirit and that which is Predestined according to The Will of LIFE, The Well-Being of ALL in ALL.

Therefore, I Paul am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other thing shall be able to separate us from the Love of LIFE which is in the LIGHT, for we have the Mind of LIGHT in our Minds! And it is the Predestined Gift of these minds that make man-woman different and superior to all other Life on this Earth. And mankind here has an unprecedented control over ALL things on, under and around this Earth even though it has, as yet, discovered all the ways and means to utilize such control over ALL Things with but one exception, Death, which mankind can never control for it belongs exclusively to The Mind of Christ! And Man cannot conquer God!

Now let us see how all of the above compares with the theology of Predestination.

Election, foreknowledge, fore-ordination and predestination are words which occur very frequently in the writings and speculations of theologians, and the subjects

they denote must occur in some form or other to everyone who diligently studies the Message and cogitates on “the Ways of Spirit with Mankind(s).” As Spirituals we were all predestined to Change, to be Changed; to Prepare, to Follow; and To Come.

The Message speaks of the Supreme Spirit as foreseeing the events of history and showing, to some extent at least, the end from the beginning. It represents LIFE as determining certain things long before they come to pass. In some cases Spirit has promised what was not to come about for many centuries. At other times the Message represents Spirit as threatening certain evils - as calamities or punishments that are not to be realized for quite some time or never, even. All this clearly implies foreknowledge, and a purpose with Power to contrast events so far and in such a way as to be able to accomplish that which Spirit has promised or threatened. On the other hand, the theology of The Message always addresses men and women as free agents - as choosing, or as able to choose, what they will do; it also represents them as being held responsible by Spirit for the consequences of their acts, and this accords with the belief and consciousness of mankind here. Every one feels that they can choose how they will act, how they can choose the good, the right and the true and avoid the evil, to a large extent. And whether they are able to do in all cases what they

see to be correct, and choose to do, or would choose to do, if they could do it or not, yet feel responsible for their choice, and experience remorse, guilt or shame if that choice was wrong and led to a wrong act. And in this way it comes about that there seems to be a contradiction between a Message of Revelation and a fact of experience, which fact is also in harmony with much of the most explicit and most emphatic teachings of The Message.

A moment's consideration must satisfy us that the subject is, in some respects at least, beyond human comprehension. LIFE is a Spirit of infinite intelligence, and its "thoughts" must, in many respects, "be far above, out of our sight." Spirit has itself warned us of the danger of expecting or attempting to comprehend all of its ways, and its reasons for them. Thus it says in Isaiah 55:8-9 "My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, for as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts." We see an illustration of the principle, enough both to understand it and to conceive of its truth, in the comparison we can make at any time between ourselves and those we have under our care, such as children. With immature and underdeveloped minds, their intelligence is far below our own. We understand many things that are mysterious and entirely incomprehensible to them. We



know the reason for many things that must for them rest entirely upon authority and positive command. We see and know how many things are accomplished that are quite incomprehensible and some altogether impossible to them. But we must remember that while they are as yet far below us in intelligence and power of comprehension, we ourselves are but as children in comparison of that Infinite Mind that ordains and comprehends ALL Things. If we acknowledge LIFE to be infinite in wisdom and power, we must admit The Spirit has plans and ways and means for accomplishing them incomprehensible to us. Hence when speaking of our phase or aspect of them, it must be expected that Spirit will say what is perfectly comprehensible to us when we look at that aspect of the subject only. While, nevertheless, when speaking of the subject from some other point or with reference to some other phase of it, though perfectly intelligible and true in itself, does seem inconsistent with what Spirit said before or on another occasion with reference to the same facts.

What we are thus expressing in our relationships to Spirit, and in our study of its Message and its words, children and others are constantly expressing in our dealings with them. Let us listen to them and study their thoughts and we shall be able, if not to fully understand the mysteries of LIFE'S providence, to reconcile ourselves to the

need of walking after The Spirit, and trusting that Spirit will, in its own time and way, make the mysteries and seeming contradictions entirely plain. At all events, the study will satisfy us if we are reasonable in our demands and expectations, that so long as LIFE is in its Kingdom and we on ours, as Spirit is infinite and we are finite in our powers and intelligence, there must be points and statements in Spirit revelations and commands to us that we cannot comprehend, and that if we would walk in The Way that leads to LIFE and The Kingdom, we must walk in Faith and Hope and wait for a fuller development and more spiritual maturity of our faculties before we can comprehend all the relations and reasons of that rule of life and Way that Spirit has provided us. There are also several important facts that may be of use to us in our meditations and cogitations on this subject. In the first place, mere knowledge of what a person is doing is no interference of the liberty of the person who does it. I am writing now and someone is at hand observing me doing so. I intend to do something later and my observer friend not merely knows this, but the very way in which I intend to do it. But in neither case does its knowledge interfere with my freedom to act or not. But it is said, the future act is not certain. Whereas in The Future the Acts Spirit predicts must be certain, and so the Freedom of the agent or agents that are to cooperate is so far limited.

But by way of obviating this objection (if it be one) two things must be considered. In the first place it would seem that the infinity of LIFE would preclude the element of time which comes in to embarrass the speculation as we entertain it. To illustrate what we mean, consider for a moment that each one of us is finite, we see all things from the point where we are - one thing is on the right and then on the left - another before us and then behind us - one is above and then below. But now suppose that LIFE is infinite and everywhere present. LIFE will see all those things that are around us or appear to be all around us, because we can see them from one point only, from all points at one and the same time. In relation to Spirit there can be no left, no right - nothing is afore another - all things are embraced by LIFE'S omnipresence. So, too, with our thoughts: we are finite - we have one thought now - we had one only moments ago - and another will come along shortly either to join the present one or replace it. Most people can only entertain one thought at a time in their mind. But for the infinite mind this must be otherwise. All Thoughts (for it takes up all thoughts to make up Omniscience) are and must be present in The Mind at all times and all at the same time. (This is vertical time or the seeing of the past, the present and the future as one time.) Whatever is past, present or future to most of us must be present in our thoughts or ideas

at all times and the matter of time and time relations involving foreknowledge, Predestination, predictions, and such like phenomena, must be very different in their relations to LIFE from what they are to our life, and very different from anything we, alone, can conceive or comprehend (we live in horizontal time wherein we do not see the past, the present and the future at the same time or as the same time). Must not their foreknowledge in reference to LIFE be the same as knowledge is in reference to us? We simply ask the question. It does not become us to dogmatize or to assert positively in a matter of this kind. It should be conceded as one of the secret things of LIFE and LIGHT with the exception of what is "Received" and therein becomes ours. It is enough for us to have The Message of I Paul in our hands momentarily. When we put it where it belongs and give it the Action it deserves we shall continue "to receive" and Act accordingly to that to which we were Predestined.

We have been told that our Day is Future. If that isn't Predestination then I Paul know nothing about it. We were all Perfectly Created but we were not Created Perfect. I Paul knows now that when I came-out on this earth to stand amongst other men and women I had foreknowledge, just as I was foreordained, yet it was my task and my choice to find it and utilize it. None of us needs be a Prophet to tell us

that we are here to Love one another in an atmosphere of Unity and Peace wherein we can rise upward towards our perfection. Mankind here has lost sight of that Goal and we all need to labor diligently to see that such is restored to the minds of All in All.

In and for Love, Unity and Peace,

your servant,

I Paul.

## 20 - I Paul Worship No Man

Greetings:

I Paul worship no man and Jesus was a man. Even if I had known Jesus in the flesh, neither I, nor anyone else can ever know him in the flesh again, ever!

My task, as stated, is not to worship Jesus but to Follow him and, even more importantly, I need to emulate him. And I should emulate Jesus because he never had the time to do all he wanted to do with his great discovery of the Kingdom within and the absolute Unity of Man with Supreme Spirit. Jesus himself said to those who would follow him, that they would do greater things than he, himself, had done, and he told the Truth, but man has been slow in taking the challenge, or, if you prefer, the Promise.

We know that the stories of Jesus as recorded in the gospels of the bible are fictional myth. They were manufactured to appear to say that Jesus was really God taking the form of man, to save man. (See Communication #18 - I Paul Series.)

What these church scribes failed to see and to honestly report was Jesus' great discovery, the Divine Consciousness of Man and the Divine Unity of Man with God. They completely missed Jesus' purpose and his teachings for

“coming-out” when he did. The fact that he never called himself the Son of God, but declared himself to be the Son of Man instead, which to the Jews meant he was declaring himself to be the Earthly Messiah, was completely overlooked by the scribes. They, in view of what the Scripture had prophesied, opted for Jesus as the Messiah of the Kingdom of God and therefore the Son of God. The doctrine of the Trinity did not come about until many years later. Because of this make-believe, the gospels missed the real theme of Jesus’ teaching and because of this, no one has actually done greater things than he has done, though a few have come fairly close to doing so and most of these have not been beholders of the Christian religion. In fact, not even Jesus was a Christian or a religionist. He was a Spiritual Genius! He came-out to make himself the King of the Jews and this entailed the overthrowing of the Roman yoke over his Nation and his people, de-throning Herod and the destruction of the Temple in Jerusalem, and establishing the Kingdom of God on Earth with its center in Palestine! And for this he was executed and in the eyes of The Romans and the hierarchy of the Jewish Religion, his death was Justified.

That he failed in this cannot be denied by any stretch of anyone’s imagination, even though the church gave it a very clever and cunning try. The church has been very, very

successful but it's built upon a foundation of sand and sooner or later the Truth is going to destroy it. The Great Commission of Christian Spiritualism, The Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL is to restore The Truth to its Rightful Place in ALL of Christendom. No religion is too old to learn and I might add, that none of them are too old or too young to die either.

Jesus was not a magician nor a performer of miraculous acts. He was first and foremost a teacher and Leader of a revolutionary following. He did demonstrate unusual power, but he explained that this was evidence of the power that comes to any one when they also make the discovery of the great and powerful within.

What Jesus was teaching was that man and the Universe were One, that the key to this Unity was within, the Inner-Man or Spirit-Man and that All men and women could, themselves, make this discovery as he had done and go on and do very unique and remarkable things currently beyond the comprehension of mankind on this Earth, or this divine kingdom of matter and men.

The three basic requisites for bringing forth this inner Power and Wisdom are Obedience, Love, thought.

As Paul later said, have this mind that was in him, and later making the identification by saying, but we have The



Mind of Christ - also, be of one mind, and, be One Minded!  
And then later, identifying man as being made-up of body (soma), mind (psyche), and spirit (pneuma), as a Whole or as One with the Supreme Spirit.

For Jesus, Freedom was also a very necessary prerequisite for all of this to become manifest in the masses, and he knew that it was The Truth that set men free. Hence his revolutionary movement was of the utmost importance to the cause - the Way to "The Way." There is also evidence that the movement was also known as "The Poor" or "The Way of The Poor." The "poor" designating those poor in body, mind and spirit, which was all but Jesus himself, who made himself "poor" for the benefit of All!

If you can Recognize this vital, vibrant, vigorous, dynamic spiritual unity with the Supreme Spirit, if you can grasp that you are really the child of The Supreme Spirit with its Life, its intelligence, its Love and its Truth all within you, in the "True-You," then you, too, can make the same discovery that gave Jesus the eyes to "see" and the "ears" to "hear" and the heart to Love and The Minds to Think and Obey and display the Power and Wisdom of the Mind of Christ!

We were created from the form and structure, the very substance of The LIGHT, and are therefore co-inheritors of

a Kingdom prepared for Prepared People from the very foundation of The Universe and its Earths.

You see, we were All Perfectly Created but we were not Created Perfect -that's our task and our choice which we are Fully Free to make!

This basic Truth - the Divine Consciousness and the Divinity of Man - is the very Heart of Christian Spiritualism and can lead you to the New Worlds and Unity and Peace with all of Mankinds everywhere.

Many of you have gone to fantastic lengths in your searching for the Truth and reality - many millions have searched the world over, even the space that surrounds it, and all in vain and the reason for this is that Man-Woman have never looked exactly and deeply where this Man Jesus told us all to "Look"! "Within"!

Do you know how to look within? If not, I Paul suggest that you not only read The Message but study The Message as if your Life depended on it and you will come to see as we have "seen" that it really does!

The Faith of man today is tied to and tied-up in a church, a temple, an altar, in himself, and/or for the most, in two masters - God and Satan. Neither you nor I nor anyone else can serve two masters. You cannot believe in

Two Masters and find The Kingdom of God! You cannot serve both God and Satan - but most try or do. You cannot serve Jesus and God either. You cannot even serve both God and Christ!! There is only ONE God, LIFE, then and this is where your Worship, your glorying and your Recognition needs to be. Sure, we get to God through Christ but Christ must not be the center of our Worship, that belongs exclusively to The Supreme Spirit, the Uncreated and the Invisible One!

It has been written that without Jesus, Christianity, the religious kind, not the Spiritual kind, would be lost - well they are, in Truth, lost - all religions are lost simply because they have never found the Way to "the Way"! Listen - even the Christian church did not name Jesus as its Founder - they named Peter and Paul as Co-Founders, and them only when they were dead to the flesh!

You see, without the Way to "the Way" the Christian church is going to deteriorate and fall away. Its ruins will be all that is left, standing as a monument to a man it never understood and to his teaching that was never practiced. These ruins will stand as testimony to the spiritual ignorance of Man on this Earth. Paul himself spoke of this in the very language of his day. While he was awaiting the arrival of Silas and Timothy to meet him in Athens, his spirit

was stirred by the idolatry of the city. While waiting he was invited by a group of philosophers to address them and explain this new doctrine he was espousing in the synagogues and so he went to The Areopagus on Mars Hill and spoke to them and others saying: “I perceive that in all things you are too superstitious. For as I passed by on my way here I spied your devotions and I saw an altar with the inscription chiseled therein to the Unknown God. Whom, therefore, you ignorantly worship, him it is I declare unto you! The One God that made this earth and all the things herein, seeing that he is the Lord of the heavens and the earths, and dwells not in temples made with hands. Neither is worshipped with men’s hands as though he needed anything, seeing he gives to all life its breath and all other things - and has made of one blood all the nations of men for them to dwell all over the face of the earths, and has determined the times before appointed and the very boundaries of their habitation; that they should seek him, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, for he be not far from every one of us - for in him we live and move and have our being; as certain as your own poets have said, for we are also his offspring. Forasmuch then as we are the children of God we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man’s folly. . .” So much for churches, temples, cathedrals and the

like! Every time I read that I wonder if the religionists have ever read it or understood it! Apparently not for they continue to build castles in the sand dedicated to a God they do not know nor understand. And this is sad.

Man is living in an age or cycle of spiritual ignorance today. The culprit is religion. When Jesus said, "Come, Follow Me," he was and still is referring to our acceptance of ALL the levels of Consciousness and the Conscience that he reached and was adept in. And, since consciousness flows in cycles and streams, we can follow the streams of his radiant physical consciousness as well as his Cosmic Consciousness. As the great discoverer of The Minds and The Divinity of Man, Jesus was the Way shower in the great expanse of the within.

After a vigorous and careful study of Jesus, I Paul have completely rejected any worship of Jesus historically, religiously or spiritually. We are equals in our being. When he becomes the object of worship, he ceases to be The Way shower for our own self-realization and self-enfoldment.

Jesus, having made his discovery came-out to lift the veil of separation between Man and Spirit. He cut a hole in this veil great enough for all of us to view the great dimensions of the Spiritual Universe. When he said, "Come, Follow Me" he was inviting us all to come and sit with him

and “see” the infinite Reality of Things Spiritual. See yourself in the Light of Christ as Jesus saw himself in that Light and you, too, may be Christed! Unbelievable? No! You can do it! “IF.”

You see, the hole in the veil is something to look through and not to simply stare at. The Light coming through was something to “see” by, not to look at. Only a few have “looked through and seen.” Of course millions have stared at it and are still staring but they do not see anything, they do not comprehend anything, they simply worship outside it, this place where Jesus “entered-in”!

Today, sadly, almost no one “sees” through this rent in the veil. It is now mostly an object of the church and the altars they have raised outside of it, waiting for Jesus to come back through it. Anyone who believes he will is spiritually ignorant.

Millions upon millions have come and worshipped at this gaping hole, but only a very few have had the courage to pass through it and dared go where Jesus went. It’s still there as is the great discovery of Jesus made two thousand years ago and all you need do is wipe away the cobwebs (prepare) and walk through it (follow) and have an immediate and inexhaustible experience with Spirit and know The Truth and discover your Freedom to become what

you were destined to “Be”!

Now I Paul have been almost two-thirds of the Way and I am confident, but not overly-so, that I will go all the Way! I have learned much and I still have much to learn and I do this by following the Message exactly as given-received, then. I know of no other way. As my Spirit Guide said when in the flesh: “For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away with. When I was a child I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now we see through a glass darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.” We can discern from this that Paul had some insight into Jesus’ great discovery.

The church, caught up in its own importance, lost sight of this discovery, if it actually had any to lose, and concentrated its sight on wealth and power. It was an easy step for the church to rise from the “begotten one” of God to God himself in its worship of Jesus and therefore lose the real Truth of Jesus and his teaching.

The church’s begotten one, in Jesus’ case, the “begotten son” is a religious myth. The true “begotten one” is Spiritual Man-Woman - the Christ Principle - the

Principle of The Divinity of Man - What? Know ye not that ye are Gods! The “only begotten” be it son or daughter is the only begotten of Spirit. That’s all of us and none above the other. Once you discover that within yourself which was begotten only of Spirit, you can come walk with me and together we will attempt to emulate Jesus. Having already made the same discovery as Jesus, I know categorically that there is Life after physical death and that no grave can hold that which comes only from Spirit. Furthermore, I have been there and back on numerous occasions (see “A Journey to the Fifth Pillar,” 7/10/85). These very thrilling excursions into the heretofore unknown to me have verified all that The Message has taught me and proven to me the false conceptions of the Christian religion and its manufactured doctrines such as the virgin birth and the resurrection, the Trinity and the soul. Truly what fools we mortals are. Most have been so poisoned and programmed by untruths that they wouldn’t recognize nor accept The Truth if it was handed to them on a silver platter. The truth is that most so-called seekers of “The Truth” are scared to death of it! These are the truly ignorant ones, both physically and spiritually, who when confronted with the Truth, deny it and flee from it as did the followers of Jesus! Now they worship him and they do not even know why!

If you’re one of those seekers who believes that



someone can walk-up and hand you The Truth and tell you what to do with it, then you are truly the epitome of ALL ignorance. All anyone can do, Jesus included, is to inform you where The Truth actually is and Teach you a little on what is absolutely necessary for you to come by it. What you do with it, once found, depends on how well you have learned from your teacher. The Truth both Creates and Destroys so one must be Prepared to deal with it.

You see, there is really no other way, and to keep searching instead of “beginning” and making the Great Discovery for yourself, you will but continue to search everywhere but the right where - within! And even if you do go looking in the correct place, if you’re not Prepared, you are not going to find what you are searching for! If you’re in “self,” selfish and unloving, unwilling to care and share and without self-discipline, among other, many other prerequisites, you will go on seeking-in-vain.

I can inform you of all I Paul knows until I am blue in the face but it is all to no avail unless you are ready to do what I have done and dare to go where I have gone, come what may! The only difference between you and me is that although you are a spirit inhabiting a body I Am that Spirit - for I Paul have made that great discovery that Jesus made and taught and I listened too and then Obeyed! And that’s

the very foundation of Jesus' teaching, Obedience. Come, Follow Me means Love - Think - OBEY! Many are the Called but few are there that are chosen, simply because they cannot OBEY, they cannot follow the directions, the teachings, the principles, the Laws exactly as given, even though they can love and think to various degrees! If you are the master of your own will instead of your "needs" only, then you are none of Christ's!

Christ, the LIGHT, said to the blinded Saul, "You must become the master of the 'unspoken word' and cease as the slave to the 'spoken word'," and all of you need to choose which to follow also. And this very Communication is The "Unspoken" word of the Spirit of The Message.

Contrary to the myth of the gospels written by the church, Jesus did not "come-out" to heal the physically sick, he allowed them to heal themselves. He "came-out" for the spiritually sick in order to show them The Way to everlasting "health"! That's the real purpose of This Message, the Book of Life and the Book of The Two Ways. He "came-out" to activate your spirit and to Fully Activate the Mind in you that was in himself. It remained dormant in most then as it does today also. Yet, you can do it if you will but follow the Way to "the Way." I've personally seen many who have tried, and some of them have come close, and yet

remain so far away, that if I would let it, it would make me ill. It only drives me on to try harder and harder to display to them The Way.

If I Paul had to choose one piece of advice to pass on to you that I have received from my Spirit Guide it would have to be this - If you cannot be True to that which is in you, me, and everybody else, then you will simply live out the rest of your life trying to be, but never Being, what you were created to Be! And that "True to" is thoroughly, extensively and clearly outlined in The Message of I Paul. Find it, become addicted and dedicated to it and you will Come to be what it is you are supposed To Be! A spirit. Surely then, The Way In is the Way Out and The Way Out is The Way In!

The logical conclusion to all of this is that you cannot do it all in a day, or in a year, or, as for most, in this lifetime for they lack the Courage and the Perseverance to do so. For those who will exert the effort called for, it is very important that they be headed in the correct direction - Upwards - and not, as most, rushing forward blindly. It is imperative then that they know certain Truths as they start out on the Way to "the Way" hence our reason for introducing you to The Message of I Paul and such Truths as those that follow herein.

Christ is not a person. Jesus was not Christ. Christ was

the first Created Spirit. Jesus was created a man. Christ dwells in every man-woman. Today, Jesus dwells in Christ. It is not I who lives but the Christ in me who lives and acts for me - this is the Way and the Ideal and the possibility for every human being who makes the great discovery within!

As we have been informed Christ was Created as the Image of God with Form and Structure, The LIGHT, then; and the LIGHT is the Consciousness of God, The LIFE, then, Individualized. It is in and of and by This Spirit Image of LIFE that we have our Life and not by the biblical myth of an Adam and an Eve.

There is but One Soul, God, LIFE then.

There is but One LIFE. Yet a multiplicity of Life.

There is but One Mind, Yet a multiplicity of minds.

There is but One Spirit. Yet a multiplicity of spirits.

There is but One Image of God. Yet a multiplicity of that Image.

We are then the very essences of the One Mind, the One Love, the One Truth, the One Spirit and also of the One Image, the LIGHT.

LIFE is God, and Lord, and Holy Spirit, and Soul, and Mind, and Grace which is ALL in ALL.

Christ is LIGHT and The Individualized Illumination and Enlightenment of that ALL in ALL.

Jesus was a man, and I am Me, and you are You, albeit Jesus was the better man and Now, the better Spirit, which is exactly what I, You, Need strive to Become! Are you following me? Can you “See”?

If Jesus of Nazareth, the Son of Man and the Teacher of Teachers of the Righteous, was still here on this Earth in the flesh, and someone, anyone even, said to him, “Jesus, I have faith in you” he would cringe and immediately cite them as a hypocrite as he did to so many in his day.

Faith today means little or nothing - moves little or No-Thing - but to Jesus Faith was something very special. It was through Faith, Obedience to the Mind of Christ, and the Full Measure of it, that he had discovered his own unity with The Infinite, and with this Mind of Christ he found that he could open many doors that, theretofore, had been closed to him, wherein he found renewed Creativity, an unending flow of powerful ideas and a perception beyond the Powers of ALL men and women then, as well as Now. He also discovered that he lived in a Universe of Laws and Ordinances that applied to him and to ALL who would but Come and Follow him and discover what he had discovered, that he was a spirit inhabiting a vessel with form and

structure, and endowed with the Mind of Christ, and had the ability and Power to be transformed and transcend, and to “see” and “hear” exactly who and what he was, and where and when his destiny would lead him, for Now he knew that he was not only Fully Human but more importantly he knew he was also Fully Spiritual and in, on, of and for The Way to “the Way”! He not only gave Recognition, but he had Received “Recognition” and he was, Now, through his receiving, “Recognition!” in the Flesh! He knew that what was True of Christ was True of him and potentially True of ALL men and women who would become transfigured. This, then, is why he said we would do greater things than he had done! “IF,” we would but seek and find that which he had found and follow his teaching - his way to “The Way”! (See “The Truth of The Cross.”) “Father,” he said, “I commend my spirit unto you.” Not - my soul! “It’s done,” he said, and now we have the same spirit in us that was in Jesus as a result of his One Great Discovery - the Divine Unity of Man-Woman!

Therefore, I Paul commend the Message unto you.

The Message “works for” you when you “work with” it and you will not be conformed of this world but will be transformed by the Renewing of your “Minds”!

The bible is the word of man. The Message is The Word

of Spirit. The word of man dies with man. The Word of Spirit lives eternally! Prepare-Follow-Come!

Love, Unity and Peace to All,

your servant,

I Paul.

## **21 - The Teacher of Teachers Teaches and Shows the Way to “The Way”**

Greetings:

To all my sisters and brothers of The Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL and to The Message of I Paul, the Book of Life and the Book of The Two Ways, the Way in and The Way Out. To all a holy and spiritual kiss of the Love that Loves above ALL Love. May the Grace and Truth be with you always and the dark shadow never cross your way on The Way to “the Way” with false hope and blind faith. The Cross of spirits knows no such shadow for it is the Light of The LIGHTS, even Melchisedec, even Jesus now, and perhaps You and I in the day of our Future. Peace! And greetings and peace to myself also in my struggle to be last among you yet first in service to you All.

The Teacher of Teachers did not come to found a religion. He was anti-religion and intended to destroy the Temple. He manufactured no creeds, no rituals, no rites, no sacraments, no religious theology, established no moral code other than “Righteousness” in all things, via his three commands of the Way, Obey, Love, Think!

His primary concern was The Kingdom of God, then Justice and the Divinity of man-woman. He never used the



word Spirit (pneuma-Ruach) for Satan personally. It would not be unfair to say then that the Alpha and the Omega of his Teaching was the Divinity of man-woman which he had alone discovered and which broke the hold of death over him. Because of his great discovery he was most Justified in declaring himself the Son of Man, the One True Earthly Messiah and he was intent on sitting on the throne of his nation and its peoples. He was no ordinary man then, even though he was born of a woman under the law, i.e., in the natural manner. Yet he made the point of calling attention to the true Father of men-women when he said, "Is it not written 'I have said, Ye are Gods; and all of you are children of the most High'." (Exodus 22:9; Psalms 82:6.)

The divinity of man-woman is, then, the Kingdom of LIFE, Individualized. And in the Kingdom Justice reigns over, and in, all in ALL.

Therefore the Kingdom of LIFE is The Way of Life and the Justice of LIFE is a truth and a way of Life and the Divinity of LIFE is the divinity of the Life of All men-women everywhere and eternal in its compounded-ness, which, then, is "The Way" in all its glory, wisdom and power, in and of, Love and Truth.

The Way in then is the ALL in all and The Way out then is the all in ALL.

We can see enough from the gospels interpolated example on how to pray given by Jesus to his disciples, "... may thy kingdom come, on earth, as it is in heaven . . .," to know that Jesus had some knowledge and insight into the Book of The Two Ways and the Mind that sustains them, the Mind in which they actually have their very existence. The Message tells us not to study man but rather study Mind and this can only be done from Jesus' method of self-reverence, introspection, self-discipline, self-contemplation, spiritual cogitation and love of and in The Spirit and its Universal Family.

The "all" in The Way in and The Way out above is the same as in "you carry everything with you" or You take it all with you, or you carry everything, Your All, then, with You! It's still a simple matter of minds.

This matter of Minds is all that really matters. The higher mind or spirit mind is a Free Mind in Love, Truth and Obedience to "the MIND" and its tasks are enlightenment and illumination for Unity with the lower mind. This lower mind or physical mind is not a Free Mind so its task is to become Free and acquire a state of ease, i.e., to Think, Discover, Remember, Imagine, Love, Obey, Unite, Recognize and Abide in Peace with Creative Truth in the Fullness of the Light of both the physical and the spiritual

kingdoms. You see it is in the very best interest of the Minds to unite Now rather than in the future when the darkness Comes! Self-discipline Now avoids Discipline in the Future, wherein one becomes the victim of their own punishment - the Justice of LIFE.

Self-discipline is the art of maintaining order during change and the progression upward of Change within that order aimed at the Well-Being of one and All.

The Message begins with self-discipline as does Life, and I am sure it will end on that basis as does Life here.

Righteous acts are products of self-discipline, which enhances individual creativity through the suppression of “self” only. Eliminating “self” allows you a Freedom of Action wherein you may, if you so choose, obtain not only your own Well-Being but that of all others near to you.

Therefore the Mind of Christ commands your complete and uninterrupted attention and demands that you be Righteous in all your words, acts and deeds. Righteous acts then, demand Self-Discipline for Righteous Acts are individualized Creativity within The Ordinance of Order.

You should know, “see” even, that the Seven Laws and the Thirty-One Ordinances are not merely Do’s or Don’ts or you musts. They exist for your benefit, your Well-Being and

The Well-Being of All in ALL. What you need to do is to set in your mind a vision (as did Jesus), the very vision you wish to attain to, and then strive to attain it within the Seven Laws and the Thirty-One Ordinances (as did Jesus), or, as guided by them, make the necessary changes called for in your vision along The Way and go on to a higher one, as did Jesus. You see, Jesus not only received visions, he created them, and he did so through Need! His, yours and mine! And this is the Mind of Christ in Action.

We know this Jesus was a natural but exceptional human being. That he was extraordinary, even phenomenal, is not stretching the Truth because he was a Spiritualist and beyond any question a bona fide Spiritual genius. We can count our blessings for this man Jesus who made the Great Discovery and lived out the remainder of his life here expressing the LIFE in him while it expressed itself through him. This, then, was his greatness. He not only lived the Way but he was the first in many millennia to be “The Way”! This is what he meant when he said “When you see me you see the Father,” or when he said, “I and the Father are one” – one, not two or three! Paul touched on this when he wrote “. . . our hope, God in us . . .” or his Temple of God teaching and his great query of “What! Know ye not that ye are Gods?”

We know now that what Jesus “came-out” for originally did not occur and we can all be forever grateful that he changed his mind and “went-out” for the non-violent revolution. And even though his method changed from one of violence to “sacrifice” his purpose was still valid for he came-out for the poor, the downtrodden, the oppressed, the enslaved and the “sinners” his term for Losers! Losers, to Jesus, were those who followed and enforced their own self-wills instead of obeying the Will of God.

Jesus lost “his day” but he won the eternal Future for one and All.

We do not worship Jesus for this nor do we celebrate mythical, spiritually ignorant pagan holidays designed for such worship. Jesus doesn’t want your thanks either - he simply wants you to Obey The Will of his Father and ours, LIFE. After all, that is what he died for!

It has been written that God killed Jesus. The truth is that God gave Jesus victory over death and eternal Life. It has also been written that God is Dead. Listen! Both God and Jesus are doing very nicely, thank you. I Paul sincerely wish I could say the same for the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL but we cannot. For who can deny that on this Earth of ours today the losers still far outnumber the

winners and for the very same reason as it was in Jesus' day and age - the utter disregard for the Will of God, LIFE then. And the majority of all losers are of the very same group that they were in Jesus' day, the professing religionists.

The problems are many but oftentimes in the study of metaphysics most tend to shy away from the concept of a personal God. We label God, LIFE then, as Life Principle, Mind, Substance and so on. Only a few of us speak of God as me. Even when we refer to God as Mind, it is mind somewhere. We are forever praying to a God somewhere, Up there or Out there.

Now the Supreme Spirit is not a person, yet it is personal. There is nothing impersonal about God-Mind in me. It is my mind at the point of God-Mind, but it is my mind. I am sustained by the Supreme Spirit, The Life Principle in me, that that Spirit, that Principle is expressing as me. It is my life. It is me. This is the Great Unity Jesus taught - "I and the Father are one." The Father in me is me on a higher plane of existence! This was Jesus' whole concept of the relationship between God-Man and Man-God. He taught that God is Spirit and those who worship him must worship in spirit and Truth. Worship, for Jesus, was not a religious act, rite or ritual. For him worship was Obedience to the Will of God.

Jesus taught that silence of the heart and ignorance of the mind was not “The Way.” He came-out a religionist and he went-out a Spiritualist. He came-out with violent revolution on his mind and he went-out with Unity and Peace in his mind.

Jesus’ whole teaching then centered around the Kingdom, the divinity of man-woman, the Justice of God, the Will of God, Love and Truth. Within these six we find the real Jesus and the Whole of all he said, practiced and taught. And within any one of the six we can also locate the Whole - the ALL in ALL and Eternal Life as the Life you were truly predestined to live, to Be. It is, you see, as simple as that and you cannot make it any simpler, try as you may!

You see, Jesus uncovered a great truth. He discovered that God was not “up-there” or “out-there” somewhere but in him and, if in him, then in All. He discovered that he was of a divine nature and of a divine consciousness and so was everyone else, and since this was true it immediately changed his well-laid plans for a bloody, violent revolution to overthrow Rome and Herod, destroy the Temple and sit on The Throne of Israel as King and Law Maker.

Something happened to Jesus on his way to The Throne of Palestine - The Cross! And the cause of this was threefold - a sort of trinity - Jesus’ compliance to The Mind of Christ,

the betrayal of Jesus' revolutionary plans by a group of his followers (zealots) and the Jewish hierarchy, and of course, the Roman government that arrested, tried and executed Jesus for sedition.

Jesus, because of his discovery, changed from the Warrior Messiah to the Suffering Servant for the Well-Being of All. When he and John the Baptist "came-out" to seize the throne and establish The Kingdom of God on Earth they knew they were placing their lives in jeopardy, but neither had any idea or vision at that time how it would all work out. The gospels of the New Testament do not tell the Truth about Jesus and his true mission from the beginning. The gospel writers, having no witnesses to call upon, started from the end of the mission and constructed a myth starting at "a beginning." The church today knows The Truth but what are they to do? It's too late for them Now and getting later all the time, not just for them, but the billions they have led astray of "The Way." From pulpits all over the earth they still proclaim "Jesus is God" based on a creed manufactured in 325 A.D. at Nicea, 292 years after the death of this Jesus.

The Council of Nicea was convened by Constantine in 325 A.D. to solidify the factions of the Christian religion for his own political well-being. The council was called for the



purpose of manufacturing a concept of God that would be acceptable to all factions - Christians, Pagans, Gnostics and so forth. It was like negotiating a contract with only one side being present. Yet in spite of its one-sided-ness history tells us that it was a bitter and brawling struggle during which one Arius was speaking and Nicholas of Myra assaulted him. After some very lengthy and heated debate a vote was taken and by a very narrow margin, a concept was approved that came to be known as the Doctrine of The Holy Trinity.

So there you have it, a group of men in a very heated debate determined for all time what the nature of God is! Now all of a sudden God became three persons. The truth is that no one has really understood it and since its conception, it has been the cause of endless arguments, schisms and battles. In all of history only Constantine truly benefitted from this outrageous lie and his was political in nature.

The early church Fathers, knowing now that the "second-coming" was not imminent, wanted everything rigidly organized and more spectacular than any other religion of their days. Power, Wealth, Pomp and Pageantry were their goals and they succeeded like no one ever had before. With each argument, each dissension, each schism, more and more laws and evil acts were enacted and

perpetrated by the church, all in the name of this three-person God. The rest is history!

This church still continues to teach the Old Testament concept of a God “up-there” somewhere, a God of vengeance and wrath and a doer of evil. If that’s the True God then he ought to be feared, but Jesus taught us about a different God, a God of Love and Forgiveness, a God of Unity and Peace, a God of Truth and Understanding. Let us compare the church’s teaching of God with what The Teacher of Teachers taught.

In Jonah 3:9-10 we find “Who can tell if God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger that we perish not. And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way and God repented of the evil, that he had said he would do unto them, and he did it not.” Here we have the classical biblical account of its God - a God of vengeance, destruction and evil. A God who Repents! Is rebuked by a mere mortal! Wiser than he! Moses also made God see his error! Jonah then throws back in God’s face his gift of life - as did Job and Elijah!

Then in Numbers we find this: “And while the children of Israel were in the wilderness, they found a man that gathered sticks upon the Sabbath Day. And when they found him gathering sticks brought him unto Moses and Aaron,

and unto all the congregation. And they put him inward, because it was not declared what should be done unto him. And the Lord said to Moses, the man shall surely be put to death: All the congregation shall stone him with stones without the camp. And all the congregation brought him without the camp, and stoned him with stones, and he died, as The Lord commanded.” (Chapter 15:32-36.)

Now compare this with an event some sixteen hundred years later.

“And it came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath day; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the Sabbath day that which is not lawful? And he said unto them, Have you never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungered, he, and they that were with him? . . . the sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath.” (Mark, Chapter 2, verses 23, 24, 25; verse 26 is an interpolation.)

In the Old Testament one doesn't need to ask “Where does Good and Evil come from?” The answer is given all through it and it is quite obviously God! According to the tales of the Old Testament, God murdered millions and caused tremendous suffering to fall upon untold numbers of innocent people in answer to the prayers of his “chosen

people.”

Listen to David, “the man after God’s heart” as he prays for his enemies: “Let his children be fatherless, and his wife a widow. Let his children be vagabonds, and beg: And let them seek their bread out of their desolate places. Let the extortioner catch all that he hath, and let strangers make spoil of his labor. Let there be none to extend kindness to him. Neither let there be any to extend kindness to his fatherless children.”

According to the bible these are the kind of prayers that God readily answered in compliance!

Jesus, on the other hand, said (after his great discovery), “Ye have heard that it hath been said, thou shalt love thy neighbor, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that despitefully use you, and persecute you.” It’s plain that Jesus was none of David’s. David followed the mind and destiny of Adam. Jesus followed the Mind of Christ and the destiny of Spirit.

Clearly the God Jesus loved and taught about is The One True God. The God of the Old Testament is clearly a sick God and a product of the sick minds of men. The Christian religions’ God is clearly a false God created by cunningly clever and egotistical priests.

Jesus “came-out” following the God of the Old Testament in his pursuit of an earthly throne, until his “discovery” completely transformed and transfigured him and even though he carried on his pursuit, his quest for a throne, it was an entirely different throne and in a newly discovered direction from the earlier one!

This Teacher of Teachers taught the True-Self of you and me - the spiritual man-woman as the individualization of God. You are the Presence of God where you are at. Thus it is true of you as it was of Jesus “I and The Father are one.” You are an individualized part, but the whole is always in the part, thus God is in you and in me. This is the “God Is - I Am” principle of the earlier Message. Furthermore, Now even I Paul can teach the real you and me - the Christ - the spiritual man-woman in us - our hope of being Christed!

If people would approach and study their bibles with a bit more Common Sense they would quickly find the discrepancies and contradictions therein. For example, when God created the Garden he planted, or placed in it, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. So where, according to the Scripture, did Good and Evil come from? You have to be deaf, dumb and blind not to “see” this.

And if God is Omniscient then God knew in advance that he would be disobeyed and man would become Evil - as evil

as the image he was created in? This doesn't seem right but it's exactly what the bible implies. But the "biblical" God was not "all-knowing!" for when Adam and Eve hid themselves from his sight he had to ask where they were, and later he had to ask Cain where Abel was! Is this what Omniscience means? But Jesus' knowledge of God was entirely different and he cut right through all this biblical legend and myth and taught that only one was Good and all-knowing - Don't call me Good, he said, only God is Good and he also said God already knew what you were going to pray for before you did.

Furthermore, Jesus never called Satan a Spirit - he called men evil and men Satan! To Peter, the one whom he supposedly gave the keys to the kingdom to and who reportedly was the rock upon which he would build his "church," he said, "Get thee behind me Satan, you do not the Way of God but the ways of men!" So where does the Christian religion get its concept of Satan from? Paul? If so, then they haven't read Paul very diligently for Paul put to rest where evil came from in his letter to the Romans, Chapter One, verse 30 and Chapter Two, verses 8 and 9.

Satan as a Spirit is an illusion - man's excuse for his own evil ways and the religions' of this earth Second Power or their two Gods concept wherein you either go to heaven

with one or to hell with the other. Anyone with any common sense at all ought to understand that you cannot serve two masters - you're either Righteous or you're unrighteous, Period!

Jesus' discovery completely transformed his mind and his way of Life so that he became the most tactile person on the face of this earth both physically and spiritually and it caused him to lay down the sword of violence at once! In fact, it was so swift, so abrupt, that his transformation completely dumfounded and disturbed all of his followers, so much so, that they not only deserted him they betrayed him. So rapid was his change that he went immediately from a lifetime of mere carnal and religious thought up to Creative and spiritual Consciousness. He no longer saw through a glass darkly for now everything was clear to him. He no longer sought nor followed purely religious signs or the strict ritualism and faith of his forebearers. He put aside forever his childhood and his wild, carnal-religious imaginings that had him rushing forward blindly into chaotic darkness and violence as had all his forebearers, both in the past and the present.

Having discovered his divine unity and consciousness and utilizing his new-found Creative Thought and Creative Imagination he changed his call of Come, follow me to one

of Come Follow After Me! When both questioned and challenged on this call, he said, “You cannot come with me now, for I go to the Father to prepare a place for Prepared people, but a place in the Kingdom is not mine to give, yet it shall be given to them who remain and do even greater things than I have done.”

This Teacher of Teacher’s whole concept of prayer even changed as he changed and it shocked the religious establishment down to the very soles of their feet.

You see, prayer is usually directed at God. Therefore the typical prayer begs and pleads, is clothed in pious language which is usually insincere, is very carefully worded and full of vain and useless repetitions. Even Jesus once prayed like that. But being transformed from religion to true spiritualism he said, “Your Father knoweth what things you have need of, even before you pray it.” For Jesus then, prayer was not for God but for him, for Recognition; and he prayed not to change something in God’s Mind but in his own mind – “If it be possible let this cup pass from me, but your will, not mine, be done.” Whether Jesus ever intoned this prayer or not, it is typical of Jesus’ thoughts. His manner of teaching others about praying was unlike anything ever heard before and it quite obviously upset the Pharisees and Scribes to no end.



“And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men . . . but then, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut the door, pray to the Father which is in secret . . .” In other words prayer is a personal, private, silent, within, one on one, spiritual conversation between you and the Father and not something you do in public or in a church!

I Paul speak now as a man and I say that in order for this Earth to have Unity and Peace we must have but One God, “LIFE,” and we must have divine principle which knows no change, which does not send evil or poverty or sickness or perplexity or wars or hate or anger or fear or anything whatsoever that is contrary to the Well-Being of ALL. And we, the ALL, need to recognize This One as Spirit and we must obey This One in spirit, in love and in truth.

Jesus first discovered, then received, discerned and taught the Will of Spirit according to Divine Principle and not in line with the religious concept of God. Jesus’ God was the Good Father who caused the sun to shine on both the Righteous and the unrighteous and Jesus, unlike his contemporaries, no longer believed that God would or could favor one of his children above another or cause victory to

fall upon one army over against the contending army.

The thing that made Jesus' new, radical concept of God so unique is that his new teaching is set against the backdrop of the Old Testament deity who wiped out whole cities, who was jealous, angry, vengeful, who both loved and hated, created and destroyed and both blessed and cursed! His unique concept of God was his awareness of oneness, of man's unique Unity with God. Paul touched on this when he wrote, "God in whom we live and move and have our being." Jesus taught us that God's Will for us is perfect life, perfect wisdom and Perfect Love in an environment of Perfect Freedom. No religion and no "church" teaches that today, nor can they, for they do not understand this Jesus at all. They do not understand what Jesus meant when he said "Be ye perfect as your Father in heaven is Perfect." But we, who have the Mind of Christ, "know!" and those who implement this knowing into The Action called for will know this Perfection in all its Glory, Justice, Power, Wisdom, Love and Truth.

The religionists of Jesus' day clearly thought he was an egotistical fanatic and a bit mad and so did his blood relatives.

One of the great "mysteries" about this Jesus is: if the story of Mary is correct, why did her "son" treat her so

abrupt and so cold? Some theologians claim that his treatment of his mother stemmed from the fact that Jesus practiced celibacy and therefore had very little use for most women being preoccupied with his “Father” obsession. Not even the gospels will bear this out. Furthermore, it’s ironic that these theologians should claim celibacy for Jesus, a man, and not for the holy ghost, a spirit, who reportedly in Luke and Matthew, “came upon Mary”! Of course neither Mark or John know anything about a virgin birth or contrived genealogies and Paul insists that Jesus was born of a woman in the natural way and warned Titus to avoid foolish genealogies!

When Jesus’ mother approached him at the wedding feast in Cana to ask of him a favor, he said to her, “Woman, what have I to do with thee?” Now you can twist those eight words any which way you will but they do not add up to a “Son of God” talking to his “virgin” mother.

Then we have this “virgin mother” showing up at a place where Jesus was teaching his followers with her other sons and daughters, Jesus’ brothers and sisters, wanting to take Jesus home with her because she thought he was mentally unbalanced, and when they asked to see Jesus he replied to the request thusly: “Who is my mother and who are my brethren?,” and he stretched forth his hand toward

his audience and said, "Behold, my mother and my brethren!" On another occasion he said only those who did the Will of his Father were his mother and brethren, clearly indicating that his mother, brothers and sisters did not! Even from the Cross he called his mother "Woman" and designated someone else as "her" son.

Nowhere in the gospels does Jesus have a kind word for his mother, in fact he ignores her, rejects her and rebukes her and these gospels clearly imply that Jesus' mother had no faith in him nor his goals and there simply doesn't appear to be any case for this Mary whom so many hail except the one the church was forced to make when they made a human being God and God a human being - all of which is a bold faced lie!

We must also mention another possible explanation for Jesus' sayings that involved his mother, brothers and sisters. When Jesus stretched forth his hand and said "Behold, my mother and my brethren," he could very well have been expressing our Unity with God and the Truth that all of mankind shared in this Cosmic Unity as one huge Family! Of course, if he added on the statement of "these who do the Will of my Father" then he cut that family down in size considerably.

Then we run into Jesus' saying that he came-out to cast

fire upon the earth and would that it were already kindled. “Suppose ye” he asked, “that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you nay; but rather division.” This then was one edge of the terrible sword he cast upon the lives of his people, “the Revolutionary sword of violence and bloodletting,” wherein Jesus was intent on seizing the throne of Herod and throwing off the Roman Yoke over his nation. There can be no doubt whatsoever that the fire Jesus is speaking about is his offer to the people of his Nation of either a “new heaven” and a “new earth” or the anger and wrath of God for remaining in bondage!

That he “came-out” with the sword of separation and division of the winners from the losers originally, and that he died with the sword of Love, Unity and Peace in his hand for the same purpose, cannot be disputed by anyone in view of the evidence contained in the gospels themselves! It’s a simple matter of discernment – of “weeding out” the churches tares from the grain – the Truth!

In spite of the gospel story of baptism wherein Jesus is baptized by John and a spirit like a dove descends upon his shoulder and the heavens open and God declares Jesus to be his son, this Jesus himself said, “But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished”? The question here is not one of what the

religions' theologians say he meant, but one of what did Jesus himself actually mean by the statement. Need I Paul tell you? He needed, at that moment, to be Crowned King of Israel in order to be "straitened"! He said immediately after the baptism of baptisms: "Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division!" You simply do not take a throne, a kingdom that doesn't belong to you by peaceful means! There needs to be division and that division must reach into the very roots of the nation, the kingdom, its people.

He said: "For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two and two against three." The question here is, again, what did Jesus mean by this "house" divided? Again, need I Paul tell you? The house divided was Palestine and it was Jesus and John the Baptist against Herod, Rome and the Temple, the religion then of his people - the three enslavers, then! But Jesus meant for that division to go even further, deeper, for he said, "the father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law."

Continuing, he said, "When ye see a cloud rise out of

the west, strait way ye say, there cometh a shower; and so it is. And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, there will be heat; and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time?”

Once again we need to ask what Jesus meant by “ye do not discern this time”? It must have been of some great significance for clearly Jesus was upset enough to call his own disciples, his followers, his audience then, hypocrites! It must be that “this time” was a “time” of trials and tribulations for the Jewish people and their nation; the very sort of “times” that traditionally headed the coming of the Messiah, a saviour, as the prophets had prophesied, to make things aright, once again, for the chosen people of God. He reminded the people of the arrest of John, his cousin, whom the people had accepted as a Prophet, the very reincarnation of Elijah in fact, and of his being cast into prison, warning them that it could happen to them also in “this time” for he said, “Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hail thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite. Suppose ye that those

Galileans were sinners above all Galileans, because they suffered such things? But I tell you Nay: and except ye change, you shall all also fall as those, even, upon which the tower fell thinking that they were in The Way.”

Jesus at this time was descending unto “the City,” Jerusalem, from the Mount of Olives and he was telling about some of his followers who attempted to force Jesus’ hand and bring about the revolt to overthrow Herod. The author of the narrative clearly tells us that the whole multitude of disciples going before him began to rejoice and praise God saying, “Blessed be The King that cometh in the name of the Lord, peace in heaven and glory in the highest.”

Obviously, Jesus was The King that cometh. But again the question – how was he to be crowned King? Herod was the king, the Roman puppet, ethnarch actually, and he did nothing not approved by Pilate, the real ruler appointed by Rome.

The author tells us that some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto Jesus “Master” rebuke thy disciples! Again a question – does this make sense, is it honestly being reported? Who were these Pharisees? Simply put they were disciples of Jesus! But they were more, for they were his religious spies within the movement who kept him informed on what was going on in both the House of



Herod and within the Sanhedrin at Jerusalem. These were the same “friendly” Pharisees that warned him his life was in danger and to keep on the move to avoid falling into Herod’s hands, as had his cousin John!

And if “spies” then members of his “inner-circle” and therefore most likely to know what Jesus was Thinking and the way he personally discerned the signs of “this time”!

It is obvious that the vast majority of his disciples believed they were entering into the city to seize power and install Jesus as king, otherwise why would it be reported that they said “Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of The Lord”? Furthermore, Jesus gave a rather strange reply to his spies, the Pharisees, that asked that he do something to still them, rebuke them from their seditious cries, when it is reported he said, “I tell you that if these should hold their Peace, the stones would immediately cry out!” Again a question. What were these “stones” that would cry out? Coming close, near, he beheld “the City,” and wept over it, saying, “If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy Peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side. And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy

children within thee, and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another because thou knowest not the time of thy visitation!”

And when entering the city the narrative says he went strait way to the Temple and began to cast out them that sold therein and them that bought, saying, “It is written, My House is the house of Prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves!”

Clearly Jesus was warning and foretelling the destruction of “the City,” Jerusalem, its people and its Temple all because there was no freedom, both physically and spiritually. Furthermore, he had changed his mind about a violent overthrow of the kingdom and had opted, from “the signs,” to take the route of the “atoning servant,” the sacrificial lamb of the people as the suffering one who, through his sacrifice, would bring the Kingdom of God back to his people without force or violence. Jesus had finally come to the realization that the Kingdom of God could not be brought down by force or acts of men!

Apparently, his disciples were caught unaware of his decision for they fled from him, rejecting his choice and even denied him, for the sake of their own lives. No one man, person, betrayed him, it was a combination of some, such as the eighteen who died at the tower of Siloam and other

fellow Galileans, who, being zealots, “jumped the gun” in a possible attempt to force Jesus into something “the signs” told him was wrong.

We will continue on with this factual outlaying of “the Truth” in Communications to follow.

Perhaps you can “see” now why I Paul asked, demanded, that we study, peruse our bibles a little more diligently.

In Love, for Peace and Unity, the Key to Freedom,

your servant-brother,

I Paul.

## 22 - Who Is Your Saviour? Jesus?

Greetings:

Religious Christianity awaits the second coming of Jesus of Nazareth as their personal saviour.

Have you any idea of how many people have lived and died waiting for this “coming attraction” in the last two thousand years to no avail? Jesus isn’t coming back but that’s rather immaterial and irrelevant since Jesus isn’t their Saviour anyway! Of course, he was a saviour, of sorts, since he “saved” himself and that, dear brothers and sisters, is exactly what you must do also if you are going to Come and Follow him to The Kingdom of LIFE for you must be your own saviour simply because LIFE is not going to do for you what you are best and most capable of doing for yourself and that is saving yourself!

This is what the Message of I Paul has been telling you since its most recent “reappearing” here on this earth. When you read “You Can Do It” you should also know and understand that “Only you can do it”! Jesus asked “What shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his life?” We live in a “me” first age of mankind, an age of violence, terrorism, suicide, drug addiction, war, truly an age without standards, an age without a solid

philosophy, an age where we are all more concerned with the means than the ends, more concerned with “self” than with our True-Selves, more concerned then with material things than with spiritual things. People today have a mentality which is best described as an “All take and No give” one. These are the ills of our world today and once again we are in need of a physician and a cure. And whether you know it or not, you and You are that physician and The Message is the prescription for the cure.

Jesus said, “Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for Wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many are they that enter in thereby. For Narrow is the Gate, and Straitened The Way, that leadeth unto LIFE, and few are they that find it.” Jesus found it, and he went alone. He told his followers they couldn’t come with him, they had much to do and to Prepare for before they could follow him. And so do all of you, for The Message is clear that you must Prepare, Follow, and then, Come in the manner predestined. If You make it, Jesus will be there to greet you but neither he, nor anyone else, is going to “come back” to lead you through that “narrow gate”! Only you can do that for you are your own saviour. And the “good news” about all this is that you can do it and there is no devil or satan to stand in your way - just “self”! Jesus, having made his discovery of The Divinity of Man did his very best to teach those who

would listen to the Way to “the Way” but his followers were too slow in learning and even though Jesus had great patience The Romans and the Religious leaders of his day did not. These “slow to learn” ones deserted him in his most trying hours and later formed a Jewish religious sect which recognized Jesus as The Messiah with its leader in Jerusalem being James, the brother of Jesus and a member of The Sanhedrin as a Sadducee. It was from this beginning that the Christian Religion was born. This religion has never taught what Jesus discovered and taught to his followers and that is basically why the Christian Religion is not only a farce but is actually standing on a foundation of lies about the man of Nazareth, Jesus. This church, this religion, no church, no religion can save you, they cannot even save themselves from each other.

There are many brilliant, religiously intelligent people on this earth today, yet they are, at the same time, the epitome of Spiritual Ignorance. The Christian ones’ center of worship is Jesus - This same Jesus that cited the religionists as fools and hypocrites, who displayed their wealth and finery to the poor and prayed in public places to cover-up what it is they did in the shadow of the Temple and the back rooms of the Synagogues. Do you really believe their religion or any religion, saved them and/or their counterparts today? The only way you can be saved is to

make the same discovery Jesus made and then live your Whole Life by it, for it and in it, come what may, and “You can do it,” in fact, “Only You can do it” and you must begin to do it, NOW!

It's a well-known truth, and also very obvious, that The Power of Religion is money. It's also a truth, but not so obvious, that the Power of Spiritualism is Spirit. Jesus knew this and he displayed the Power and the Wisdom of The Spirit and even though he was rich he made himself poor, for our sakes (II Corinthians 8:9) and he practiced what he taught others to do. He didn't idly tell the rich young man to go and sell all he had and give it to the poor and come, follow me, for he, himself, had already done exactly that. You cannot serve two masters, whether it be Spirit or Mammon, Spirit or “self” or, as most religionists, God and the Devil! Hypocrites! Fools! Just as Jesus cited them as. Nothing has changed - there are just more of them today than in his day.

I personally would like someone, anyone to show me one shred of Proof that religion is a True Way without the use of any myth, tradition, saga or legend and concrete proof that it saves! You see, without resorting to myth, tradition, saga and legend the Christian religion cannot even prove the existence of Jesus whom they claim to be the Son of God, or God as the second person of the Trinity of

God; such trinity being concocted by man as were all religions even!

You see I'm not anti-God or Anti-Son of God and most certainly not Anti-Jesus. What I am "Anti" about is the vicious untruths cited by the religionists about God and Christ and Jesus.

Man, the creator of religion, cannot even clearly explain what the word means. No wonder there are so many of them and so many denominations of them, sects and cults included, with all of them boasting that they have "The Truth" and no one else but them! The truth is that only Jesus had it and lived exclusively by it, in it and for it! And it cost him his physical existence on this earth! Are you really prepared to Follow him? I don't think so and I'll tell you why I think that way. The difference between you and Jesus is not that he was physically Perfect, simply because he wasn't, the difference lies in the Truth that he was Spiritually Perfect and you are not. It's really that simple. You see Jesus was conformed to this world just as you and I are yet when he made the Great Discovery of the Divinity of Man, his own divinity, even, of his divine Consciousness and Conscience, The Truth set him Free and gave him the power and wisdom to perform phenomenal acts through, for and by the Mind of The True Christ, the LIGHT, the Created Image of The



Supreme Spirit, LIFE, then! You see, The Truth both creates and destroys and it did both for Jesus - it destroyed his conformity to this world and it transformed him through the Renewing of his mind, The Change that set him Free.

He did his very best to give it all away but it was all in vain. The gospels claim he gave it to Peter, The Keys to it All, but if the church is any proof at all, it is quite apparent that “simple simon” lost them! The church’s dear Peter not only denied Jesus he deserted him as one fleeing the plague and this is the foundation of The Church! And it is still denying the discovery of Jesus and his Teaching! Their problem is that once having made him God, they lost sight and sound of The True Jesus!

Are you cognizant of the fact that all around our globe today violent religious ideological wars are raging? And are you aware that their endings would bring Peace to this Earth for the first time in thousands of years?

Religion on this Earth (in fact we are the only Earth to have concocted religions) has always been in the Power and Wealth business, but today they are big commercial businesses wherein billions of dollars are at stake. If you doubt this, just take a look at the “electronic religions” for one good example of what I say and I Paul will not go into what they do with a lot of this money, for it has been very

well documented and available to anyone who is interested in knowing the facts.

Perhaps you don't see it, but all of this does have a bearing on just who your saviour really is. There exist only a few of us, True Christian Spirituals, who do know and we know it is not God, not Jesus, not the True Christ and most certainly not some silly religion! It's your Minds, your spirit, your Truth, your Love and your life-style and obedience to The Mind of Christ that saves you and the beautiful Truth of it All is that you can do it! If you believe that all you have to do to be saved is to be born, live, pay taxes, join a church, worship and glorify God, Christ or Jesus and die, then you are truly spiritually ignorant! This is not only ignorant, it's insanity! And the gospels tell us that most of the people of Jesus' Time, even his Mother, brothers and sisters, thought he was the mentally unbalanced one! His Mother! She of the Immaculate Conception! She of The Virgin Birth! Really? They've got to be kidding! But we're not. We are dead serious.

Jesus, through his great discovery realized that he was his own saviour and that True-Faith, not religious faith, was a very simple, personal, here and now trust in the Love of, the constant thought for and the everlasting Obedience to The Mind of Christ. This is what Jesus practiced, did, from

the day of his discovery and is exactly what he taught and fully expounded all of his followers to emulate. Doing, he said, is far better than being, here and Now. He made it plain that you only love God as much as you love yourself, your neighbors and your enemies also, and none of this involved any sacrificing whatsoever.

There is only one way under the sun by which men and women can achieve their Ultimate Goal - that is to achieve the realization and the unfoldment of their own innate divinity - (salvation then, in the truest sense of the word) - and that is by bringing about a radical change and a permanent change in their own consciousnesses.

When Jesus so boldly proclaimed, "If you've seen me, you've seen the Father," he was speaking the truth. The religionists have never correctly understood this saying of Jesus except to declare him God in the flesh which is exactly what he did not mean. He was simply declaring his newly found divinity and when you discover yours and act accordingly, you, too, can say exactly the same thing he did in all honesty.

This great discovery of Jesus not only completely changed him but the very course of the history of that day and all the days to come. His discovery, his transformation, his transfiguration, his great Change, compelled him to

drop completely his revolutionary plans to overthrow the Roman rule, dethrone Herod, destroy the Temple in Jerusalem and seat himself upon the throne of Israel as king and Messiah. His discovery (actually a rediscovery) of the divinity of Man and his receiving of the spirit as a result of it and his total renewal (the restoration of man's Immortality) brought him to a New Beginning which was to befall ALL of mankind here once both Jesus and the Incarnated Christ were "taken-up" by the Supreme Spirit.

Jesus' followers deserted him when he changed his mind about leading a bloody and violent revolution and opted to follow The Way of non-violence and Love.

The church completely lied about all of this and composed fictional history in their mad rushing forward towards Wealth and Power. (See I Paul #18)

The Message of I Paul has not only been a great revelation for us but a tremendous learning experience. It has taken us from the beginnings of mankind here on this Earth, W-303, through all the mistakes of man and his theologies, doctrines, dogmas, contradictions, rites, rituals, sacraments, untruths, manufactured history and scripture, all the preconceived ideas and illusions, all the superstitions and false gods and powers including Satan and evil spirits. The Message has deliberately caused us to make

all the mistakes of the past even to the believing in things that are untrue and non-existent and all for our Well-Being, our Change for the better and our transformation and transfiguration so that we, too, may have what Jesus had and has - the New Worlds and the LIGHT.

I Paul for one has been led down the primrose path on so many occasions that I am Now an expert at it. Some will say that the Message has played a game with them, but that is not so, for “we will play no games” - we will teach and we will be ALL things to All people in order to get their attention, is what it really says and it has.

We have learned, but we have learned also that learning the Truth is not always a pleasing nor pleasant task. It has cut us and humbled us for all of us were terribly ignorant of Spiritual things and we had to learn to leave matters alone that “didn’t matter.” For those of us who have stood fast and persevered and learned we look to our Futures eagerly and excitedly. We have fought the good preliminary fight as participants and not merely spectators, Present and not merely available, and we have gotten up after every fall and every time we arose we knew we were better humans and much, much better Spirituals than ever before.

We have learned that the word “impossible” is not Spiritual. The Spirit “speaks” and “acts” in a phenomenal

“language” and a phenomenal manner, simply because its “environment” is most Phenomenal in contrast to this Earth’s, which we call natural, but which is constantly being “invaded” by much Phenomena from the higher planes.

My task is to heal the spiritually dis-eased, the hungry and the thirsty seekers of Truth, then, not the physically diseased. My Way is The Way to “the Way,” the “Renewing of The Mind” way and its unity with my spirit mind wherein lies the Power and the Wisdom and the Truth and where Peace is and Love flows forth in an atmosphere of Absolute Freedom from “want” and the fullness of all my “Needs”!

Without the Message, I Paul would still be the “old me” and the “new me” would not have, as yet, “come-out” and for this I am and will be forever grateful. Yet I am still in the process of learning and changing every single day of my on-going existence here while I follow the Spirit there, but I also have, in me, the Spirit of the LIGHT, the spirit of Wisdom and Understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and the spirit of Love and Truth, for we have The Mind of Christ and we hold it in all of its fullness; and from it we are Fruitful.

I know that Jesus and the LIGHT were crucified. I also know that when Jesus died so did every man, woman and child on the face of this earth. Impossible? No, that’s a

physical word! I further know that every man, woman and child were also reborn through the gift of the spirit, our immortality and the key to our achieving entrance into the realms of The Light and avoiding the darkness, the Light realms where the LIGHT awaits us and where we shall participate in the Happening of The ALL in ALL and be installed into the Kingdom and the Presence of LIFE, Our True Soul!

Now we have been told that we cannot save ourselves and neither can we go alone. We have also been told that you and You must go together in Unity. What does all of this mean or imply? It means that we Need to unite our lower mind with our higher Mind - our divine consciousness then with our "True-Self's" Divine Consciousness then, and be accounted-accredited as Righteous in, of, for and through The Mind of Christ in order to be raised-up into the Light as was Jesus raised-up from the darkness of physical death by LIFE, who Raised-Up Christ also. Hence Jesus did not go alone and neither shall we, for we shall also go "in" something, with someone. (See Communication #19 - I Paul Series.)

"Saved" in the Message implies, means, entrance into the Light. Therefore one is not saved by entering into and remaining in the darkness after "the 3 days and 3 nights"

period. You “save” yourself by discovering that which Jesus discovered and by living Righteously as did Jesus, and you do all of this without Sacrifice for Jesus did it all for us!

All the Family branches have or should have a Question Book. The method and requirements for their use are spelled out within The Message itself. They are not used much but I Paul can think of many questions that should have been raised. Such ones as to whether Jesus received his spirit before the cross or after. Was it at a momentous transfiguration or did the incarnating Christ Spirit suffice for Jesus until after death came and then received it along with all others. These have of course been answered but possibly not all too clearly for most to grasp. When Jesus Received the Spirit of Christ through an Act of Spiritual Incarnation he was endowed with the spirit, and not by the fictional myths of a virgin birth or by a dove at baptism. This is the transfiguration brought about by his great discovery. Still other questions remain, one is, when did Jesus become aware of this? It would appear that he became aware of it shortly before he declared he was going to Jerusalem to die and where he declared that his plans for an uprising were over. This caused his followers to betray him and deny him and when he was convicted as a seditionist they deserted him, fleeing for their own lives.



Another question that may be raised is how did Jesus come about his Great Discovery? He was quite aware of what the scriptures had to say and especially so of the Adam and Eve legend therein. Yet he firmly believed that man-woman were something more than just living and dying things and he simply could not get it out of his thoughts. How, he kept asking himself, did man really lose his immortality? His religious background kept taking him back to sin and disobedience as the cause. He wasn't convinced and he spent hours, days, months and more cogitating and meditating over it. He was convinced that man didn't just happen, that God had created man and therefore man was somehow divine. But how? And what was the link, the key between man and God? Since God was ALL knowing, man, in some way, shape or manner had to share in that All knowing and then he saw, for the first time, that which was so visible that it had become invisible to man down through the ages. (See Communication #19 - I Paul Series.) From this link he made his Great Discovery and the rest is history.

Man's immortality was reawakened and restored by and in the receiving of the spirit - Jesus first - and this is what we mean when we say Jesus was his own saviour. Of course we know he died real death physically and was raised-up, the True-Jesus, by LIFE. But it was Jesus' discovery and his Love and Obedience and Faith that made

it possible, so in effect, he “saved” himself, and us also, but Now we must do the same as Jesus did or we will wander in the darkness of death and away from the Light. If The Truth be hid, it’s hidden in you by your blindness and your deafness and nothing else. And you can find it, you can do it, the only question is Do you really want to?

Are you willing to forget your wants, slay “self” your own selfish will and Obey The Mind of Christ? If so, you should have no problem in following after Jesus and at least doing what he did in his shortened lifetime here - You do this by Following The Way to “the Way.”

You Think - You Love - You Obey - You Act - You Change - You Become! In that order. It’s really that simple.

Prepare, Follow, Come.

In Love and Peace,

your servant,

I Paul.

## **23 - The Case for Executing Your “Self”! And Why it is Good for You**

Greetings one and all in ALL.

My dearest sisters and brothers, what's the first thing you do when you wake up in the morning? Whatever it is, if it is not the following, Change it!

For when you wake-up, regardless of what you are Thinking of, change it immediately to thoughts of yourself and nothing but yourself and then get up and never do it again for the rest of the day!

You see, that's the way the real You lives and works all the time, so why not you. The Way you Think, live and act is not really you, but an illusion that you have created and followed blindly all your life and it's high time you ceased from this blind rushing forward and began living towards and looking upwards to your Future Life which you, and you alone, create in and of and by your Now. A simple change, a renewal of your Mind is all that is necessary - After All, who is going to Think for you? you! Who is going to make you happy or miserable? you! Who is going to guard your Freedom? you! Who is going to Act and breath and live for you? you and You if you will get with it! You see, no matter which way you turn, you are responsible for you. You've

heard it said That LIFE is not going to do for you what you are capable of doing for yourself, I'm sure. And you are capable unless you are truly mentally handicapped, and not just acting that way. Capable because LIFE is in you and you are a mind of The Mind individualized and you are truly a spirit of The Spirit individualized! This is both your divine unity and your divine consciousness and when fully "Recognized" it is your creativity and your immortality - your very Life then!

And since it is your whole Life, how well do you treat it and how well do you control it and how well do you live it - use it? to your well-being and not to your detriment? Really, how Well are you and You? How Free are you? Please, think this query out very, very well.

You may regard self-discipline as a chore, but for me it's an order that allows me my Freedom. Neither you nor anyone else "here" can control my mind and neither can any one thing - none of these can control my thoughts, my acts, my emotions, my Life then. And that's why they are mine - all mine - not all cluttered up by someone else's or some other things - their foolishnesses, their ignorance and most certainly not their supposed mastery!

You see, I Paul doesn't have to abstain from anything or anyone for I do not allow "self," but the Mind of Christ!

You see, when I was a child I played for fifty or so years with childish things, but now that I AM a man and I know who I really Am, I act, to the best of my ability, accordingly and I do not allow anyone to take out my childish things and play games with me, for I Paul play no games with fools or pretending hypocrites!

You need a goal, a vision, for without one you wither and rot and perish away, and many do exactly this without perishing - they simply eat, drink and be merry in their hates, angers and anxieties - the walking dead, the Message calls them - the “scattered strangers” we should all be committed to “picking-up,” and not being or becoming one.

You’re all smart enough to know that you cannot give away something you do not have, you cannot plant a seed unless that “seed” is firmly and very permanently planted in you. You cannot seek if you do not know where to seek. You cannot knock if you cannot find the door. If you fear, how do you expect others to listen to you without fearing you? If you cannot help yourself, how in the name of Christ do you expect to help others? And finally, if you do not respect yourself, love yourself and understand yourself you cannot love, respect nor understand others!

To live righteously is easy - to live unrighteously is

hard work. To buy love is hard work - to give it is easy - it doesn't cost anything to accumulate it. You see, those who attempt to buy love and respect, to purchase their way into the Kingdom with bought recognition always die naked, broke, forsaken. And, then also, those who hoard their materialistic gains and dream of taking it all with them, never get off or from under the ground! Then we have the true hypocrites - those who find it easy to Preach and Teach The Way to "the Way" to others but know it not in their own words, acts and deeds. Such as these have no "Recognition"! because they give none and so they are always wondering why their life is always one of ups and downs, sickness and pain, anxiety and perplexities and debts!

These are the ones who are always so busy giving others a "piece of their mind" that they have little or none left for their own betterment. We know them as the ones whose own word is no good even unto themselves!

This, then, is the sickness, the dis-ease of "self" which most human beings never seem to get sick enough of to do something, anything, truly constructive enough to rid themselves of. Most actually love their "selves" more than they do themselves - they must, or they would not be the way they are.

I Paul say to you - Be not conformed by the “selfs” of this world but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. All it requires is a simple and permanent change of mind for your well-being and The Well-Being of others. Do this, accomplish this, and you will really be the miracle you Truly are!

After all, it's your life. Shouldn't you actually start living it and loving it and controlling it instead of allowing others to do it for you and “to you” and worse, by allowing an illusion to do it for you and “to you”? Many will still ask How? The answer is the same yesterday, today and tomorrow - Think, Love, Obey! For those of you who still believe that a “little luck” along the way helps, let me slay this illusion also by saying that “luck” is merely the residue of desire fulfilled by an Absolute Motivation in Action!

In closing let us remind one and all that the Message, the Way, is not for everyone in the sense that there will always be those who will not follow it nor even attempt, try, to practice it in its totality. These then are the ones who are firmly imbedded in “self” and are content to be there. They are both spiritually inept and ignorant of what it takes, entails, to be a Christian Spiritualist, and their whole outlook and attitude is one of “If I can't do it then it can't be done and therefore I don't believe it.” This very attitude,

which they carry with them into all areas of their life, is what makes them the “losers” they truly are and they stand out as such no matter where they go. We all know them by the very lack of their failure to produce any fruit! Jesus himself cited them as fools, hypocrites and pretenders - I Paul will be a bit kinder and simply call them Dull!

You see, The Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL is just that - “The Family,” and that means we must have a total commitment to one another based on Spiritual Principles and that commitment implies a goal of Spiritual Transcendence within these Principles. So let them who have eyes “see” and ears “hear” as we who do pray that The Dull get no duller and begin, in earnest, the honest and sincere process of becoming brighter!

The Primary Purpose of The Message is to conclusively prove Life after physical demise. Does that not mean Transcendence of Something Out of the physical body? We “think” so! The question is, do you?

I Paul tell you to slay “self” and get the hell out of your life and then you can get Out of your body.

To those who read their bibles we would suggest that they begin to study them for a change and “see” that out of body experiences are quite common.



To those who read The Message we would suggest that they begin to study and follow it for a “complete Change” including Out of body experiences as well as many other marvelous and beneficial happenings in their lives.

Prepare-Follow-Come is, after all, an Out of Body “happening” as well as an In one!

In Freedom of Mind for Love and Truth,

Unity and Peace,

your servant and brother,

I Paul.

## **24 - This Is the Way**

Greetings to one and All.

Dying is not the Way!

In Love.

your brother and servant,

I Paul.

## 25 - Does Anyone Have “The Way”?

Greetings:

If you have come, read this far you may not hold it, have it, but you certainly know what it is.

Yet there are untold numbers “out-there” who believe they have it - “The Way.”

Now, and with no apologies, allow me to attempt to disillusion you. No one has “The Way.” Yet many have the Way to “The Way.” Soma! Psyche! Pneuma! Body - mind - spirit. You - me - us. The Way!

To those Christines near me and also those near Christed ones dear to me, I Paul say be dear to me as I am near to thee - whether in the body or out, it matters not.

A salute and personal kiss to “T,” a salute and welcoming kiss to “DH” and “G.” An embrace and kiss to all those called yours. My very all to All in ALL! May they be not forsaken. May they find The Way, give it away - for in the giving lies the keeping - and there, there is no sound of weeping - no search for strength in sorrow - no mind for the “morrow.” For is not the Soma more than raiment? - the belly more than meat? And if more, what?

Shall we not speak of, allude to psyche, pneuma? -

“mind,” then, “spirit” then?

Does anyone, then, truly have The Way? And this question is not only valid for our time but for all time. Did Jesus have The Way? One could cite his untimely demise to make a case in point that he did not. And then, of course, you could take the extreme of that to make your case that he did.

I think we need to examine just what this Jesus of Nazareth had before we can make a rational determination one way or the other.

History does repeat itself and it has told and retold us story after story of mystic teachers who have found “The Way” and of the ensuing Religions who have lost it. Just as we today know that this earth holds many monuments to inner-space flights that actually quite never came-off. Occasionally a True Prophet came along telling of a great world within but instead of following him into that great experience they made the prophet a god and then sat waiting for the “great world” to come out.

Now there are many who declare that Jesus was one of those “mystic teachers” while others proclaim him as a “True Prophet,” and while both are partially correct, neither are totally correct, because he was both and more - he was a Spiritual Genius - which incorporates them both but is neither. It is above and beyond their total, collective

understanding and perception. They did not “see” and they did not “hear”! And they do not even today.

Much ado has been made over the manner of his being - his birth - his mother - his cousin, John, yet the bible straight out states his townspeople knew nothing unusual about him and neither did his mother except he was a little unbalanced. And this is as it should be. His birth was unimportant - it was his “awakening,” his “discovery” that should always be addressed. He grew in Wisdom, Power and in stature, with favor in God’s eye, is what is the Truth. (See Luke 2:52.) “He grew in” and he “came out” with this growing, is what we must always address, also.

He achieved a unique relationship with Spirit and became the Channel of that unique relationship between man and LIFE through the LIGHT! He said what no man, no person had ever said before - I am the life, the light and the truth. If you have seen me, you have seen the Father! That is pretty strong language, even for a man whose mother even believed him to be unbalanced! The question is - what did he mean by it?

Jesus only meant that he had discovered the kingdom, the new world within. He didn’t mean nor imply another single solitary thing.

Now the point is to prove it. Keeping in mind that the

message says “Prove all things” and with my understanding of that command I shall do so.

With Jesus came the Age of our Christ. With Jesus came the awakening, the enlightenment of the Divinity of Man. Up to this point man had lived in a separation from God, from LIFE then, knowing only fear – a fear of God in death – but Jesus informed us all that God, LIFE then, has nothing to do with death – Life knows no death. God’s, LIFE’S then, final insult to man–woman is most certainly not death. But that’s what all religions teach and preach to one degree or another. Does God insult his creature? – his creation? Most certainly not! And this is what Jesus was attempting to tell us!

Love LIFE Supremely – Love one another’s Life supremely – Love each other as I have Loved you and our Father will Love us All, in All!

Do you see any mention of demise, death in that? I fail to. Jesus simply knew himself to be an expression, an exclamation of God itself expressing Itself through him, the very Activity of LIFE and its visibility, pressing Itself, through him. Can you see any expression of death therein? Neither do I.

Now before we go a step further with all of this, let us ask, what did this Jesus think of himself? Well, certainly, I

would not be one so presumptuous to even think that I know, but at least, let me give you an idea from all the “historical facts” –

We think, we know, he was a Galilean, from Nazareth. Either a carpenter or a son of one. We know he was at one time rich and that he did not have “long hair.” Other than this, and a very few other minor details, we really don’t know too much about this man called Jesus of Nazareth. What did this man think of himself – this man with the unique purpose in his life? – for our life.

What did Jesus think about himself? The question is, who was he? Was this fascinating man just another charismatic teacher like Apollonius of Tyana who lived at the same time as Jesus near Palestine and whose teachings were recorded by one of his disciples, Damis? Or do we have in Jesus one who towers above all mankind in some strange colossal majesty? The nascent church called him “the Holy One.” (John 6:69; Acts 13:35; 4:30; I John 2:20.) And the authors of the Gospel of John and the book of Hebrews called him the image of the invisible God (Colossians 1:15), The incarnation of the eternal word of God (John 1:1-18), the son of God who upholds the universe by his word of power (Hebrews 1:3). Very extravagant language! The question of Jesus’ uniqueness has been a troublesome one to the

modern age, especially in the light of our growing knowledge of the many other religious leaders of antiquity and the biblical revolution that has raised the question as to whether or not the divine stature of Jesus was a mythical creation of an over enthusiastic group of men, hell bent on establishing a new religion, “a church”! Was he after all only another charismatic religious leader - teacher who would be shocked and perhaps offended by the adoring worship of twenty centuries?

The immediate temptation here is to defend Jesus and/or “our faith” by leaping to a defensive sermonic answer and simply lead up on the fallacies of the New Testament presentations. But my suggestion is that we begin with this Jesus and his message to us of the Kingdom of God and thereby find exactly what he truly thought of himself. The clear, the concise, the compelling understanding of himself!

This is, of course, the more risky approach and demands that we place the exalted language of Paul, John, the authors of Hebrews and the entire other, thought of, Creed Church, or Creed creating church, under the scrutiny, if not the Judgment of Jesus’ own self-understanding!

Jesus thought he was God! But Jesus had a great deal to say about himself. As far as I can see and looking back to



earlier Communications he knew exactly who he was and what he was predestined to be!

I Paul would love to be that aware of my predestination  
- especially Now.

I Paul, in All love as your servant - Z.

## 26 - Heal Thyself

Greetings:

I Paul, being in the Christ way, the Way of the Light with the fully activated Mind of Christ concerned only for the Well-Being of ALL in ALL, a spiritual genius, an eater of meat, a spirit guide and a medium of Spirit and now a self-healer and healer, a traveler to and a Mystic of the Pillars of Faith, Hope, Love, Truth and Wisdom who drinks milk now understanding the essence of its strongness and knowing mine own needs, secures them, and cherishes them to be Well, greets all of his brothers and sisters wherever they may be for Unity and Peace.

One of the most important keys to “heal thyself” lies back in the Message where the thought, in essence says, take every moment of your life for what it is and if you don’t like it - change it - and believe me if you really think it out you can do it!

When you enter into the “unknown” it should go without saying that you do so with great personal risk for you may find your whole life changed which may not be to your liking in the beginning and then find yourself in a constant state of change until you are changed back into what and where you should be with many “ups and downs”

along the way. The knowledge of the keys to “heal thyself” could preclude a lot of these and shorten the change and the “healing process.”

All healing involves the whole person – the soma, the psyche, the pneuma and the Mind of Christ. It’s a matter of the timeless world versus the physical world and superior to everything you hold, or may hold, sacred, yet, to enter this timeless world, which is most difficult, is to heal all things. The “trick” is to bring that healing back with you into the physical world.

We also know from early on in the Message that faith is “The Key” to All healing and regardless of what you call that faith it must always come from within, never from without, for it’s within where the full measure of Faith lies. You see, the heart cannot heal what the eye cannot see, and what the eye cannot see only the Minds, through faith, can heal!

Furthermore, without “eros” (physical love) and without “caritas” (spiritual love) compounded with this faith, no healing can take place within or without in this physical world.

Now from May 17 to May 24, I Paul had more than one foot in the grave, but as it is stated in Isaiah 58:8, “then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily,” and it is, just as the subject of this

communication, “Heal Thyself,” is, springing forth “speedily.”

There is a very strange paradox in Christianity today. While Jesus “healed all manner of diseases” and left some amazingly clear concepts by which we can follow him in the practice of healing by spiritual means, all we can find today in any and all Christian Religion sects are the phonies who can “heal” in their churches and on radio and television but they cannot enter a hospital and do the same thing. One third of the gospel records are devoted to the healing section of Jesus’ mission. The church itself has looked upon Jesus’ healing “miracles” as demonstrations of his Divinity - proof that he was “very God.” Thus we can find such statements in Christian Religious theology as “the day when God walked the earth” and “the age of miracles has passed” and “all revelation ended with the completion of the gospels.”

The development of a church, a new religion in a hostile world, is a very precarious business. The nascent church had a problem. On the one hand there was the well-established religion of the Jews with its deep-seated commitment to the One God of “Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.” And, on the other hand, there was the deep-seated “pagan world” with its acceptance of many gods. So they did the only thing possible they knew to do in order to gain wealth and power and to

strengthen their claims as being the one True religion - they made a god out of Jesus. Thus, they had the key to theological strength - and spiritual weakness. It could be said then, that the “age of healing” ended with Paul. For a millennium and a half, spiritual healing was unheard of in religious Christianity.

In the doctrine of the divinity of Jesus, there is no room for a healing principle. Jesus’ “miracles” would be degraded if they could be duplicated. So, the great rationalization that sickness is God’s Will was developed. Man must not question God’s Will. He should accept his lot, even his terrible diseases, in stoic submission. Any effort toward healing was a revolt against God. The practice of medicine was frowned upon by the early church. Emperor Justinian even closed the medical schools of Athens and Alexandria in A.D. 529. This condemnation continued through the centuries until finally, in A.D. 1215, Pope Innocent III condemned surgery and excommunicated those who practiced it. In 1248, dissection of the body was pronounced sacrilegious and even the study of anatomy was condemned.

And yet, “Jesus went about in all Galilee . . . healing all manner of disease” (Matthew 4:23). And he said, “All that I do you can do too . . . and even more.” Jesus proved to man for all time that man was divine, and that every man-

woman has within themselves the power of healing and that they can be a “healing influence” for others so that they can be healed. “And nothing shall be impossible to him (her).”

We of the Family understand the word “miracle” – it was used, manipulated by the church as proof positive that Jesus was God. According to the dictionary a miracle is “an event or effect in the physical world deviating from the laws of nature.” We live in an orderly universe, in which deviation from law is unthinkable. If a healing is accomplished, whether by Jesus or a medical practitioner, it is a demonstration of the remarkable wholeness of life. Exceptional as the case may be, it cannot be called a miracle. It may have dealt with the healing law on a higher level than we have heretofore known, but no laws have been transgressed. It is a natural or divinely natural phenomenon.

Jesus said that he came not to destroy the law but to fulfill it (Matthew 5:17). He steadfastly refused to set aside, or even attempt to set aside, any natural law. Remember how he was taken up to the pinnacle of the Temple by the “Satanic” influence of his own human consciousness, and tempted to throw himself down to prove his mastery over the elements? At the last moment he changed his mind when he remembered that thou shalt not tempt the Lord, thy God! You see, Jesus knew he was not God, The Creator.

He knew he was the self-livingness of God. The activity of God in expression. His power was not in changing the laws of the Universe, but in his high consciousness of the law.

Jesus was not a magician. In his mission he simply fulfilled divine law on a higher level than anyone has before or since. The “miracle” healings were not only an evidence of the divinity of Jesus but of the divinity of all men and women - of the very persons healed! The potential for healing is in every person simply because he or she is innately divine, innately whole and complete. Jesus’ insight was so great and he saw the divinity in the other person with such intensity, that there was a healing light. His faith quickened the sleeping potential and it sprang into the full and perfect life. Jesus said, “I know that his commandment is life eternal.” He knew that man had become sleepy in a spiritual sense, asleep even to the Truth of his life, his beginning. Jesus said, “I have come out that they may have life and more abundantly.” He knew that man was meant to be an eternal being with the power of renewal and health, as a fundamental part of his divinity. Thus, the healing that resulted was a demonstration of the eternal law of life and not a deviation from it.

Jesus said, “God is not the God of the dead but of the living.” One of the greatest fallacies of life in our time is the

certainty of death. We sometimes refer to something as being as sure as death and taxes. In our day and age it may well be that taxes are pretty certain and inevitable. But we are all well due for some revision of our attitudes in this matter of the certainty of death. Scientists are discovering some amazing properties in “this thing called life” which we shall discuss in a later communication.

One point that we should make clear herein is that Jesus did not originate spiritual healing. He did not make the healing law. Spiritual healing is possible simply because we are essentially spiritual beings and healing is simply the art of “opening out a way whence the imprisoned splendor may escape.”

Spiritual healing is not an attempt to gain special favor with LIFE or LIGHT or to abrogate the divine or natural law - (the psychical or physical laws). Contrary to popular belief, we do not use a different “set” of laws in spiritual healing than those used in medical or surgical healing. Life is the acting principle of Being, the energy that propels all forms into Action, the structure that prevails throughout the Universe. Whether the Life’s Principle is activated by meditation or medication it matters not! The only thing that matters is the levels of consciousness one is able to attain to and their use towards the Good, the Right and the True!



Spiritual healing is the healing of the Whole and not just of a part of the whole. The part can never be well unless the Whole is Well. The Whole of course being the Soma, the Psyche, the Pneuma or as Jesus would say the Pusche.

Let us look at the record. Jesus taught and practiced Spiritual healing with abandon. He knew that it was God's Will that all be Well. He said, "It is not the will of your Father who is in the Kingdom that one of these little ones should perish."

There are many contradictions and even falsehoods in the gospels but within them we can find Jesus' philosophy on Life and there can be no mistake about it - He believed in the right of people to be healthy - and "He healed all kinds of illnesses."

Jesus taught that man lived in two worlds - not in succession, but concurrently - in the eternal Now then. Sure, we live in the world of appearances, the three-dimensional world of form and structure - of horizontal time and space - the world where we have fluctuating experiences of sickness and health - Peace and war - calm and chaos. But we also live in a spiritual world - "Man is a spirit inhabiting a body"!

Jesus once said, "Don't be misled in appraising yourself in life. You are whole, even if you are experiencing disease

or dis-ease. And you can be healed because you are whole.”

When you look in the mirror you see the three-dimensional creature of form and structure. Now you may not like your looks, your form, your structure but that’s you and so you probably say “that’s it,” that’s the way I am and I can’t do anything about it. But if you can open your mind to the dynamics of the Master’s teaching you will begin to see through the mirror instead of just in it! I Paul wrote “We see in a glass (mirror), darkly” but he also added we must come to see “face to face.” Beyond the form and structure you first see in the mirror is the total, the whole person you are in spirit.

There is that of you that is greater than your weakness, stronger than your fears, the fourth-dimensional You that is Whole even within your disease and dis-ease. This “You” is the Perfect Ideal of the Mind of Christ! The very image of the Omniscience of LIFE! You are simply indifferent to this greater, real You, your innate divinity and your divine levels of consciousness. You are “stuck-in.” You need to activate the Christ in you simply because that is your divinity just as it was Jesus’! It is the particularization of the Infinite Source of Life into the pattern of finite embodiment! It is a perfect pattern. It is a Whole. And it is you at the Point of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL!!!

Let those who have eyes “see” and let those who have ears “hear.”

How?

Via the Perceptor Senses.

Birth, whether you are cognizant of it or not, is a sleep and a forgetting. Thus the Key to the demonstration of Wholeness is - Awake and Remember! Conscious life in three-dimensional experience is mostly a dream unless the perceptor senses can be activated.

If I enter into one of your dreams and I find you in a precarious situation even though you are really asleep in your bed safe, snug and warm, and I want to help you out of your dilemma what do I do? I wake you up, after all it is only a dream but to you it is momentarily real. But from the aspect of your dream experience you know that there is a larger dimension of life than just the three-dimensional of your awake state. A dream, or a vision if you prefer, is a part of the perfect expression of the infinite life that is You.

One thing we can learn from a dream is this. There is a universal tendency for everything to return to normal whenever the condition of balance has been upset (this holds true with dreams-visions). Why? Somehow there is a body that doesn't change even if the cells themselves are hurt or destroyed. I Paul called it “the Lord's Body” - Jesus

referred to it as “the Kingdom Within” and science refers to it as an electromagnetic pattern body. The process of nonmaterial force directing the rebuilding of the material form is what is called the vis medicatrix naturae (the healing power of nature). This is a spiritual activity, whether it is evoked by medication or by meditation.

Spiritual healing then is not based on any silly illusion that there is no sickness and no pain. There is a lot of sickness in our world and a lot of it is extremely painful. I know. Jesus himself was obviously aware of this and the suffering of his fellows. But he didn’t stop there. He was aware of something more – the wholeness of the individual that actually transcended the physical suffering. In other words he taught and demonstrated that pain and sickness are only a part of the picture of the whole man-woman. They are appearances that can be changed if we can judge righteous Judgment. You may be living in the basement of your home, uncomfortable, cold, cramped, and hampered by darkness. But there is still a whole house. I would not say that you are not cold and uncomfortable in your basement, but I could say that this condition can be changed, and that there is a warm, comfortable, well lighted house that you can occupy right now – if you get out of the basement.

There is more to life than this experience. Open your

eyes and see. Open your mind and perceive. Realize that within you, in the kingdom within, there is power and life and substance that is sufficient to establish you in wholeness and abundant living. Get out of the shadows into the light of new loveliness. Stop seeing yourself in part. Get out of the darkness of human thinking and living, into the light of wholeness and the fullness of life. "The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light; they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined" (Isaiah 9:2).

"If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean," the leper said to Jesus. He replied, "I will, be thou made clean."

Here Jesus evidenced the belief that God's Will is always Good. God wills life and health because God is Life and Wholeness. God is not, could not be, the author of sickness or affliction of any kind. If God were the author of such, then no one could ever heal anyone and that includes, of course, Jesus of Nazareth, who knew that God's Will was the Well-Being of man.

A study of the evolution of religious philosophies shows that what has passed for religion has been formulated out of the prevailing thoughts and fears of man. Historians, anthropologists and such tell us that "primitive man" developed a respect for forces that he could not control. He

called such things as lightning, thunder, raging rivers, floods and disease gods or things caused by angry gods although he did not understand just why the god or gods were angry at him. Thus, it is claimed, early worship was a form of sacrifice and appeasement of the gods. Any unusual, painful or unhappy experience was regarded as a direct action of the gods. These early concepts were ultimately incorporated into the more sophisticated religious teachings. Even though Jesus came-out saying "It is not the will of your Father in his Kingdom that one of these little ones should perish," the idea that God's anger caused sickness became part of the basis of Christian theology. Today most religious Christians are taught the rationalistic that misfortune of any kind is God's Will and should be stoically accepted.

At the famous healing shrine at Lourdes the Church hands out a pamphlet to arriving pilgrims that states, in part this - "Most of you will return home without being cured just because it is your business to be ill. It is a most precious business which has come to you straight from Heaven . . . there is no other way to Heaven except suffering."

Now if this were really true - that it is God's Will for you and me to be sick, and that there is no other way to heaven

except through suffering and sickness - then it would follow that any kind of remedial action would be in opposition to God's Will - the sicker you were, the better. It would also indicate that Jesus who went around curing all sorts of illnesses must have been the prince of sinners as the Pharisees and Scribes once accused him of being! If sickness is God's Will then the Will of God is a weak will because people in droves are healed every day. The medical profession doesn't believe this, they work on the premise that within the body there is present the power of cells to renew themselves given the proper treatment and medication. Man has a built-in capacity for health. This is one of the evidences of man's divinity.

Health, real health, is from within and does not have to be manufactured in the without. It is the normal condition of man, a condition true to the reality of his being. There is a divinity in man which is the whole and perfect activity of LIFE! God's Will is the ceaseless longing of the Creator working to perfect Itself in that which it has created for the Well-Being of Itself! When a prayer is answered what happens may appear to be nothing short of miraculous. However, when we understand the process, we know that the result is as natural and normal as in the birth of a new life. Is it a miracle when you lift the shade on a window and let in the light? It is beautiful but it is no miracle. Is it a

miracle, then, when a human body racked with pain and suffering is suddenly freed from it and experiences the fullness of life? No, of course not, but many cite this as such. But really, where is the difference?

Actually, “growth” is a good description of the process, for life is forever growing and unfolding. We lose our perspective in the bondage of time. Things take time. And if something happens instantly it must be a miracle, we say. Jesus indicated that anything that can evolve must first of all be involved. Thus, anything that can be, already is!

Looking at a field of newly sown wheat, you would admit that in time a harvest of grain could result. But can you believe that the grain is already involved in the seed? Jesus said, “Say not ye, there are yet four months and then cometh the harvest? Behold, I say unto you, lift up your eyes, and look on the fields, that they are white already unto harvest.”

You can’t understand a concept like that in a three-dimensional consciousness. But remember you are not a three-dimensional being! Unless you can sense what Jesus had in mind, you certainly cannot understand what Life is all about. “It is the spirit that giveth life; the flesh profiteth nothing.” If I cut my finger the healing begins immediately. And what is this healing? It is the evolution of that which is



involved. The finger can be healed because I am already whole. There is that of me that is perfect as can be and therefore changeless. It is the Christ of me, the divinity of me. This divinity of me includes a perfect finger, perfect even despite the cut on my finger. Now, in the three-dimensional human body, the cell renewal process begins, and the cut is healed in a matter of two or three days. But the cut is healed according to a nonmaterial force or pattern. How do the cells know that they should reproduce themselves in a way that will restore the finger as it was? They simply can't help themselves. There is a directive force to life that builds according to the pattern revealed on the mount. Whether the cut is healed in three days or instantly, the same forces are involved. And that healing force is God's Will - and it is always good, ceaselessly working to establish wholeness for the Well-Being of All in All.

All healing must be preceded by a desire to be well, a will to be well, a motivation to overcome that which causes you pain, discomfort and suffering and diverts your well-being. And above all Faith, real, honest, true Faith must be present.

While on the way to Jairus' house, a woman had suffered nineteen years with a hemorrhage, moved by true faith, worked her way through the crowd of people surrounding Jesus and touching the hem of his garment was

instantly healed. Jesus turned and seeing what happened, said to her, “thy Faith hath made thee whole.”

Faith is the key to the fourth-dimension of living, the bridge into the world of the whole man. Faith is the perception by which we can see wholeness where there appears to be sickness. It is the conviction where lack appears, there is plenty; where pain appears, there is surcease; that in chaos there is harmony. In sickness, there is wholeness. Faith accepts wholeness. Do you have faith? You can answer that for yourself. Faith is not simply the desire to be whole. It is not just the hope that somehow, if conditions are right, God will heal you. Faith is the perception of wholeness, the intuitive sense of being whole, even in the midst of sickness. Jesus said, “Ask, believing you have received, and you will receive.”

Faith is the eye that sees the Spirit, the hand that clings to the Spirit, and the receiving power that appropriates the Spirit. Open your eyes and see. Through Faith you will see beyond the appearance and accept and claim your wholeness. With the Full Measure of Faith activated within you, you have already accepted and claimed your wholeness for you are then one of the few obedient servants of the Supreme Spirit and a follower of The Mind of Christ.

Stretch forth your hand. These were the words Jesus

spoke to the man with the withered hand. We should all be very grateful that Jesus made this statement. It implies that there is always something for us to do. Often the reason we are not healed, even though we have great faith, is because we sit around waiting for the magic wand, the miracle.

“There is a spirit in man and the inspiration of the Almighty giveth them understanding” (Job). Right now, no matter what the problem may be of, mind, body or affairs, there is a spirit in you. God’s Spirit actually individualized, the wholeness of God is in you. And the inspiration of the Almighty is whispering in your inner ear the understanding you need to take the next logical step.

Often the “mistake” that has caused the separation is an unwise use of our bodies. We may be overeating, oversleeping, eating the wrong foods even. We may be in need of fresh air, sunshine. Perhaps our breathing is all wrong, our posture, or our whole way of living. There is a breath or inspiriting of God, LIFE, in you that will give you understanding. But you must expect to receive it. And you must be willing to move your feet. You must expect to be guided. And you must obey the guidance and when you become Obedient to the Mind of Christ it won’t matter what you eat or drink or what your posture is for they then become secondary to your higher levels of consciousness

that allow you to know exactly where you are, where you are going and how to get there.

An old Jewish legend vividly expresses the thought that faith cannot be passive but must be the expression of genuine inner activity. Hence, when Moses tossed the wand into the Red (reed) Sea, the sea, quite contrary to the expected miracle did not divide itself to leave a dry passage for the Jews. Not until the last man had jumped into the water did the promised miracle happen and the waters receded.

Your phenomena of healing can come to you, but be sure that you are not waiting for the waters to part. You are now a spiritual being, a son or daughter of the Supreme Spirit. Jump into the stream and know it. Act as if you were already whole. And be humbly receptive and responsive to the inner leading that will surely come. “Stretch forth your hand” and be healed so that you may also heal.

You need cultivate the three D's - Determination - Devotion - Dedication in order that a great wave of mental healing passes through you so that a gigantic wave of spiritual healing may wash all over you and then and only then can any real and permanent physical healing take place washing away all the causes, dormant and alive, of all disease and dis-ease in and around you.

Seek then the simple purification of the Whole and not the part and you will be healed once and for all. But remember this well: No one can be spiritually healed if they hold to the concept of two Powers, LIFE and Satan, and neither can anyone heal or be a medium for healing who holds to such a concept that an evil Spirit or spirits exist, not even a Jesus of Nazareth!

The question, then, is did this Jesus believe in Satan as a Spirit? The answer is quite emphatically NO!

Let us examine this and Prove this emphatic NO using the Scriptures as our only witness – the gospels of the New Testament.

To Jesus there were only two kinds of persons, Righteous or unrighteous, those for the Kingdom of God and those against it, those in the Light or in the dark, Alive or dead. Come, follow me was a command and compromise was impossible and indecision was tantamount to rejection – “let the dead bury the dead”!

Let us take the use of the word-term Satan-Pneuma and compare its use by Jesus in his sayings with its use by the authors of the synoptic gospels. We will call the Logia (Jesus’ words) “A.” We will call the authors writings “E” for editorial.

1) Pneuma refers to man's highest Nature - Spirit.

E) Mark 2:8; 8:12; Luke 1:47, 80; 8:55; 10:21.

A) Mark 14:38; Matthew 5:3; Luke 9:55.

2) Pneuma refers to Holy Spirit.

E) Mark 1:8, 10, 12; Matthew 1:18, 20; 12:18; Luke 1:15, 17, 35, 41, 67; 2:25, 26, 27; 4:14.

A) Mark 1:10, 12; 3:29; 12:36; 13:11; Matthew 12:28; 28:19; Luke 4:14, 18; 11:13.

3) Pneuma refers to Satan or his Angels.

E) Mark 1:23, 26, 27; 3:11, 30; 5:2, 8, 13; 6:7; Matthew 8:16; Luke 6:18, 7:21; 8:2; 13:11.

A) (Mark 9:25); (Luke 10:20); Luke 11:24, 26.

The verse list above shows Jesus using pneuma (ruach-aramaic) about as his contemporaries did with one startling exception. He seems reluctant to use pneuma as a description for Satan. This becomes even sharper by two refinements in the above: in Mark 9:25, Jesus, in using pneuma for Satan, is not giving an independent judgment, but is merely quoting the child's father; in Luke 10:20 he does use pneuma for the demons, but he is merely reiterating what his disciples have told him (verse 17), and correcting them: "Do not rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you" (verse 20). This leaves only one case, in a parable, where the logia records Jesus using pneuma for an

unclean spirit. Since it is the only instance in the New Testament it is fair to call it an error in the editing.

All of this proves the reluctance of Jesus to use pneuma in this common fashion and shows clearly that Jesus did not share the popular belief in Satan as a rival God or a separate psychic being. To Jesus Satan was not a spirit!!!!!!! Instead, the logia shows Jesus speaking of Satan as a symbol for men in a problem-ridden and “mistake” condition, a view decidedly discontinuous with the generation, and it would seem, with the authors of the four gospels and the Christian religions “love-hate” affair with the devil!

In the logia, Jesus presents a Kingdom of God that is intensely spiritual, predominately personal and embraces both the present and the future eschaton. Some logia emphasizes the present sovereignty of God, some logia the future eschaton, and some give a balanced reference to both the present and the future. When the authors are clearly giving their own summaries of this doctrine, they speak of the Kingdom in general terms, remarkably lacking in interpretation: “He welcomed them and spoke to them of the Kingdom of God” (Luke 9:11, see also Luke 8:1; Matthew 4:23; Mark 1:14, 15). Every other occurrence in the E stratum reflects the use of the Kingdom idea by someone other than an author: John the Baptist (Matthew 3:2), Isaiah (Luke

1:33), the disciples (Luke 19:11; Mark 11:10), Joseph of Arimathea (Mark 15:43), the thief on the cross (Luke 23:43). There we find the Kingdom pictured in highly Jewish terms (Matthew 3:2; Luke 1:33; Mark 11:10) as an imminent political (Mark 11:10; Luke 1:33; Matthew 3:2) or eschatological reality (Mark 15:43; Luke 23:42; 19:11; 1:33; Mark 11:10). Both of these expectations Jesus soundly rejected (see Mark 10:35-40; Matthew 4:8; Luke 17:21). What this reflects is what Luke indicates in one of his brief editorial summaries: “they supposed that the Kingdom of God was to appear immediately” (Luke 19:11). What is missing here is Jesus’ characteristic emphasis on the present, inner, dynamic activity of the Kingdom of God’s sovereign Presence. The authors may seem to understand this Kingdom concept found in the logia but appear most reluctant in the obviously editorial material to do anything but describe it in the most general terms. Those in Jesus’ audiences appear not to understand and so a discontinuity is evident (Were the authors attempting to play down the imminent second coming which did not, and of course, has not materialized? Or were they attempting to hide the fact that Jesus first came-out as a supporter of a violent overthrow of Roman Rule and the destruction of the Temple - to wit - religious control of his people?)

One general pattern emerging in this theological



comparison is that the cosmology of the authors is characterized by a superficial, externalized, unsophisticated use of certain theologically loaded terms, while the logia show a depth of spiritual maturity, sophistication and genius that stands in stark contrast. For example, the authors and their contemporaries are reflected using “ouranos” in various ways; as a modifier of angels (Luke 2:13), as a circumlocution for God (Luke 19:38), as the locus (location, place or plane) of apocalyptic signs (Mark 8:11; Luke 11:16), but mostly as the domain of God or Angels or the spirit in a crudely physical manner. Heaven is “UP,” and identified with the sky, and so Spiritual Phenomena come “down” to men, in rather primitive, cosmological fashion (Matthew 3:16; 28:2; Mark 1:10; 6:41; 7:34; 16:19, Luke 22:43; 9:54, etc.). The logia, on the other hand, give a vastly more sophisticated picture. Jesus does use “ouranos” in the more crudely contemporary and Jewish sense, but the curious thing is that this is almost always to an opponent audience. Most characteristically, and mostly to the disciples, he speaks of “ouranos” in close connection with the Almighty, a presently existing spiritual dimension wherein men are related to God in a very special and intensely personal Way. The chief exception to this lies in Mark, Chapter 13, in some highly questionable apocalyptic intrusions.

The word “aggeles” shows this same discontinuity. In the fourteen occurrences in the editorial material, the angel appears as a three-dimensional creature who can be seen and heard and who ministers to men. The thirteen appearances of “angels” in the logia show Jesus making cryptic references to the possibility of angels taking part in the physical affairs of men (Matthew 26:33), and four times he identifies them as heavenly creatures distinct from God (Luke 16:22; Mark 13:32; Matthew 13:39f; 13:49), but two of these are parables of the eschaton, and the parable of the rich man and Lazarus is completely untypical of Jesus’ teachings. Most typically, the logia present angels as references to the Presence, the Glory, the Judgment of God active among men in decidedly personal, highly sophisticated fashion.

It would now seem justified to say that Jesus’ cosmology is, in its highest expression, discontinuous with that of his contemporaries, and also the authors of the four gospels. One can doubt very seriously if they even understood the cosmology, the high spiritualism of Jesus, the genius who was anti-religion and dead set against all other forms of oppression. They wrote around it for their own purposes and goals.

The canonized gospels contain very little of what Jesus

actually said and did. They were written exclusively by the church to support its religious theology and manufactured doctrines and dogmas for the express purpose of obtaining power and wealth. Yet they do contain truths but we have to extricate them if we are to “see” it. Herein you have the result of some of this. Prove all things is a Command of the Message and so we comply.

You of the Family who diligently study the Entire Message given up to date know more about Jesus now than the authors of the four gospels did and much more than a Pope!

It is clear that Jesus did not think of Satan or a devil or of evil as being or having anything to do with Spirit. That came from religious men not from a Spiritual Genius.

So, in closing, I’ll simply say “Get thee behind me Satan”! I’m healed.

In all love for Unity and Peace,

Your servant and brother,

I Paul.

Within each of you lies the power of your consent to health.  
Grace!

## **27 - On the Theory of Reincarnation**

Greetings to all my sisters and brothers of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in All.

May your life be a full one, Full of glory and power, happiness and peace, and above all may your spirits soar to the seven pillars of the Kingdom time and again.

As you know, the twenty-third law or ordinance is the Law of Incarnation - Karma.

Karma is the arcane symbol of Involution-Evolution.

Karma is the law of causation and interaction between the higher and lower planes to bring about equilibrium between them and gradually raise the spirit. It binds the lower self to the higher, and arises through the union of the will with knowledge of a moral standard involving choice. It estimates the experience of the lower mind and is expressed in effects on the higher plane. It relates to the process underlying spiritual evolution and adjustment upon the higher planes. As the spirit goes forth into the life of experience, so upon each surrounding level the account is squared, as it was, so that each successive stage carries it to its relatively appointed place. This idea underlies all religions, and the Christian who looks for compensation in heaven, or fears punishment in hell, is holding crudely and

unintelligently the truth that what we sow here we reap the result of upon entering the next state. The spiritual laws of cause and effect in the spirit is made to yield just and right results, so that throughout evolution perfect balance between higher and lower is maintained, and the outcome of it all is stored away in the spirit's mind. As long as the lower nature remains, karma is incurred, but when the lower nature is put away, then the "fruits of the spirit" are harvested on the higher planes.

Karma in Sanskrit means "a deed" or one's "fate." In Buddhism and Hinduism it's a person's actions in one reincarnation thought of as determining his fate in the next.

Karma as reincarnation lost its meaning in religion when death lost its, i.e., "The Truth of the Cross," the death of the soul-man and the Incarnation of the spirit-man.

In symbolism the first soul-man, i.e., natural man, was created immortal but not perfect. He sacrificed his immortality for the sake of disobedience and death became man's lot and ruler. Jesus, also called Emmanuel, became the first spirit-man, the first flesh fruit of the Spirit then, i.e., immortal spirit-man or True-man, not through Baptism, but through transfiguration after his great discovery and the Incarnation of the LIGHT. The mass transfiguration or the incarnation of the spirits came at the

Happening of the Cross, i.e., “The Truth of the Cross.” Therefore a regeneration and a restoration took place, not a reincarnation, through the Grace and Mercy and Justice of LIFE and the destiny of man-woman here on W-303 was changed forever.

A Spiritual cloud hangs over the lot of man-woman here on W-303 from Adam to Jesus. (Study Romans.) A cloud the “church” cleverly attempted to dispel by inventing the doctrine of “resurrection” of what is clearly “waste” - LIFE’S condition for “dead vessels.” Yet God, in all his infinite Power, Glory, Wisdom, Justice, Mercy, and above all Grace, held onto the Tree of Life in the Garden - The Cross and its eventual Power and Glory.

For a very long time there have been those who point to the bible to prove their claims of the truth of reincarnation. We will examine this as well as Jesus’ position on the subject, if any. One thing is certain though - no human physical-material body has ever reincarnated. Since LIFE is the only Soul, no soul has ever reincarnated. No spirit has ever reincarnated. So that leaves only one possible unit of the Whole that could possibly have reincarnated - the Mind! We shall examine all of this in the following.

Through the ages there have been many philosophies and theories of the heretofore and the hereafter. Man here

has forever been searching his mind and the world around him for answers to his questions: “Why am I here?” “Why am I like I am?” “Who am I?” “Why am I one thing and another a different thing?” “Where is the justice in the inequities of Life?” The materialist has insisted, “This is all there is.” You are like the tree or the beast. You come into life because the seed was planted. You leave this life if and when life is either accidentally or naturally taken from you. You only live once, enjoy yourself.

Yet a study of what passed for religion back in primitive times shows that man has always had some sort of belief that this life was only part of a whole and not the whole in and of itself. In most philosophies-faiths there have always been a two-fold path, one “up” and one “down” - the happy place for the good, while the rest, the bad, suffer eternal torment. But at death the chance is over, the case is rested.

Religious Christianity has taught that birth is the beginning of life but that death is but a step into our eternal existence which is the real purpose of it all. Life “down here” is only a separation for a future bliss to come “up there.” But this leaves a host of unanswered questions.

The church has tended to envelop itself in a veil of infallibility. The pilgrim of the Way has been warned: “Do not reason! To reason, to think, to question, to analyze is the

path which leads to hell. Believe or be damned.”

We Christian Spiritualists have an answer to all that – Believe blindly and be damned – we will find out.

Let us open-mindedly ask some questions for ourselves, not in criticism of any one theology or theological position, but through an earnest desire to examine both sides and to be able to prove which is The Truth. Have you not wondered:

1. If this life is but the preparation for another to come, how do we account for the inbred desire to live? Why are we not anxious to get into the next life? Even the most rabid Fundamentalist, who believes in the glories of heaven, leaves no stone unturned in trying to heal an illness.
2. How do we account for the seemingly unfinished pattern of individual lives and the constantly progressive pattern of the civilization that man builds?
3. How do we account for the great inequality among persons, while we are taught that all men are created equal? Is God then not a God of Justice and Fairness? Are we all supposed to arrive at the same goal even though we start on different levels? It would appear



that some have a head start, while others begin with a handicap. Some are born with a silver spoon in their mouths, while others are born on the wrong side of the tracks. Some are born with normal healthy minds and bodies, while others are born crippled or blind or with brain damage. Where is the justice?

4. How can it be said that a soul is created at a point in time and then survives the death of the physical body and goes on living forever? Isn't it illogical and unscientific to say that we survive the body but did not pre-exist it, that we have a beginning but no end?

Jesus said, "Ye therefore shall be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect" (Matthew 5:48). In these few words, he unequivocally establishes the Ultimate goal of life. But how can we achieve perfection in the span of life that we experience. Look around you today and see if any one gives evidence of reaching this ultimate in this lifetime. Doesn't it seem somewhat illogical that Jesus would expect us to reach this goal of perfection in one lifetime that begins with birth and ends with death?

And yet he clearly commands, "Ye therefore shall be perfect." If Jesus actually said this, if Jesus meant this seriously (and let's, for the sake of this "theory," agree that he did), then isn't it possible and quite logical that he is

talking about an ultimate goal whose attainment might take many successive existences – perhaps even hundreds, at the rate of which most of us develop and grow. Certainly, the idea of reincarnation gives a credible answer to the questions that most people might logically ask. (Of course we know the truth of the matter from the Message.)

What of the amazing feats of child prodigies? (This is another argument for reincarnation.) Is there any other explanation for Mozart who played a concert on the harpsichord at the age of five and toured Europe at six? Sir William Hamilton learned Hebrew at age three and at thirteen could speak thirteen languages. Is it an accidental grouping of genes that makes a child far in advance of men and women who have slaved for years in the same fields? If so, life seems surely to be whimsical as well as unjust. (Or at least a case can be made along these lines that makes sense whether right or wrong.)

Or is it, as the theory of reincarnation might suggest, that they have been here before, in one manner or another, and bring with them a development gained in another life or lives? The sophisticated intellectual who brushes aside all religious theories in a devotion to the concepts of the Ancient Greek philosophers might be shocked to find that Plato was an out-and-out believer in reincarnation. In his

famous “theory of Reminiscence” he said, “knowledge easily acquired is that which the enduring self had in an earlier life, so that it flows back easily.”

We have all had those occasions of meeting someone and have the strange feeling that we have met them before or of walking into a room and experiencing the strange feeling that we have been there before. Of course these strange phenomena can be brushed aside as hallucinations or clairvoyance or some kind of E.S.P. Many will want to take this recourse. Others may want to press on and see if there is further evidence for reincarnation.

In this communication we are not espousing the cause of reincarnation – you all should know where I Paul stands on the issue by now, but I do want to explore this for the benefit of others who may hold to the theory of reincarnation in this day and age. Yet, keep in mind what I said about the minds earlier for it may very well be the key to the solution of the theory of reincarnation!

We have to ask a question in order to get to the point of the theory. Did Jesus teach reincarnation? We could make a case for it.

We must recognize that all Jesus taught and did is not incorporated into the gospels or any other record, anywhere on earth. The four gospels came into being as the

“remembered influence” of Jesus upon others and that the gospels were not written until years after his death. They wrote about the reports handed down that impressed the most and they created stories about those things most likely for a Messiah to have done and said. The fact that the concept of reincarnation is not mentioned could be explained in either of two ways. Either it was not part of the belief of Jesus, or it was such a generally accepted belief that there was no reason to comment upon it. You can take your choice of possibilities.

It is known today that the theory of reincarnation was a commonly held belief in Jesus’ time. We do not know if the Pharisees held it as they did resurrection, but they probably did not. Sadducees did not believe in resurrection or reincarnation. Jesus does, at times, seem to recognize that reincarnation was a prevailing belief of his times. Yet he did not comment on it although he was courageously outspoken when he felt what prevailed was wrong. It would appear more significant that he said nothing against reincarnation than that he didn’t actually speak in favor of it.

What did Jesus mean in Matthew 11:14 when, speaking of John the Baptist, he said, “This is Elijah, that is to come”? Or again, in Mark 9:11, “They asked him saying, the scribes say that Elijah must come first.” He said, “Elijah indeed

must come first and restoreth all things, and how is it written of the Son of Man, that he should suffer many things and be set at nought? But I say unto you Elijah is come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, even as it is written of him.” It would be hard to state anymore clearly that John the Baptist was the reincarnation of Elijah – if such an Elijah once actually existed and this is Jesus talking!

In Matthew 16:13 we find Jesus asking his disciples, “Some say Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.” In other words “What are the people saying about me?” And they answered in effect, the people are talking among themselves, saying that you are the reincarnation of Elijah or Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. True, Jesus did not accept or reject this information. But isn’t it strange that he did not rebuke them for talking nonsense? No, because they were not, they were simply answering His question with the information they had gleaned from the people.

There is another interesting passage to study in John 9:2, where we read that a man “born blind” was brought to Jesus with the question, “Master, who did sin, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?” If one wanted to analyze this carefully, they would have their eyes opened. Certainly we cannot help but admit that such a question

indicates, at least, a prevailing belief in reincarnation. Now if it were contemplated that a man born blind was being punished because of his sin, then the sin must have been committed in an earlier lifetime. Now note carefully Jesus' answer "Neither did this man sin nor his parents! but that the works of God should be made manifest in him." It would appear that he concedes that both theories are correct or at least reasonable because he did not reject or ridicule them. Actually he simply stated that neither of the theories posed applied in this case. He had a third answer, that the affliction was simply a process of growth for the individual.

Jesus does not openly reject or accept the idea of reincarnation in the New Covenant and it is not even discussed. But in this instance, he introduces another very significant concept which might answer many of man's puzzling questions. Life is an experience of growth. Living as he so often does in the "far country" Man tends to think of life as an opportunity for self-indulgence. Thus his goals are most often in the direction of acquisition of things and the achievement of a placid kind of joy and peace of mind. He often reaches his materialistic goals at the expense of his life, rather than in the expanse of it. So, like the prodigal son, "he comes to know want."

Jesus knew that life is lived from within out, and "the

Kingdom of God is within.” He knew that life is an opportunity to discover our divinity and release our imprisoned splendor. He knew that, as a student enrolls in difficult courses of study so that he can further his education, so man, in his eternal enfoldment, often draws the most challenging experience to him because of the opportunity it affords for personal growth. Thus, in his analysis of the man born blind, he said, “this is not a case of punishment for previous wrongs. This is a case of a man moving on to the next grade ready for the more difficult tests that will lead to greater development – if he can pass the tests.”

But let us not overlook this casual statement of Jesus. It indicates that one should never glibly comment on the shortcomings of another by saying, “Well, it’s the result of wrong thinking, or previous sin.” Judge not according to appearances! The blind, the lame, the unfortunates we find along life’s way could conceivably be further along the way of spiritual unfoldment than their more fortunate brothers and sisters. One may be working out his karma, while another may be taking the tests of a higher level of living. Perhaps only the insight of the Christ can rightly discern.

Religious Christians often tend to think of the theory of reincarnation as a cultish idea that has come out of the thinking of weird religious bands. The truth is that a

majority of the human race believes in one or another of the philosophies relating to reincarnation. It may not be palatable for modern Christian theologians to accept, but it is a matter of recorded church history that primitive religious Christianity entertained the idea of reincarnation as a doctrine of the church all the way up to until the Council of Constantinople in A.D. 553. (See Catholic Encyclopedia, 1909 edition, Volume 10, pages 236-237, Chapter on Re-embodiment as taught through the ages.) This council was, in reality, only the last phase of the violent ten-year conflict brought on by the edict of the Roman Emperor Justinian against the teachings of Father Origen. This was a stormy period in Christian history. Historians refer to Justinian's government as a caesaropapacy - one in which the emperor becomes pope, with no religious background. Justinian ruled the church by imperial law and dictated her theological doctrines. Church doctrines have been pieced together through the centuries like an unfolding mosaic, as conferences and councils and "holy bodies" have developed the religion about Jesus.

Without the stabilizing influence of the whole life concept in Christianity, individuals are led to feel, "Oh well, what's the difference?" Have fun! It is, of course, entirely possible that the loss of the idea of reincarnation and its related law of cause and effect may be the greatest single



reason for the rise of what is called “Western Materialism.”

Within the very church that finally rejected the idea of reincarnation have many believers, among them St. Augustine and St. Francis of Assisi. Add to these the long list of intelligent people in all fields who have endorsed the concept, and you have a mighty convincing argument. There were Cicero, Seneca, Pythagoras, and Plato in early times - more recently, Maeterlinck, Ibsen, Lavater, Schopenhauer, Hume, Goethe, and Emerson, and among the poets, Walt Whitman, Longfellow, Tennyson, Browning, Swineburne, W. E. Henly and Kipling.

Who has not felt with Tennyson:

So, friend, when first I looked upon your face,  
Our thought gave answer each to each, so true -  
Opposed mirrors each reflecting each -  
That though I knew not in what time or place,  
Methought that I had often met with you,  
And either lived in either's mind and speech.

(“Sonnet to Arthur Hallam”)

Some people tackle the theory of reincarnation by asking the question “Look, if I have lived before, why don't I remember it?” The theorists answer, “You do, character is

memory.” They claim character is the distilled essence of your previous experiences. Genius is memory, so it is claimed. The child prodigy reveals a prodigious memory of cumulative development.

All this is most certainly not proof that reincarnation is a fact. I Paul could say there is no proof, one way or the other, here. Man can neither prove it or disprove it – again, it is a matter of faith – what do you think?

In a debate on the subject I Paul could take either side and make a very good case of it.

Prior to the Cross I would take the positive position because it is the only credible explanation of life, from an eternal standpoint. Jesus very definitely taught the Divinity of Man. Man is divine and must eventually – ultimately unfold his potential and achieve the fulfillment of the Christ. Reincarnation would seem to indicate a way in which it could be done.

But there is really nothing imperative about accepting the idea. Whether or not you accept it is a matter of your choice. If it doesn't set well with you don't worry about it. On the other hand, you may occasionally find some puzzling questions or gaps in your life and the theory of reincarnation may well fill those gaps for you and make a little more sense out of your life.

For me, a Bell Ringer in Crete and a member of the House of Urbane have to have some sort of significance and since the physical body cannot reincarnate the only possible solution to such has to be the Mind which is eternal. My current title, I Paul, spiritually interpreted means simply, “the Mind of Paul.” So reincarnation has nothing to do with a body, a soul, a spirit, an animal, a plant and so forth. It’s The Mind that has experienced many experiences and it is the minds that must evolve towards the Ultimate Perfection. You can walk into a room and although you have never been there before, it is quite possible that your mind has!

The important thing is this, man, or more correctly, his mind, has no beginning and therefore no end. So we say in our modernization of the arcane “Man was born to live, not to die.” “Verily I say unto you, if a man keep my word, he shall never see death.” Paul said, “The wages of sin is death.” This is, as we know, the “mistake” of wrong thinking - of thinking in terms of separation from God, of failure to embrace the All-ness of the Supreme Spirit in thought and the Full Measure of Faith. And, most important, it is the “mistake” of not knowing your divinity. All of this seems to be the cause of the ills and dis-ease that befalls the heirs of flesh!

However man-woman is a living spirit. They are not a

body. They have a body. If the body is laid aside this in no way spells the end of man-woman. It simply means that the eternal self moves on with the lower mind united or at least coupled with the higher mind. To be “clothed” according to LIFE’S purpose!

There is a physical body and there is a spiritual body. No man-woman, having put their hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God. The lower mind prior to the cross was a nomad, a forsaken wanderer that could not go home for it had nothing to unite with and without Unity it could achieve no peace. That’s what Paul meant by the wages of sin and what he meant by “be of one mind,” “be one minded,” and so forth. When Paul spoke about being clothed in “that glorious new body” he wasn’t expounding reincarnation - he was talking about the “spirit body” the being “clothed” according to God’s purpose for All in All!

To those religious Christians who hold to the theory of Reincarnation and at the same time believe in the resurrection of the dead sometime in the future, I ask them to think about this seriously. How could both be true? How could either be true? Where is the proof? If one believes they have lived more than one life - ten say - which gets resurrected? What gets resurrected? Will Adam get

resurrected? Will Eve? Will Cain? Since they had no spirit, what really happened to them when they died? The first Adam was made a living being. The second Adam was made a living spirit. This does not mean they were one and the same Adam - they were two entirely and distinct manifestations - illusion and reality. And that's what reincarnation and resurrection are - illusions. The spirit and The Minds are Reality. God, LIFE, then, is Spirit and to be made in its image is to be made a spirit. Spirits incarnate, they do not reincarnate, and they most certainly have no need of resurrection! Immortality is non-resurrectionable! Immortality is non-reincarnationable! Déjà vu is a product of the wandering mind that occurred during that period of time-space between the first Adam and the second Adam on the Cross, dead!

“And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose” this clearly implies resurrection. The question is, if this be true where are those “saints” today? If they were raised, resurrected, did they die again? And if resurrected straight from the grave then they were not off somewhere in a reincarnation process were they? Yes, I Paul believe you religious Christians truly have some very serious thinking to do. And the sooner you get on with it the better off you are going to be.

And for you, my dear brothers and sisters of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT, if you can make any sense whatsoever out of Matthew 27:52-53, I Paul would appreciate your advising me of it. They are, of course, a classic example of an uncontrolled, wild, foolish imagination rushing forward blindly! This is not holy scripture - this is unholy ignorance and a damned lie! Get thee behind me Matthew!

Listen! The study of reincarnation is not profitable to a student of higher thought, i.e., Creative Thought and Creative Imagination. You see, it is not what you and I may have been but what we are now that is the issue.

Jesus tried to urge us to look to the heights of God-Consciousness, to sense a life that is not a matter of time or a collection of things or experiences or even people - to awaken a greater purpose in life than mere existence, to know that life is so much more than that which begins with birth and ends with death. When we know this truth, really know it, then we are free from fear, from anxiety, from the awful resistance toward and grief over death.

There is no doubt about it, Jesus taught that death is not an ultimate, not a goal, not a final experience. Death settles nothing and there is no escape from problems or limitations through its portals. Unfinished business must be carried over in some way, shape or manner. Unfinished problems

must eventually be worked out. Spiritual development, spiritual evolution and “treasures in the heavens,” the Kingdom can never be lost.

For every end there must be a beginning. For every death there must be a new life, a birth. In the longer view, birth and death are two sides of one door, two ways of viewing one experience.

You and I are living and alive in an eternal experience, without beginning and without end. Resolve to live this day and every day as if it were the only day there is – because in fact it is. Yesterday no longer exists, and tomorrow and the days of the future will simply unfold out of the continuous movement out of the existence that is “Now” in its unfoldment. Yes, our day is “Future!”

In time and space “life” and “death” will fade into nothingness. Neither have any reality in that context. Life that is but the prelude to death and death that is but the postlude to life, have their existence only in the consciousness of man-woman. It is true, life is consciousness. Let us work for the consciousness that looks upward for the eternal life, to the fearless and deathless, to the everlasting, to the New Worlds.

In its complete sense, life simply is. Let us accept it, live it, love and rejoice in it. We have all Eternity to achieve that

Ultimate goal of perfection.

The Divinity of man-woman needs no such things as Reincarnation or Resurrection. They are totally unnecessary for the purposes of Eternal Life. Communication One explains this. "See"?

Come, Follow Me in Faith, Hope, Love, Truth, Wisdom, Unity and Peace!

Your brother and your servant,

I Paul.



## 28 - To Have and To Have Not - Your Choice?

Greetings:

My dear sisters and brothers I greet you with a spiritual embrace and pray that the spirit of abundance perches on your shoulder forever and ever and that all your Needs be fulfilled. Now and Forever more.

“Ask and it shall be given you; seek and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: for everyone that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.”

This is a tremendous mystical Truth. The Universe in which we live is strangely and wonderfully accommodating. Because we are all particularizations of the Infinite, because we are all part of this accommodating Universe, asking is tantamount to receiving, seeking is actually finding, and knocking is the opening of the door. True prayer does not reach out to God “Out there” in some far away place in the Universe. You simply get still and realize your unity with the whole.

In the Christian religion there has developed a concept that it is a christian duty to be poor and that poverty is a virtue. This has been a corollary of the concept that wealth and possessions are somehow the evidence of sin and

corruption.

This, of course, is not what Jesus taught. He dealt not with the grace of lack or poverty, but with the grace of Abundance. Study what he said and you must agree that he did not consider riches to be a “mistake.” In fact, he strongly implies that it is a “mistake” to be poor. He indicates that if you are experiencing lack, need, you are not accepting yourself in the fullness of your own unique relationship with the Infinite. The “mistake” is not to know, to recognize your own divinity.

Jesus taught that LIFE is our resource and that it has provided all things for all people. Jesus insisted that there is always abundance to meet every need - and he demonstrated it. In doing so, he was not working magic or evidencing a special dispensation from the Supreme Spirit. He was Proving the Divinity of Man-Woman showing us what we can do when we realize our unity with the whole. The scriptures about Jesus contain some amazing and almost unbelievable evidences of the phenomena of abundance. There was the phenomenal demonstration of feeding five thousand hungry followers. There was a tremendous catch of fish that came after Jesus bade the disciples to drop their nets on the right side of the boat. There was the story of the gold coin in the mouth of a fish

with which to pay the Roman taxes.

It is easy to get lost in quibbling over the details. How did he feed five thousand people with one boy's lunch? How could the disciples make such a great catch after they had fished all night and caught nothing? And who ever heard of getting money out of the mouth of a fish? To use Jesus' own metaphor, let's not "strain out the gnat and swallow the camel."

The feeding of the five thousand is religiously considered one of the great "miracles" of the bible. But what is a "miracle"? In this orderly Universe that is regulated by changeless law, it is inconceivable that natural law can be abrogated. We use the word "supernatural," but what do we mean by this? The supernatural of today becomes the natural of tomorrow! Until comparatively recent times an eclipse of the sun or a comet were supernatural events that struck fear into the hearts of ignorant people. Today they are quite commonly understood and looked forward to as natural periodical events.

Actually, there is no supernatural - only God's natural. There is no miracle, there is only the ever present possibility of laying hold of divine law on higher and higher levels - what we know as phenomena. In a way, it is strange that we should find it difficult to think in terms of an invisible

substance that is capable of manifesting itself in form and shape to fill a particular need. Consider a moment when the rain starts coming down. The air is filled with drops of water that flood the city yards and run in torrents in the gutters. Where was all this water moments before the rain came? It was Present all the time in unprecipitated moisture in the atmosphere. Before our very eyes the invisible became visible! A miracle? No, a perfectly natural phenomenon with an explanation that most of us have come to accept without question.

The important lesson in the miracle stories in scripture is that we live in a Universe that is opulent, limitless, and accommodating and also that men exaggerate and lie! The Universe will manifest for us almost exactly what we have the consciousness to encompass. There is a legitimate, royal abundance for every living spirit-filled being. We live and move and have our being in the Universe. Of course, at this point, it may be non-material, spiritual substance. It is an energy potential that requires mental and material precipitations.

However, the miracle of abundance is not the multiplication of loaves of bread, nor the specific filling of a cruse with oil, nor the hauling in of a tremendous catch of fish. The phenomena is the all-sufficiency and ever-

availability of Infinite substance. This was Jesus' great idea: That the Kingdom of God is an opulent kingdom of substance, of creative ideas. And the supply to meet our demands is right where we are - and what we need!

In the story of the miraculous feeding, Jesus told the people to sit down and then he "looked up to the heavens and gave Thanks." Right away we may find ourselves "straining out the gnat," for we return to the old concept that heaven is somewhere "up there." It would seem that Jesus was looking up into the skies and saying, "God you have abundance up there, we need some of it down here." But that isn't what is implied at all. He looked away from the appearance of lack and emptiness, from the human feeling that "you cannot possibly feed all these people with one boy's lunch." He closed his eyes to the lack and opened his spiritual eyes to abundance.

There is no absence of God in the Universe, and there is no shortage of God. The only lack in life is the thought of lack. You are always as rich as you think you are, and the only poverty is of the spirit.

Jesus is often described as being poor. The truth is he made himself poor. Yet he was welcomed into the homes of both rich and the poor all over Palestine. He dressed as a rabbi and his clothing was so fine that the soldiers at the

Cross cast lots for his seamless robe. He could go forth without script or purse because he went back of money to the idea it represents and dealt with substance in the realm of ideas. He had discovered the key to releasing the tremendous power potential within him. He found the supernatural natural.

Let us not lose sight of the great idea that Jesus is unfolding - that man is an integral part of an opulent Universe. All we need to do is "ask" in the Full Measure of Faith, believing that we will receive, and we shall receive. Asking under these conditions is receiving. The very moment we stake our claim in Infinite Mind, that which we encompass is ours, along with the creative ability to shape it in the form of our material needs.

We should not hesitate to ask largely. LIFE can give much as easily as it can give little. It's not the amount that's asked for, it's what is asked for that counts.

It takes no more effort for the law of mathematics to add two million and two million to get four million, than to add two plus two to get four. If every person in this world would take a pencil and paper and write down the problem, two plus two equals four, there would be no strain on the principle, simply because it is principle.

There is no more substance in a million dollars than in

a penny, for there is no quantity in spirit. What is a million dollars? To answer the question, we have to resort to quantity. It is six zeros after a one, or large quantities of bills, or the money to purchase so many diamonds. We still haven't defined a million dollars. It is substance that has been formed and shaped into a quantity, but the quantity is in our mind. We formed it, we shaped it, we called it a million dollars. We could have called it a penny and called the penny a million dollars. Each is an evidence of substance. Man forms and shapes the substance according to his needs, according to his faith. And that's part of what his faith encompasses: the perceiving power of the mind and the ability to form and shape substance.

Looking at it in this way the phenomenon begins to be more credible. Here comes a boy with five loaves and two fishes. They represent a formation of substance. There is not enough food in his lunch bag to feed five thousand people, but there is enough substance there, for there is no quantity in substance. If you think of lunch in terms of crystallization of substance as bread and fish, there is not enough. Think of it as an evidence or focal point of limitless spirit substance and there is abundance. The boy's lunch then could be a symbol of lack or abundance, depending upon the attitude of Jesus, "And he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake and gave

the loaves to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes. And they all ate, and were filled . . .” In others words, he looked away from the appearance of lack and gave thanks for abundance. He blessed what he had, for it was substance. The Power of blessing is not reserved for holy places or for Religious leaders or specifically ordained persons. It is an act of tremendous possibilities that should be developed by everyone. Blessing is an attitude of mind in which one may see the oak tree inside the acorn, and the man of God inside the new born babe. Such an attitude lays hold of that to which it is applied on the highest level.

LIFE is the source of a steady stream of substance, and you are a tributary of that stream, a channel of expression. Blessing the substance increases its flow. If your money supply is low, or your purse feels empty, take it in your hands and bless it. See it filled with the living substance ready to become manifest. As you prepare your meals bless the food with the thought of spiritual substance. When you get dressed in the morning, bless your garments, and realize that you are being constantly clothed with LIFE’S Substance. The more conscious you become of the presence of the living substance, the more it will manifest itself for you and the richer will be the common good of all. Identify yourself with substance and you will soon begin to rejoice in the ever-present bounty of LIFE.



Whatever you have, no matter how seemingly inadequate, bless it. Even if you have no money, no food, bless your hands, your feet, your skills, your friends, the air you breathe, the sun that brings light, and especially your minds. Bless everything, and your life will be blessed with riches heretofore undreamed of.

When Jesus blessed the five loaves and two fishes, he subjected this evidence of substance to a ray as penetrating as any known to mankind. The symbols of bread and fish were still intact, but they were spiritually expanded far beyond the size indicated by their intrinsic worth.

We are told that Jesus “broke the bread.” This is a subtle and yet all-important clue to the phenomenon. To break the bread is to completely get the attention completely away from the symbol and place it on the substance in back of the symbol. This is the break-through that ties together the fact of human need and the Truth of all-sufficient supply. Though the five loaves and two fishes materially represent an adequate lunch for one young boy, they wouldn’t go far in meeting the needs of five thousand people. As long as they remained intact, the doubting mind could always say, “you might as well face the facts – there is just not enough to go around.” Jesus broke them into small pieces. In mind then, the substance was broken up into its

invisible atomic components. Thus, when “broken,” meager supply was no longer simply loaves and fishes – it was all sufficient substance.

What is bread? Where does it come from? We know man forms bread from the wheat of the field, and that the wheat has grown from a tiny seed through the phenomena of growth. Who can understand the mystical processes of nature whereby a tiny seed can draw upon the Universe for all that it needs to fulfill itself in growth. And if the seed can accomplish this phenomenon, why not man? Jesus commented on this very thing. “If God so clothed the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is cast in the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?”

What is lack? Is it not simply an absence of faith in the phenomena of abundance? Even where someone has an empty pocketbook, the trees are still drawing substance out of the air and the ground, the grass is green and the birds are clothed. You cannot really be stranded in a Universe that is so accommodating. This is what Jesus was talking about.

In other words, lack is simply a state of consciousness in man-woman. The empty pocketbook may spell poverty to man, but it is only because he has lost sight of the Universal substance back of its outer symbol. If God is, then substance is, whether we see it or not. One plus one equals

two - even if we do not use the figures to express the fact. Some people can work out simple arithmetic in their head. They need no pencil or paper or adding machine. Jesus went forth without script or purse for he had “meat to eat that ye know not” (John 4:32). He looked up to heaven. He looked away from the seeming absence of the symbol to the underlying substance, the resource, the Universal essence. He turned to principle.

We have been conditioned to think in terms of forms and shapes, of dollars and cents. In one account, Phillip, the disciple, said it would require two hundred shillings to buy bread for the multitude. A practical evaluation, but also a self-limiting one! Such an evaluation always raises a barrier of money and of time and of the means to get the supplies from the supplier to the customer. Paul points to a fundamental in divine law when he says, “And my God shall supply every need of yours according to his riches . . .” (Philippians 4:19.) But God cannot supply lack! Lack is not a condition, but an attitude of mind. An empty wallet is just a need to be filled. But the fear of an empty wallet or worry about it spells the thought of lack.

Lack is really an illusion. It is the acceptance of the appearance as being real. Lack is my saying that because I do not have a pencil to write “two plus two equals four,” I

cannot add the figures. But the principle is true, nevertheless. LIFE is substance and substance is omnipresent whether or not man provides the consciousness through which it may manifest.

A wealthy man may fall asleep and dream that he is poor. In the dream he has all the experiences and feelings of poverty, but it is still only a dream. Finally he awakens and he is wealthy again. The only attainment involved in this frightening experience is the awakening. In a very real sense, man's need, in the face of apparent lack, is to awaken and realize that he is always in the opulent sea of substance. "Awake thou that sleepest . . . And Christ shall come upon thee."

"The Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." Your gift of abundance is ready for you. Awaken from the illusion of lack. Lift up your eyes. Stop seeing empty wallets, unpaid bills, unemployment, or lack of opportunity. Look away from all this and know that you are living and alive in an opulent sea of substance. There is supply for you, right now, if you can only accept it.

When we talk about the "gift" of abundance, we are not implying that the demonstration of your good must come in some phenomenal manner. Not at all. The gift is in the principle, not in any magical or miraculous mode of

expression. For instance, the miracle of the electromagnetic crane is the secret of electricity and the magnetic coil. When you know the secret the supernatural becomes natural and the miracle becomes common place.

The gift is in the availability of substance, not particularly in the way it manifests. When Jesus was confronted with the need to pay the Roman tax, he simply told Peter to go fishing, and that he would find a gold coin in the fish. Peter did as he was told and he found the coin in the fish's mouth and used it to pay the tax. It is too bad that this story has been related so literally, since there is an increase in the "credibility gap" for the intellect. Actually, when we know the idiom, there is nothing unusual about the story at all. What was more natural than for Peter who was a fisherman, to go fishing, market the fish, and pay the tax with the proceeds. This is exactly what the story says idiomatically.

In our west, the cattlemen talk about a steer being worth "forty dollars on the hoof." In the orient, they talk about an ox having "twenty gold pieces in his horn." And in the Middle East, we find this expression among fishermen: "The fish had a gold coin in his mouth." In every case, these are figures of speech referring to ultimate market place price to be gained from the sale of the product.

Jesus is teaching the lesson that when you have a need, the answer is right where you are. The gift may not be in the way it manifests, but in the ever-availability of ideas, of guidance, of all things working together for good. You may be guided to go hunting, or to get a job, or to “break the loaves and fishes.” But there is abundance for you – if you will but accept it and exert the effort and supply the Action! We may wonder why some people have so much hardship, whereas for others everything seems a breeze, easy. The rationalization from the confused Religion about Jesus is that the poor will be rewarded in some future heaven. Jesus puts it very simply, “For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.” This is not as difficult to understand, as at first it might seem. He is saying “Hold your glass under the running waters of abundance. The empty glass or cup is filled to running over, if it is held upside down, not only will it not be filled, but anything it had in it is poured out.”

In this beautifully accommodating Universe, if you have the consciousness of abundance – if you think rich – feel rich, you will claim riches and accept abundance and your cup will be filled! However, if you feel you are discriminated against – that there are no opportunities available, that no one wants you, needs you, that you are

poor and insufficient – your cup is turned upside down. All the wealth in the Universe cannot help you, and you constantly lose everything you seem momentarily to gain, you’re shoveling sand against the tide. Understanding this Truth – much as we resist the thought – “The rich do get richer and poor do get poorer.” We may desire to change this principle, but it is Universal law. You may not like all the implications of gravity, but you can’t change it. You can only be mighty careful that you do not step off very high places. The gift, the phenomenon of abundance, works through your consciousness. LIFE and LIGHT can do no more for you than can be done through you. God is not going to do for you what you are capable of doing for yourself! Yes, the gift of abundance works through your consciousness your attitude, your experience, your self-evaluation, your need, and your desire. And you must come to love yourself for without this very primary foundation, not only the gift of abundance will elude you but the grace of LIFE will not befall you.

“Son, thou art ever with me and all that is mine is thine.” The degree, or form, or shape of the manifestation of “all that is mine is thine” depends upon your Faith, your Ability, your vision and your Action to accept the opulence of abundance! The Law is, “It is your Father’s good pleasure to give you the Kingdom” (Luke 12:32). LIFE is Sufficiency –

all sufficiency, your instant, constant, abundant supply. But you will experience only that which you can take into your consciousness and Act upon and possibly even improve upon through Creative Thought and Creative Imagination. Thus any limitation must be a limitation in thought, in the measure of your Faith, in the height of your hope. The abundance of the Universe is yours if you can “see” it and see yourself using it.

The intellect of man-woman, the skeptical part of our nature stands in our way more than we realize. We are prone to say, “after all you must be practical.” If five thousand people are sitting on a mountain side out in the wilderness and all you have is two fish and five loaves of bread on hand, many are just not going to be fed. Yet, many millions of human beings claim they did get fed.

Again, let us caution you not to get lost in the mechanics. The phenomenon is the abundance of LIFE in ideas, in terms of ways where there seems to be no way. In terms of ideas, it's the same as I Paul have practiced for quite some time, i.e., I eat when I don't eat and I sleep when I don't sleep! You know, it really doesn't matter how the multitudes were fed, or if they were fed. All that counts to us in this communication is that the abundance of the great supplier is, to the adept, manifest where it is needed, when



it is needed and in the amounts when it is Needed!

I will leave you with one question though for you to ponder about the story of the feeding of the multitudes. It says there were twelve baskets of food left over! Now I ask you - where did these baskets come from? Were they brought to the mountain side empty? Today we take for granted many things that come out of the phenomena of abundance which, incidentally, is tied closely to the Ordinance of Reciprocity. The electricity that we use in so many, many ways and which we take oh so for granted and which has been around since time immemorial and took mankind so long to learn how to use it.

When rubber was practically impossible to get during the Second World War we discovered synthetics to replace it along with such things as nylon and rayon to replace silk and the whole new world of the synthetics were opened up with superior new products to the originals.

The basic needs for mankind here on this earth are the same as they were in the arrival of man here: Food and Water. There are terrible famines on this earth right now. There is hunger here in the United States even of all places. We are fast polluting our water supplies and worse we are polluting the oceans which could provide this earth with enough food to outlast the human race. Still, some scientists

tell us that if we do not do something about all of this and the population explosion man could very well become an extinct species here from starvation and thirst if a nuclear war doesn't do the job first.

What is needed is new ideas, Creative Thought and Creative Imagination to find new techniques to solve, not only food and water problems of the future but a way in which nuclear war can be averted. When such ideas and discoveries are made, and they will be, for they must, if LIFE has any interest in its Creation, and he has to, won't that be evidence of the phenomena of abundance? Certainly! The Phenomenon is not only the availability of the supply but the New Ideas and New Discoveries that will abundantly increase the supply. The phenomena, the gift of abundance that Jesus also discovered needs to be rediscovered by modern man and in many ways it is. Fish Farming, high protein grains and the like are fast moving out of their experimental stages. Israel has shown the way to convert the deserts of the world into lush farming lands but this materialistic world of ours is not yet pressed hard enough to invest the vast billions of dollars necessary to bring such a vast idea into reality in places like Africa, China and the Middle East. So the Abundance that could be lies dormant not a case of us waiting for the Supreme Spirit to provide us with it!

“Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.” There has to be a secret hidden in there somewhere. Someday soon we are going to discover it. Be Patient. Understand that the important thing is - since substance is - opulent and limitless and everywhere present, and in some instances, so visible that it has become invisible, is Faith and the Full Measure of it - the Great Phenomena bringer.

Faith is the ability to perceive substance, to draw it forth, to form it and to shape it into what we Need. I Paul said, “Stir up the gift of God that is in thee.” We need to stir up and fill up our Faith, so that we are in Spiritual Unity with the Whole, so that all our minds can be channels for great ideas and discoveries, so we can pin-point the substance, first in the form of ideas, guidance, and the Creative skills of our minds and hands, and second, as the outward manifestation of the means of exchange, the money to do what is Needed to be done.

The place to overcome lack - unemployment, financial disaster, need, is in the minds, and the attitude of the lower mind.

The person who “hath not,” who has a consciousness of limitation, a quitter, whose cup is upside down under the tap, will always have hardship in “hard-times.” This Earth

owes you nothing - you owe it everything!

In the New Beginning now in its sunrise the Mind of Christ will become manifest all through the Universe and the rule will be prosperity and health for all of mankind everywhere. The Spirit of Prosperity will settle over the Earth, the harbinger of Unity and Peace, the forerunners of the New Worlds. The principles of the Universal Substance will be made known and want will disappear from the face of this Earth and all Needs will be fulfilled. Utopia? Pie in the Sky? No! And the reason I Paul says no is simply because The Will that wills above All Wills, the Mind of Christ, is for the Well-Being of Man-Woman of the ALL in ALL! In knowing this to be the Truth predicting the future is a very simple matter.

“A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump” - I Paul, I Corinthians 5:6. One life that bears witness to the Truth and Acts upon it righteously can quicken the consciousness of all those they come in contact with and this quickening will spread over all the Earth. You exert the effort - leave the results to us! Yes, it's Your Choice - To Have or Have Not.

In an Abundance of Love your brother and servant,

I Paul.

## **29 - Reason Will Always Strip Away Illusions. We Need to “See” Everything and Guess at Nothing.**

### **Action Is the Way.**

Greetings to all my brothers and sisters who are servants of LIFE and adherents to the Mind of Christ.

It's alright to value theory but not at the expense of practice!

We all realize that we are living out our lives here in an age of discovery. Hardly a day passes without a report of a new wonder drug, a new cure, a new technique, a new process of doing something better, and so forth. The very pace of scientific and technological discovery is amazing. Mankind's total body of knowledge is doubling at a rate of about five years, almost unbelievable. This is a tribute to man's thinking, both creatively and imaginably. It is also a fulfillment of Jesus' promise that we would do greater things than he himself had done. This is a tribute to mankind's thinking, his curiosity, his ability to throw off the shackles of his Religions' attempt to suppress knowledge and his relentless quest for understanding.

LIFE'S marvelous gift to man is the Power of thought, through which he can incorporate into his consciousness

the Mind of the Supreme Spirit.

It is important for us to realize and recognize that all discoveries in the world around us are really self-discoveries and rediscoveries. We do not create the growing body of knowledge. We are simply gaining insights into that which has always been. Nothing has really changed in the Universe except the thinking of man. Learning is simply finding out what you already know. Doing is demonstrating finally that you know it. Mankind finally has begun to open his eyes and see the things so visible in the Universe that man in his rushing forward blindly rendered them invisible.

Locked deep inside the super-consciousness of all of us are the answers and the solutions to all the problems and the secret of all the mysteries that we can ever face. Man is a thinking being. “Man” in ancient Sanskrit means “to think.” In Lumerian it means “divine mind.” Through thinking, man-woman has the possibility of knowing the Supreme Spirit and expressing the Wisdom of Divine Man. This is extremely important because although our world of today is full of knowledge, it is largely empty of Wisdom. Man is the greatest concentration of divine energies in the Universe – Body, Psyche, Pneuma! He is the greatest natural resource. And the world of possibilities within man-woman is, and shall remain, the great frontier!

Jesus was the Great Discoverer of all time among men born on this Earth. He crossed the Frontier of the Mind and discovered a New World within himself. He realized that man-woman have the great Responsibility of keeping their Minds fixed on the Omniscience One, LIFE, so that the Kingdom of innate possibilities can unfold into expression. He realized that the mind is the bridge between man and the Infinite and that the important element in worship is not fervency and feeling, but our thoughts and attitudes.

Jesus taught the most articulate and practical outline of metaphysical, Spiritual, Esoteric Truth known to man, here on W-303. The object is not so much man-woman in general as you in particular. The technique is not theology or symbolism, but the molding power of your own thinking.

“Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savor, wherewith shall it be salted? It is therefore good for nothing but to be cut out and trodden under foot of men.” As we know Jesus was a revolutionary and was contemplating a violent one. He wanted to set his world on fire, to change the old order, and to establish the Kingdom of Righteousness here on earth. However, he changed his mind after his great discovery and opted for a Spiritual Revolution. He lost his desire for overthrowing the rulers but he meant to put an end to the National Religion and

replace it with Spiritualism. That's what a Spiritual Revolution is for. His object was to change minds. To change people's thoughts. He did most of his teaching to his disciples and followers telling them that great numbers were not now needed to change the world order of his day. Even as it takes only a pinch of salt to change the taste of food, so a handful of dedicated adepts can change the face and the consciousness of this Earth.

“And ye shall chase your enemies, and they shall fall before you by the sword. And five of you shall chase a hundred, and a hundred of you will chase ten thousand, and your enemies shall fall before you by the sword.” (Leviticus 26:7, 8.) Jesus taught that the enemies are the adverse attitudes and beliefs in the world and the sword is the word of Truth. What Jesus was saying to his followers was “You are radiating centers of the Truth in the world, but be perfectly sure that your awareness of the Truth is dynamic and not static.” Your knowledge of Truth must first lead to self-knowledge and then to its wise application. In your study of the Truth, remember this: With all your getting get Understanding. If you collect Truth like you collect facts, fill your notebooks with pages of notes, fill your library with books that don't matter, cover your desk with Communications you don't read and study, then certainly you should expect the salt to lose its savor. The reference to



salt without savor being cast under foot is to the salt, flat and lifeless, that was gathered at Lake Asphaltites and put on the floor of the Temple to prevent slipping in wet weather. Salt, in and of itself, has no nutritional value. Its value is in seasoning food and exciting the taste buds. The Roman legions in foreign lands received much of their pay in salt. Many otherwise sincere students of the Way to “the Way” are over-read in matters that don’t matter and underdone in those things that do.

Jesus challenges you, the initiates, to accept the responsibility of bringing the spiritual leaven of Truth to the four corners of this Earth. If you who believe in the Truth, the Message of I Paul, the three Omni’s and the divinity of man-woman do not Act as if you believe it all, then what hope is there for the Message and the World? Your respect, your Recognition, your devotion, your Presence and your Action are all necessary components vital to the ushering in of the Spiritual Age here.

When you are well seasoned with the salt of Truth, your own body of knowledge suddenly reveals a new dimension. The principle of Relativity is made practical in a new concept of Unitivity! You will come to see that even as the subatomic particle has no existence outside of the electromagnetic field that holds the atom together, but is the field expressing

as a particle, so man has no existence outside of LIFE, but is the activity of LIFE expressing as a man-woman! All your scientific facts suddenly become alive, they become dynamic potencies. And with the keener insight, you become a seasoning influence in the world. You become a pace maker, a path finder, a Peacemaker!

“Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the sons (daughters) of God.”

This is an important key to the potential LIFE and LIGHT Power and Wisdom in man-woman. Mankind is a spiritual being - a true child of God in spirit - but he only becomes this in fact and expression when he is attuned to the infinite and expresses his LIFE potential of Love, Truth, Unity and Peace. This calls for much meditation, fasting and prayer, the diligent conditioning of the mind to the accepting and releasement of the dynamic LIFE potential within.

Mankind here, has so long functioned on the level of his humanity, it is difficult for him to acknowledge anything greater in himself. He may say he believes in LIFE, but it's a Spirit “out-there” to whom he gives prayerful obeisance. He really doesn't expect any divine intervention in human needs, because he really doesn't believe in LIFE in himself. This is why there is such an urgent need for Jesus'

## Revelation of the Divinity of Man.

The Peace we desire, need and deserve on this Earth is that which “passeth understanding.” It cannot come by treaties and/or agreements, or by wars and boundary lines. These have all failed, time and again. Peace can only come when men and women become receptive to it and become peacemakers in the process of expressing it from within. Now there is an important key in this Beatitude that must not go unnoticed. The peacemakers are not only called sons of God, that is the result that comes later. The first step is - they must call themselves sons of God and/or daughters of God. This is the Action step - call yourself a child of God. Affirm for yourself that you are divine in potential. Declare for yourself - “I am a spiritual being with the potential for Peace and harmony and an ease-of-minds and overcoming within me at all times. I am a radiating center of divine light, life and wisdom.” In this manner we keep the light turned on, never off, for when the light is off, “hidden under a bushel” we cannot activate the Mind of LIGHT.

Call yourself a child of LIFE and you become a True Peacemaker. It is not a thing you have to do in the world around you. In the most invisible way the world around you will change when you change. An electric light doesn't have to go out into the room to sweep the darkness away. When

the light is turned on, the light radiates and the darkness vanishes. It's as simple as that – but it is not easy!

So let us, the Family, work to build this Beatitude into our Consciousness so that we may take our rightful place on this Earth as bringers of Light rather than as purveyors of darkness. “Ye are the Light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle and put it under a bushel, but on a candle stick: and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

We really do not know much about light. The scientists say it is some kind of an “electromagnetic Phenomenon,” but then reiterate they really do not know what it is, but this earth is full of theories about it. The scientists say that light waves travel the ninety-three million miles from the sun to the earth in seven minutes, bringing life and light to all. We still do not know too much about the LIFE potential in man either, outside of what Jesus displayed and declared that we could emulate.

Since this emulation has not materialized nor been made manifest by anyone over the last near two thousand years we have to think in terms of either we have not clearly understood the teachings of the master or the brief accounts

of his life and his feats have been most greatly exaggerated or someone has lied to us. I Paul believes the Message has covered this quite thoroughly enough for us to come to the conclusion that the problem lies mainly with us and not with Jesus. And that “us,” being editorial, includes the authors of the gospels!

“The light that lighteth every man-woman coming into this earth” is an apt description of the birth and the receiving of the Spirit at that moment. The “coming into” or the “coming” aptly defines the journey of the mind – that which is sent out and later “called-back” by the two Spirits named Wisdom and Soul. This completely explains Predestination, Incarnation, Involution, Creation, Man’s Divinity, Inheritance, Innateness, Life and his mission and Goal. Prepare, Follow, Come.

We see that “light” in the life, love, joy and radiance in others when we understand and Recognize it in ourselves. Let him who has eyes see! Within the very nature of man-woman there is a stored-up substance, abundance, and sufficiency of divine love and energy, which when released by our own Action lights up the Way to “the Way” for us and those we encounter throughout our earthly lives.

Yet, at times, the Light of these truths give particular offense to some people who are accustomed to darkness.

Offering them Light is like offering a ray of sunshine into a nest of owls - it only hurts their eyes and causes them to squawk!

Paul said, “Stir up the gift of LIFE, which is in you.” And that was really the True Mission of Jesus as he came to understand his great discovery. We have an abundance of Gifts: Life, minds, Energy, Love, Wisdom, Power, Truth, spirit, Mind of Christ, and so forth. And in addition we have individualized gifts such as the gift of teaching, prophecy, administration, healing, and so forth.

Jesus wanted us to become aware of this “Light-Energy” within us, so that we could let it out and allow it to shine. It was Jesus who informed us that it was God’s Will that we have Life and it in abundance.

It was Paul who has taught us about this abundance. He has told us that Grace, although unfathomable, is Divine Adequacy. It is the fullness of Adequacy to meet all our needs, that holds life together for us, who follow the Way. Grace is the secret of mental health for such, its light, its power, its courage, its depth, its height, its width. “I can do all things through Christ which strengthens me” - “My grace is sufficient for you.”

“Sufficient” means enough of fullness, the modern word is “efficient.” Sufficiency means personal power to be

efficient. Efficiency is playing the keyboard, sufficiency is keeping a song in one's heart. Sufficiency means power to be skillful, artful - it is strength to use the tools - it is power by which techniques work. Efficiency is building the boat; sufficiency is the ability of the river and sea to float it. This experience of the resources of the Eternal gives us mental capacity and makes me a dependable receiver-sender. "A Sense of Peace" sums up a righteous person's life with evidence of "mistakes" forgiven and overcome, via the Ordinance of Formative Causation. Peace of minds expressed in calm and courage, reveals much of one's combined mental dependability. Unsure, jittery, fearsome and frustrated people can help no one else. Peace may be translated "harmony." Harmony with one's being is integrity - harmony with life itself is gratitude and Recognition - harmony with others is brother-sisterhood - harmony with LIFE and LIGHT is Faith, Hope, Love, Truth (Freedom), Wisdom, Unity and Peace. It is being whole in its highest sense here and Now! Harmony is the ability to live with nature and the Natural Law as well as living with spirit and the Physical Law, instead of in spite of them! And right there, in that one sentence above you have the answer to all of the ills of this Earth of ours. All this adds up to the meaning of Peace. It is the gift of LIGHT. To make available Peace and harmony is the Christ Way of Reconciliation.

Mental peace is first of all a spiritual matter. “What are you afraid of?” This last question is the business of Spiritualism. At the center of, the “Monad” of, all mental difficulties is fear (in an otherwise sound, sober mind). The answer to fear is Faith, Love, Trust, Knowledge and understanding of oneself and the Message of I Paul.

“The Sense of Freedom” means deliverance from all that enslaves. Deliverance from all habits that defeat, evil or otherwise, from impure and unworthy acts that depress and rile our consciences, from mistakes and “mistakes” and foolishnesses that destroys one’s Life. Psychiatry and Psychology at best are only methods of analysis, techniques and machinery. One cause of Grace is to provide power to make such machinery work – operate – “the enduring, not ourselves, which makes for Righteousness.”

Too many people yearn and struggle for mental health and Freedom, yearn and struggle and never find, simply because they have not known the profound experience of the Activated Mind of Christ within them. If a person does not experience that they can never be Truly Free and Truly dependable at the highest level attainable nor a True Christian Spiritualist.

“The Sense of Purpose” is felt by a person who believes unshakenly that they are inside LIFE’S purpose for their Life



according to the Mind of Christ, which brings a sense of direction, the assurance of belonging to the permanent scheme of things, the conviction that they are being guided, not so much by what they hold but by who or what holds them (for I Paul, what was once managed from below, is now controlled from above). Without this assurance of purpose, vital, vigorous, vibrant living is impossible, as impossible as expecting a gas operating engine to run without fuel. The Realization that one is living inside the purpose of LIFE for their Life it can be counted upon to hold, to steady, to enlighten, and to empower them to great change and higher levels of consciousness. The LIGHT of LIFE never promises resources outside this promise that Jesus himself gave to all “that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father, in my name, he may give it you.” In my name means “inside the purpose.” The promise is not that it will provide what one wants but what one needs to fulfill that purpose. Nothing is so impressive in this life as the person who Obeys and Follows the Mind of Christ.

Jesus could not abide selfishness. He was addressing this “mistake” in his “saying” about the city on the side of a hill, the light hidden under a bushel and his reference to a house (Matthew 5:14-15). Sometimes poor people who could not afford oil or fuel for their lamps had to depend on their neighbors for light or they sat in the darkness waiting

for another family to share “the house” with them and share their light with them. But others would rather sit in the darkness than share their light with others. Some would hide their light “under a bushel” a metaphor of Jesus that meant they would screen their light and keep it for their own use only. Jesus is telling us through this example that you cannot hide your spirituality, your Light nor the LIGHT!

Students of Truth are sometimes embarrassed by their preoccupation with the Message of I Paul - with their Spiritual endeavors and are therefore too ashamed to share this Truth with their families, their loved ones and their neighbors. On the other hand, others through their over-zealousness to spread the Truth often antagonize those they are attempting to pass the Truth onto. A happy and congenial medium needs to be found by each and everyone of us if we are to be successful in our teaching of the Truth and the spreading of the Message of I Paul.

In both cases the solution is to allow “your light to shine.” You don’t need to put all of the Truth into words. Many times “Action speaks louder than words” and nobody demonstrated that more than did Jesus! And he expected that we would do the same. This places the emphasis where it belongs - “Doing” - rather than Being!

For every spiritual concept that excites you, get still and

reflect upon it or meditate upon it, until something tangible “happens” to you! And if you persevere, it will. This is the Way to strip away illusions and eliminate all the guess work. Becoming your own witness is the fulfilling of “Prove all things”! But understand very clearly that becoming your own witness entails hard, consistent work on your part. When you study the Message and you read something that seems strangely familiar, something that is inspiring and unforgettable and powerful, it is because the words have stirred up an awareness of spiritual depth and height within yourself. These are the words on paper that belong in your mind for they are for you, the Creative ones! The very ones that have the potential of assisting you in Activating the Mind of Christ.

The beautiful thing about the Message is, that different sets of words work differently for different individuals, and it does so by design, not chance!

It is the releasement and the “Recognition” of this innate potential that is the object of your study. The words of the Teacher, the Spirit Guide, the Message, are not only the object of your questing, but the means to the end of a personal search of the Truth!

A person who has a compulsion to introduce the Truth to others may have a difficult time in making it work in their

own life. This is not unusual. I Paul confessed to this very problem when he said although he knew the Truth and the Way to “the Way” he often did things he knew he shouldn’t do and let the things he should do go by. We have, in the Message a large, no, a tremendous amount of facts about Truth. Yet some simply cannot “put it all together” and enter into the Promised Land of the Spirit while in the flesh. The reason is still the same as it was yesterday and today and will most likely be the same tomorrow – “self” and the refusal to follow the directions exactly as given. Until you get honestly and sincerely sick of “self” you simply will not advance spiritually – and until you “slay it,” “bury it” and walk away from it and never again resurrect it you will never be Fully Human nor Fully Spiritual! There is no excuse for not slaying “self” and there is Everything to gain by doing so. “You exert the effort called for and we will supply the results.” Can that promise be made any clearer, any simpler? I Paul thinks not.

“Ye are the Light of the Earth.” Isn’t that a fantastic thought? The Light of the world is the very spirit of Truth! The very thing you all have been searching for. You are the very expression of LIFE and LIGHT, so there is no place where it is more present than where you are! And there is no one any more privileged than you to spread that light. Let your light shine Now!

In Love and Peace for Sufficiency!

Your brother and servant,

I Paul.

## **30 - Your Thoughts Are Your Life and Your Life Changes, at Each New Level of Consciousness That You Attain To.**

**“IF!”**

Greetings,

I Paul, a servant of LIFE and LIGHT, called to be a medium and trained to be a Spirit Guide, according to the flesh, for the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL, concerning the Message of Paul, the Book of Life, and the Book of The Two Ways, which we have received from Jesus, Paul, James and Jesse, for the most part and by whom we have received guidance, love, truth, knowledge, understanding, wisdom and Grace for our Obedience to the Mind of Christ and our devotion and unfailing perseverance in many trials, and tribulations and illnesses. I thank the Spirits for my courage and determination and for all of you of the Family who have made it all much more than worthwhile. I long to spend time with all of you, that I might impart unto you some spiritual insight or gift, to the end that you may be established. I am in debt to all of you who have persevered with me through your own trials and tribulations and travails. May the light that lighteth shine from within you, in your every word, act and deed and may you forever hold to the Good, the Right and the True. I love

you all and I pray that the grace of the Supreme Spirit be with all and always and in all ways.

The “life” in me is LIFE’S.

The “light” in me is LIGHT’S.

The “word” in me is MIND.

The “will” in me is the Mind of Christ.

And so is it with all of you. Know this and act accordingly and your Well-Being will manifest itself. Is this not the Promise of the Message? You supply the effort and we will give the results! That’s really not a bad deal.

“Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets, I am not come to destroy, but fulfill. For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot and one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled.”

A nonconformist, an individual thinker, is always dangerous and feared. The Sanhedrin were terribly upset by the upstart from Galilee, Jesus of Nazareth, who dared to by-pass form and ritual and temporal rules of worship and deal only with the plain Truth. They could not understand this Jesus who taught and acted with authority and not as the Pharisees, Sadducees and Scribes. How could this Jesus be so bold as to declare that the Truth came from within

him.

Regardless of how some people view this man Jesus, he was a teacher of Teachers, a mystic of mystics and a Spiritual Genius. It has been written that a mystic is one who is not mystified by Religion, phenomena, theology, rites, rituals, ceremonies, dogmas, doctrines, creeds, magic, false prophets and the like. A spiritual genius is one wherein the Truth does come from within. The temple hierarchy were very mystified by Jesus' mysticism and dumbfounded and afraid of his Spiritual Genius and they could not fathom his teaching and therefore they marked him for elimination. Now most of these people were sincere in their beliefs and many of them were or became close friends of Jesus and some even became his followers, as did Saul of Tarsus after his demise. It is a fact that they were also mystified by their own creeds and a fact that the Sanhedrin, the ruling body of the Temple were split in their beliefs as to what the truth was. They had their schisms long before the Christian Religion was ever even dreamed up. Yet they all agreed that the Temple, with its sacred scrolls and Tabernacle, was the repository of the accumulated facts and truths of the Almighty Yahweh and the scrolls were massive in number. The Sanhedrin and the High Priest were the keepers of the Key, and the defenders of a faith that they did not understand clearly themselves and hence the schisms



among them. For example, the Pharisees held to the belief of a resurrection, the Sadducees did not, and the Scribes were split pro and con on the issue. They simply couldn't agree on what the Truth was on many other issues and therefore it was natural for them to hate Jesus who did understand the Truth and taught it fluently and freely.

The "law and the prophets" is generally accepted as a reference to the Hebrew scriptures and the generally accepted Truth of the prophets. What is not generally known is that Jesus was also referring to both the Natural Law and the Psychical Law as well. In a study of the New Covenant we find Jesus quoting almost exclusively from Isaiah and from seven chapters of the book of Isaiah which contains sixty-six chapters. These seven are 3, 5, 6, 40, 53, 55 and 61. Some of these quotes made by Jesus in the New Covenant are highly suspect and are believed to be insertions made by the authors of the gospels. It is a very simple matter to place words in the mouth of a dead man especially when years and years have passed from the time of the death and the writing of these same gospels!

The Natural Laws of the Universe and the Psychical Laws of the Universe cannot be destroyed nor altered nor denied nor changed. But the Laws of men can and have been. Only the Jew lives under the Mosaic Law and even now only

a very small percentage keep the Law to the Jot and tittle. I Paul most certainly would not have destroyed the Law so thoroughly if he did not have the approval of the Christ. There just isn't any way to get around that Truth in view of the great "happening" on the road to Damascus. Many believed that Jesus himself destroyed the Law but this is not so. He simply gave it its proper interpretation and easily fulfilled it to prove that it could be done if one properly understood it - this was, by no means, an endorsement of it. What he did was to show the people that they had within them the potentials of much higher levels of consciousness and the spirit power within them to rise above the Laws of men and come to understand and utilize the Natural and Psychical Laws of the Universe instead of being awed and overwhelmed by them.

Jesus knew that the spirit in man-woman is a phenomenon - working power. He knew also, that we do not experience this power because we make it too difficult for the spirit to express itself. It was Paul who explained to us that we are constantly at war with our True-selves. We try to go it alone and we fail miserably in our attempts to do so. This failure to "unite the opposite" on a full time basis is so prevalent that even those who legitimately experience OBE's fail, upon their safe return to the vessel, to slay "self"! This is the very height of spirit ignorance and is

inexcusable. Even Jesus had this problem with his own disciples. He asked them more than once, how much longer must I tolerate your ignorance? – Oh you of little faith. What are you afraid of? Can't you even keep the watch – stay awake and alert, and so on. They even were arguing and plotting among themselves to replace Jesus (if his prediction of his own death came true) as head of the movement known to them as “The Way” and “the Poor.” It started out as “the Poor” for a violent revolution and was changed to “the Way” after Jesus made his Great Discovery and opted for a non-violent, suffering servant sacrifice as spelled out in Isaiah.

What better example of “self” can one find than in Jesus' own disciples? By looking into a mirror, I'm sure that you can at least find their equals!

The whole problem is not one of stubbornness – it's your failure to follow the directions exactly as given and attain the higher levels of Consciousness available to you and once attained, holding them! But not stuck in them, for there is always attainable another, higher level until you reach the Ultimate Level of the ALL in ALL.

You are what you think and if you constantly think of yourself first in all situations you are very deeply in “self.” Jesus made it very plain – He who is first will be made last,

and he who is last, will be made first. “See”?

Jesus actually proclaimed that the truth should set all men-women free from bondage of any kind - foreign rule, religious mandates, poverty, slavery, illness, and it is implied that he was espousing some kind of Rights for women. And he had a very large following of women and they took great care in looking after him. When you think about his encounters with women: the adulteresses “caught in the act,” the Samaritan woman at the well, the woman with the issue of blood, Martha and her sister, Mary Magdalene, you can see that this is so. The only woman he put down and put practically out of his life was his own mother, Mary, does this seem strange to you? No one has ever really known why. The scripture does tell us that she had her doubts about her son’s sanity but that would not seem to be the type of thing that would really disturb Jesus. One thing I do know is that Jesus’ father, Joseph, was a Contractor, a builder, and a Pharisee! And both Jesus and James, his sons were trained to be Pharisees and builders also. Only James went on to fulfill the purpose of his training and became a Sadducee. Jesus was called among his fifty titles, “Rabbi.” A common name for teachers, priests and Pharisees. This new information to us, was known by the authors of the gospels but it was suppressed. Why? And why did Joseph so quickly disappear from the gospels’ narratives

while Mary was there right to the end and is, today, worshipped as the virgin mother of God? If Jesus would not hail his mother how does the church justify itself in doing so? This is where you need the higher levels of consciousness to enable you to see through the greatest story ever sold!

Yet, even the lowest level of consciousness ought to tell you and all the religionists that there is something very “fishy” going on about the two thieves who were crucified with Jesus. Compare the following gospel accounts and see for yourself, Matthew 27:43, 44; Mark 15:27, 28; Luke 23:39-43; John 19:18.

“Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach them so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the Kingdom of heaven.”

This is a vital point that can be so easily misunderstood, and usually is. Let’s take the word “break” first. To break a commandment could mean to violate, to disobey, to dissolve, to suspend, or to penetrate and make one’s way through. In the general context of Jesus’ teachings it is obvious he is talking about the latter. He is talking about breaking the commandments down into understandable

form, where they are clear. A commandment is a fundamental law of life. The ten were in existence long before Moses. And where Jesus talks about the Law he is referring to the Ten Commandments and nothing else, except when he added to them the three of his own.

Before the Law, then, can be fulfilled, Jesus told us that we must break through all the garbage of doctrine, dogmas, creeds and so forth and realize our spiritual Unity with the underlying principle.

Jesus was a teacher, a Teacher of teachers and as such it was his task to break the Laws of the Jewish Religion and teach others to do the same. Jesus taught the people how to break down the stagnant, the crystallized creeds of their Religion and know the Real Truth about them. He showed them how to “break” the Sabbath Law by fulfilling it. “The Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath.” In this Truth, and in this purpose, it is the purpose of the Message to break all the Commandments of Religion and the Ten Commandments, to clarify them and then abide them. To simplify and make them usable and demonstrable is the purpose, then. Secondly, let us remember that “heaven,” as Jesus uses it is not some future place but refers to the Now, the potential Now rather than a future place which he called the Kingdom. He said, many times, “the

Kingdom of heaven is at hand.” This is the “oak tree is always in the acorn” metaphor. The whole is always in the part. The divine purpose you can be is always the depth-potential within the struggling human being that you are now.

We can have a clearer insight into Jesus’ “thinking” and intentions here if we “think” of “least in the Kingdom” as “at least in the Kingdom.” Heaven being the innate potential now, the least in the potential would mean the starting point of its releasement. Jesus, then, is simply saying that anyone who can break through the dogma of religion to higher levels of consciousness in their selves may not have as yet achieved all their tasks in life, but they are “at least” on The Way to their Ultimate goal. The “great in the Kingdom of heaven” applies to those who are actively working with and applying the Fundamental Spiritual Laws. In the one case we “break them” by breaking them down into practical and useful insights. In the other case “we do and teach them.” What a person believes in their mind, sooner or later, they will begin to be and Do from their hearts. We need to apply ourselves diligently with these insights in the direction of our dreams and visions.

“For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees,



ye shall no case enter into the Kingdom of heaven.” The important word here is “Righteousness.” This has always meant keeping the Commandments in their packaged form. It would mean learning them and practicing them, abiding them, then. Jesus is saying that your righteousness needs discover new consciousness and must achieve a new dimension or else there will be no Real growth of your own Christ-Self. Righteousness to Jesus means the actual practice in thought of one’s essential spirit Unity with LIFE. It is the right-useness of Spiritual Law. It is designed for the “disciplined effort” to keep the mind on Spirit, to think rightly, to “Practice the Presence of Spirit” by Thinking Its thoughts After It!

We need be constantly alert and on guard against our human tendency to create habit patterns and we need to constantly apply the Ordinance of Formative Causation (exchange of habits). Even a sincere affirmation of Truth, if voiced repeatedly over a period of time, can become an object rather than a means of pure Recognition. This is why we should periodically review the accumulated Truth of the Message and the knowledge contained in it, so that we do not slide backwards from whatever spiritual insight we have gained. Each level of consciousness attained must be exercised or we run the risk of losing it. Everyone Needs to develop the Right Attitude and habits in order to be a



successful teacher and proponent of the Message.

“Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment. But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.”

Now at first glance, there doesn't seem to be anything strange or far-out here, but when we check out other supposed sayings of Jesus, then we find, if we utilize our full consciousness, the contradictions (see Matthew 23:17, 19). Furthermore, the word “hell” is also a mistranslation of the Hebrew “sheol” which means “silence or darkness.” And not “hell” as Religion teaches it as a place where one is eternally tortured by the “hell-fire.”

Yet in spite of all this, Jesus gives a very good example of “breaking” the Commandments. “Thou shalt not kill,” a whole new sense of application, by up-grading it from the moral and social level of application into the mental and spiritual frame of experience. In no possible way can it be said that he violated or even annulled the Commandment “thou shalt not kill,” but he brought it expressively, concisely, and clearly into the minds of every man and

woman. It has been all too easy and true to say, “I have killed no one. I have always kept the Commandments” – but in their expanded form, wherein the consciousness becomes involved and the very thought even of doing it or even “thinking” about doing it was tantamount to breaking the Commandments!

Jesus is saying that hate, murder, killing in war or in self-defense, adultery, rape, covetousness, and so forth, are not just acts committed but actually “Acts of thought”! “You are what you think.” And you think long enough and you will become it! Good, bad or otherwise. The Choice is still yours – you can remain stuck-in at a certain level of consciousness or you can rise to new heights, new levels of consciousness in your search of the “Perfect Conscience”! And the “Active Intellect.”

If you insist in staying at the level of “self” then you are clearly stuck-in at the level of “darkness” where there is no Light and no LIGHT and therefore no activation of the Mind of Christ. “Self” allows for no Change Upwards nor to ward the Spirit. When human consciousness marries “self” it must be prepared to suffer twilight and darkness, Now and in the Future! As we have said “the world of today is full of Knowledge but largely empty of Wisdom.” And that’s the reason the world is in such turmoil and trouble today –

“Self” is the Ruler – not the minds, and most certainly not the divine consciousness of which we have the potential to display!

You see, to most well-disposed people faith means nothing more than a comfortable means of ignoring the unpleasant. They rule out disagreeable Realities and through illusionary means, persuade themselves that they are thereby showing a particularly spiritual attitude. But True Faith neither shrinks from the Truth, nor, when it proves unpalatable permits such unwelcomed truth to undermine its constancy. This is something as different from stoic fortitude as it is from escapist sentimentalism. It rests on an assurance that among other relevant facts, Life’s will counts as one. LIFE is able to work its Will by means of either promising or unpromising instruments, and even the things that apparently frustrate its Purpose can be made to serve its ends.

If we live under the tyranny of the physical-material appetite of the “self,” we shall live after the flesh – but if we are governed by the purposes of LIFE, we shall live in the consciousness of the Supreme Spirit – and happily. So, as far as the Law of consciousness (Discovery) is concerned, we break the Law, or break ourselves upon it, every time we obey “self” and think in negative and destructive ways. This

is not discovery - it's a plague upon our well-being, and spiritual ignorance to boot.

One may keep all the Laws and all the Ordinances and all the Commandments but still experience darkness in their Life. It is sad to see a "Righteous" one suffer through this when it isn't necessary. The answer is quite simple though. We must peel them, as words, off the paper and break them - break them down into understandable and workable guide-lines for our living and our thinking - when we do this we can keep and fulfill them all.

When Jesus refers to "the Judgment" and the "hell-fire," he is referring to experiences of "states of consciousness." The Judgment is in ourselves. Every act fulfills itself. Every day is a day of judgment. We are not punished for our "mistakes" - we are punished by them. We are, in truth, the victims of our own punishment. We are our own judges. The hell-fire is the punishment of the inner-conflict that leads to stress, pain and disease and to the human problem of "want," decay and failure.

Jesus is simply pointing to the fact that we all do a lot of killing that does not come under the restraint of the Commandment as it has been traditionally accepted. Every destructive thought is a killing thought and there is hell to pay. When we allow ourselves to go on emotional binges of

anger, hate, revenge, bitterness, anxiety, doubt and fear - there is no getting out of it, we must pay the devil his due. Get thee behind me “self”! All negative thinking is the work of the “self.” You simply cannot hold onto “self” and have “an-ease-of-mind.”

“But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause . . .” Those three words underscored were never spoken by Jesus in that context. The original narrative did not include them, and the earliest extant copies do not include them. Obviously and for some unknown reason, the “without a cause” was inserted by a translator - perhaps he thought this is what Jesus meant for surely everybody has a right to get angry at times.

Yes, you have a “perfect right” to be angry at some injury that has taken place in your life, but you also have a right to the nervous disorder or ulcers that inevitably follow. For we are always dealing with Law. Your responsibility to yourself as well as to the divine law, is to keep yourself inwardly poised and to keep your thoughts positive and loving, in spite of injustice or disorder around you.

This is a large order! But then we are dealing with a large and wonderful principle, the divinity of man. If you can remember who you are, and keep your inward contact, you will not let yourself be drawn into experiences on

another's level of thought. You will meet them on your level, your spirit level, for your thought is your life, spiritually!

A person can let birds eat crackers off the top of his head but he has a right to determine whether they can build nests in it. If someone is getting in your hair or under your skin, it is because you are violating the spiritually upgraded Commandment, "thou shalt not kill." The person may be outwardly annoying, but when he becomes annoying to you, it is your thought about him that is the problem. Change this thought and you Change the whole experience!

Before going on, let me once again remind all of you that the Message of I Paul is a Spirit Message for physical men and women on this Earth, known Spiritually as West-303, and as such, it must be viewed both as a physical-material and a spiritual Way of Life. If one can follow it spiritually then the physical-material vessel, you and I, can be assured of our Well-Being where and when it counts - Now and in the Future. Spiritualism has Absolutely nothing to do with Religion, Stoicism, Atheism, Agnosticism, Gnosticism, Dogma, Rites, Creeds, Rituals and so forth.

A True Christian Spiritualist is dedicated to the over-throwing of all that enslaves - Tyranny, Totalitarianism, Religion, and the like. Where there is no Freedom there is no Spirit and vice-versa!

God and Christ recognize no Religion, no tyranny, no “anything” that enslaves or suppresses and no man-manufactured theology, gods, and so forth. Jesus himself was anti-religious and he had no intention of inventing or founding a new one nor of hanging on to any of the old ones. He quoted Scripture simply because this was what the people who came to listen to him understood, but he did not adhere strictly to the Scripture as written – he upgraded it to Pure Spiritualism, which at the same time destroyed the old understanding and the preachers and teachers of it, in the minds of thousands of his followers and audiences. I Paul now carries on this task as I Paul did before my calling.

Everyone should keep in mind that the New Covenant (testament) is predominately Paul. For example, the four gospels contain 89 chapters. While there are over 100 chapters about Paul or written by I Paul! Therefore, the bible, which we do not accept as “the Truth” or the “inerrant word of God,” is mentioned so extensively in the Message of I Paul. The bible is not a Holy Book as is “The Book of Life” and “The Book of Two Ways.” The Message of I Paul should not be considered as a Holy Book either – it’s a teaching message and its philosophy of “being all things to all people” in order to “get their attention” removes it from the list of “Holy Books”! Yet, with a few well-designed and useful exceptions, it can be classified and readily accepted

as Spirit Truth and Love! The Message is a compilation of the Truth that has been scattered throughout the Universe and is now being collected and compiled in one place, in “one Book,” for the benefit of the Well-Being of ALL in ALL! You who embrace it, Love it, Respect it and Follow it, to the best of your Ability, are the richest people on the face of this Earth - You Love! And you receive Recognition, “Recognition” and “Recognition”! as you advance through the Levels of Consciousness and fulfill your potential within and without!

Now let us continue.

It should be clear, by now, that we magnetize into our lives whatever we hold in our thoughts. And those who seek Love will find it by giving it. If you insist upon Judging others, do this first - Judge your “self” and “see” and “know” that you are wholly incapable of Judging others. Until you remove the “beam” out of your own eye do not even attempt to remove one from your brother’s or sister’s eye. If the light in your eye be darkness - how great is that darkness?

When you take the first step to give yourself to that which you Need, it will also, in some way or another take its first step to give itself to you. Therefore we must Trust in a Spirit who gives Life and Love to the dead and who calls into



existence things that do not exist, for a Spirit that does not consistently Act is an impossibility. Therefore Christian Spiritualism is not the conjecture of human speculation but the heralding of what LIFE has done. It begins with LIFE'S Acts, not with our ideas. This gives it at once its concrete character, its positive emphasis, and its immediate relevance. It explains the fact that the "voice" of the Spirit is always active. From this also springs the redemptive character of the Message. It confidently proclaims that human minds and lives can be transformed because it rests its assurance on the Truth of the evidence of what LIFE has already done and will continue to do.

Therefore to set the mind on the spirit is Life and Peace, as I Paul has often informed us.

"Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy Way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift."

Prayer is of the spirit - it is not form or begging. If we pray, "forgive us our debts as we forgive our debtors" and do not forgive our debtors, who are we kidding? Jesus informs us that the great gift we must offer at the altar of the inner, silent prayer is the pure, honest, and sincere heart - and not some sort of material gift that is an appeasement

or thought of as a sacrifice, for a state of mind that we have no thought of abandoning. In Truth we can come to know that we can have either the demonstration of our desires or our indignation, but we simply can't have both.

Here, of course, Jesus isn't talking about prayer, but about thought. He is emphasizing that even prayer is no sanctuary from the responsibility of right thinking. Prayer may help you to re-establish yourself in spiritual consciousness and Recognition and in the Right, true and good attitude of mind. But, he is saying if you are praying for harmony in a relationship in which you still are harboring feelings of bitterness toward those people involved, you had better get those thoughts right, or forget the whole thing. For prayer changes things only as you Change!

“Agree with thine adversary quickly, whilst thou are in the Way with him, lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the Judge, and the Judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.”

I remind you that Jesus is talking about thought and mind Action. There are two key words here, 1) Agree, and 2) Adversary. Agree, meaning to settle with, dispose of. Adversary, meaning your adverse thoughts or reactions to

people, places, and things!

Jesus' reference to the adversary delivering you to the judge, the officer and the prison is an excellent illustration of his thinking in this narrative. It means that whenever a negative thought or fear comes into your mind, if you don't quickly settle with it and dispose of it, it can lead you into dis-ease, disharmony, and even illness and despair.

In every single experience we face, there is always a time when ultimate problems exist merely as seed possibilities. In all bitter feuds between people, in emotional problems between individuals, there is always a moment when misunderstanding can be turned to understanding, when envy can be changed to respect, when resistance or hate can be overcome by Love. Jesus is saying, "Don't Procrastinate." Whenever you begin to feel adverse feelings within yourself about someone, deal with those feelings at once - even if you have to involve your Right by giving it up momentarily until the problem can be settled on a note of harmony and calm. If you don't, the fire will spread rapidly and you will be imprisoned in a much more difficult situation. Don't wear the fire of coals on your own head - heap it on your adversaries' head and confuse them into finding and seeing the Light.

"Agree quickly" - raise your consciousness out of its

carnal (low) level of negativism into one of love and understanding - the higher sense levels then. The very level Jesus employed after his great discovery - non-violence and non-resistance! The only way you can do this is to dispose quickly the adverse thoughts, the anger welling up inside of you and remember who you are and Recognize the Spirit and the Truth and Act accordingly. This is the Way to “practice the Presence of the Spirit.” It assures you Peace of mind every time and not dis-ease and misery. This is why Order and self-discipline are so important for us who are exerting the effort to a following of the Way to “the Way”!

When you find yourself getting hostile, angry, mad or resistant, when the seeds of conflict begin building up in you, “settle” with them immediately by agreeing with Spirit and denying “self”! Affirm your Unity with the Infinite Mind and its inexhaustible resources of Energy, Love and Peace. Just keep in mind that all wanton and negative thought is a giving in to the “wants of self.” Keep telling “it” to get behind you, out of your sight, and you will conquer it by replacing it with Positive and loving thoughts and your whole life will be changed for the better and you will have accomplished a tremendous healing within yourself. If someone is criticizing you, brow-beating you, “Agree - quickly,” which means to get yourself into neutral and collect your thoughts so that you may Act Righteously

and not re-act blindly nor foolishly. If the tirade against you is unjustified then you have no reason to react violently or angrily. It is of no substance and cannot harm you. If it's justified then there is nothing for you to defend and the only one you should be upset with is your "self"!

However, if you do not make that quick agreement, if you do not dispose of the adversary of your own negative reaction right from the outset of the confrontation, you may very well create a poison, a disgust within you that will extract a terrible price from overall Well-Being and Ease-of-Mind. Not to mention your Unity and Peace with your True-Self and with LIFE and LIGHT!

"Fear" and "self" are the two greatest barriers that must be overcome if one is to become a True Christian Spiritualist. Time and again Jesus asked his followers, "What are you afraid of? - oh ye of little faith." We who live once, live forever, so what is the basis for your fear? "Fear" and "self" imprison you in the lowest level of consciousness known, the Carnal level. You cannot possibly walk after, with, or in the spirit from that low and indistinguishable level of consciousness simply because it has an absence of Creativity and is most often incapable of Love - True, Pure or otherwise. Therefore where the contagion of "fear" and "self" reside there is no freedom and where there is no

freedom there is no Spirit, i.e., Active Spirit, and you are relegated to the dark side of life, here and now, and in the Future.

All “contagion” begins in the subliminal lower consciousness, where it rises upward to contaminate the sub-consciousness to invade our dreams and visions. From there the contamination invades our carnally conscious mind, where it permeates our Faith and Hope Consciousness, and it is here that we need defeat all contagion. It is at this level of awareness, of feelings, of perception, and of one’s being and of those around him that one must overcome and dispose of quickly all fear, doubt, anxiety, worry and their mother, “self.” It is at this level of consciousness that one must exert the effort called for by following the directions exactly as given in an honest, sincere and devoted manner to the best of one’s ability. This is the self-discipline and orderly level of consciousness, the pathway to Creative Consciousness.

It is at the carnal mind level that one must learn to say “no” to all afflictions that come into our body and mind. It is here that we must assert ourselves as a spiritual being and refuse all thoughts that tend to weaken us and up-set our Well-Being.

It is in the Carnal Consciousness where all the danger

lies for it is here that fear and doubt and worry reside. It is here where the “self” lurks, it is here where we find the hammer and the tweezers. It is here also that we need to Surrender and Abandon ourselves in order to reach the next level of Consciousness. All lack, all financial difficulties, all “mistakes” and all errors of judgment occur in and through the carnal Consciousness. It is here where the evils of man-woman lurk and from here they are made manifest. It knows both Right and Wrong, Good and Bad, the sacred and the profane, Righteousness and unrighteousness.

The danger lies in allowing “self,” fear and negative thoughts to control our Action and reactions. We must be eternally vigilant in our ability to say “No” to them and “Yes” to the Spirit regardless of the circumstances. And until you establish this “No” firmly in your Way of Life you will not be able to rise-up to the level of Creative Consciousness, the thought level immediately above the Carnal mind of Consciousness. This Creative Thought level is the second highest physical level of Consciousness - the Potentiality of Activating the Mind of Christ. For to reach this level one has subdued and conquered the Carnal mind. It is the ending or winding down of the “Preparation state” of one’s life and the gateway to the “Follow state” and the next level of Consciousness - The Imaginative Consciousness, the semi-trance level, and when coupled

with the Creative thought level the gateway to the Trance states and a power heretofore not experienced.

Creative Thought and Creative Imagination are far more valuable than all previous knowledge gained at the lower levels of Consciousness simply because they Create Knowledge, and such Created knowledge leads to Wisdom and transcendence.

No one can enter into the Creative Conscious levels until “self” and “fear” have been eliminated. Once this has been accomplished one may consider themselves at the height of the accumulated micro consciousnesses and experience the exhilaration of being Fully Human.

From this level one has the potential of entering into the macro consciousness level - the Uniting of the Lower and the Higher minds. When accomplished one automatically enters into the Alpha Consciousness, a spiritual level of mind and are then both Fully Human and Fully Spiritual while remaining mostly in the flesh with the Active Intellect.

The Omega Consciousness is the Transcendental level and power of the True-Self, and finally we have it all from the Mega Consciousness - the Soul of the ALL in ALL!

It should be understood that all of the Consciousnesses



listed above are but One Consciousness or One Mind expressed in a multiplicity of Consciousnesses or Minds.

The Involution of the spirits and the minds is much swifter than the Evolution of the spirits and the Compounded Minds than it would appear from the above levels of Consciousnesses that we possess now and those we are trying to attain to.

When Jesus said, “I am the Alpha and the Omega,” he did not mean that he was the Beginning and the End, as we now can see.

The Mega Consciousness is not the End but the New Creation or “True-Beginning” brought about at the “Happening of the ALL in ALL.”

For those of you who are unfortunately “stuck-in” at the Carnal Consciousness level let me say this for your benefit. In your situation you cannot afford such thoughts that evoke fear and worry and then allow them to slowly simmer in your minds. You need to be stern with yourself. You must take immediate Action. Stand up and speak the word of Peace to the storms of human thought.

Jesus demonstrated this Action in the narrative of Mark 4:37-41. As the story goes Jesus was asleep in the bow of the boat when a storm came up and it was a violent one. The

disciples were frightened to death and they woke up Jesus, saying to him, “Master carest thou not that we perish?” Jesus arose and rebuked the tempest by saying into the wind, “Peace, be still.” Almost at once the wind died down, the sea calmed, and the boat and its passengers were soothed. And then he turned and faced his disciples in the boat and quite sternly asked, “Why are ye so fearful? How is it ye have no Faith?” (my underscoring). This is a fine example of “self” and “fear” at work within the Carnal Consciousness! These are the very same disciples who deserted their leader in a crisis and fled for their own safety after all their eloquent statements of support for Jesus.

(This “calming of the waters” is cited as one of the 36 “miracles” attributed to Jesus by the Christian Religion as proof of his being God Almighty in the flesh.)

This narrative reveals to us the force “let loose” in the “silent law of agreement with the Mind of Christ.” Jesus mastered the situation of crisis simply because he was the master of his own thoughts. As we learn to master our own thoughts we will always be able to manage “crisis situations” in our own lives as they arise. You see, Jesus wasn’t God Incarnate nor the Son of God. But he had one great thing going for him – he always agreed with God, he always followed God, and he always did the Will of God –

after he had made his great discovery! That's the difference between you and Jesus. He rose above "self" and "fear," he exuded love, and the Mind of Christ was foremost in his life and Acts. He meditated, cogitated, contemplated and prayed often. And all of this for guidance and the Right Action and the Well-Being of All. The plain truth is this: Jesus never did a thing, not a single solitary thing in his life time, that you cannot do and can probably do it better today simply because we have "at-hand" the better tools to do it with today than Jesus had in his day. And for sure, you can amass a better group of men and women around you, to do it with! We have the same Carnal mind that Jesus had and we also have the same mind that was in him! The question remains, "Why are ye so fearful? How is it ye have no Faith? In yourself and in the Message and in LIFE and LIGHT.

Jesus' secret was simply the fact that he kept himself "tuned-in" with the Spirit at all times. He remained "locked-in" to his spiritual unity with the Kingdom "at all times." This was accomplished by his constant contact with Spirit and his many periods of meditation and prayers seeking guidance from the Mind above all minds and the Will that Wills above all wills. If this is not abandonment and surrender then I've missed the boat and the storm and the calm - the Unity and the Peace of it All!

The name of the game is Action through diligent self-discipline and obedience to the Mind of Christ and not being dominated by “self” and “fear”!

Jesus being prepared was in the unique position of his time to Follow the Spirit and utilize its power for the Good, the Right, and the True. That uniqueness is now commonplace - we all have the spirit, our “true-selves” and we all have the Mind of Christ in us and the divinity within us “to do even greater things” than Jesus of Nazareth.

Pie in the sky again? No! All you have to do is Follow The Directions exactly as given - it’s as simple as that! You begin by exerting “The Effort” called for - you don’t even have to be concerned with the results. They will manifest themselves phenomenally!

As I push this pen across this paper I Paul am emulating Jesus! Believe it or not.

Jesus always demonstrated the way and spoke always to the tasks and the goal we need reach. Most of us are on the Way, some of us are “in the Way,” their own and ours, and others are pretenders, procrastinators, and so forth. I Paul has, as yet, to Recognize an absence of “self” and “fear” in any of you. Jesus didn’t Recognize the same in any of his followers either. If he had, he or better Christ-Jesus would not have had to descend upon the Road to Damascus!

The proof against Peter is in, not only in the Message of I Paul, but in scripture (The Acts), and practically every christian theologian and historian agree with the facts of the proof submitted. Jesus never intended to found a new Religion. Jesus was anti-Judaism and therefore anti-Religion. Jesus therefore never ordained Peter, never gave him the keys to the Kingdom, which raises “holy havoc” with the papacy and its false claim of continuity from said Peter. That Peter never was the leader in Jerusalem – James, the brother of Jesus was in charge. And, last but not least, Peter never put a foot in Rome, dead or alive! Which of course, raises some very interesting questions which have been answered in the Message and elsewhere as cited (the writings of theologians, historians, scholars, laymen).

Allow me to give you all an illustration of how you act and react when “stormy weather” hits your “vessel.” When things, “storms” happen around you, you lose your harmony and your faith and the “self” takes over and the “fear” wells up in you and you are lost and unable to control your own thoughts and usually your only thoughts are for your own safety and so you run away from the storm. When things, “storms,” happen to you, wow! You lose control, you blow up, you begin to deny, to fill up with self-pity and your cup runs over in self-pity and your fear completely overtakes your mind and your Action and Reaction! Anger,

hate, bigotry, jealousy, back-biting, ignorant defense, screaming, ranting, raving become the norm! And all the while “things” are happening in you, they are always happening in you, perpetually, and what do you do? You ignore them, you have to, “self” and “fear” hold the hammers and you are the anvils - unable to think properly and spiritually - out of control - Spirit is out of your view at such times - you are a slave at the moment to the “storms” of people, places and things. You are not free and therefore you are “spiritless” and “spineless” and above all, in such situations, you are the dumbest person in the Universe! Your memory, your intelligence, your understanding, your knowledge, your Faith, your Hope, your Love, your Truth, your Freedom, your Wisdom, no, not your Wisdom simply because such reactions prove you have none, your Unity, which proves to be no Unity at all if you lose your mind in such situations, and of course it goes without saying that you do not even know what Peace is, nor either do you hold an ease-of-mind. You are totally Dis-eased at the moment and completely out of the Way to “the Way”!

Know that you cannot always control the things that happen around you or to you. But come to the Truth, the Understanding that you can control your thinking at all times, under any and all situations, “IF”! And the “IF’s” have been clearly and concisely spelled out herein and in the

Entire Message of I Paul, to date! It's a learning, self-disciplining, doing, demonstrating, thinking, practicing, loving, faithful, principled, diligent, devoted and effortful process. It's simple, yes! But it's hard work. Perfunctory demonstration get you no-where! Anger, temper, hate, frustration and their ilk "killeth the spirit" as well as "the Word." Killing "self" and "slaying fear" is a lot easier and much more beneficial!

You can do it! In fact only you and You can do it! And since you are never alone, it becomes that much more simple. "See"?

One of your "spiritual tasks" on this plane level of W-303 is to "take" only what you NEED from this temporal existence and phase of your life, and to "give" an abundance of all you have in the form of Good-Works. And that "all you have" can run from Love to material holdings. After all, you can only take one of those with you!

The Message tells us that charity begins at home. That's simply telling us not to be a burden upon someone else. It doesn't mean greed or selfishness, or hoarding, or gluttony, and so forth.

A Good-Work also means Right thinking and the proper control of one's emotions. It means being a good brother, a good sister and a good Partner. It means living up

to one's Responsibilities all the Way down and up the line, without lapses or failures. A Good-Work is being Present and not just available. Sharing and Caring are Good-Works. Righteous non-resistance and non-violence are very "high level" good works.

Jesus was the master of Good-Works and he told us that the one true Need in our life is to get right, in consciousness, with the Supreme Spirit - and that anything standing between us and our spiritual Unity with Spirit must go! And when you do this, if you do, you have done the greatest Good-Work of All!

Jesus tells us to forget the things we "want," we covet, we envy others for having them, because to acquire such habits will eventually destroy our "Whole" life. He even went so far as saying it was better to cut-off your right hand or cast-out your right eye rather than lose your "whole" life over such matters of "want" that do not matter.

This "cutting-off" and "casting-out" may seem rather gory or far-fetched to western man but would be easily understood by Jesus' audiences. In Galilee, in Aramaic people would say to others "cut off your hand from my vineyard" or "from my fig trees" meaning "stop stealing my grapes or my figs." Furthermore, in that day and age the use of the "Right hand" was readily understood. "Right"



meant that which was good, right and true and “Left” meant that which was evil and wrong!

With the sayings of Jesus there is no escape. Regardless of the size of his audience he always made his listeners believe that he was speaking directly to and about them only. He never deals with abstract commandments or ignorant religious ideas, but always with basic thoughts and feelings that everyone could relate to in their everyday lives. Everyone has had the experience of being unjustly treated even for an act wherein their intention was good. Even in these instances, Jesus’ advice was “Cut it out” or you will suffer more.

Jesus in his parables was always telling his audiences not to run away from trouble but to face it, think it out thoroughly, and then do the proper and Righteous Thing and come to see that the problem, any problem, always has a simple solution if only you will think it out with love and act in accordance with God’s Will. And let’s face reality - you will win some and you will lose some, but regardless of the outcome you can be sure that you gained “Recognition” - and you will feel better about yourself and that’s quite necessary for your Well-Being simply because you are what you “Think”!

Listen! Try this. The next time you get upset or angry at

someone for whatever reason simply and silently bless them with Love and Understanding and go your way - “Free and Content”! “Happiness,” like freedom my dear brothers and sisters, is not a bequest - they are a conquest and if you desire them you have to work hard for them, and that requires that you Change your thinking to ward those elusive entities and constantly “keep the watch” and “cut-off” all thoughts that will jeopardize your quest for them. Be not conformed by the things of this world but be transformed, physically and spiritually by the renewing of your mind.

Now I Paul loves each and every single person in the Family of LIFE and LIGHT. Now you can believe that or not. But before you judge me and my declaration, you should at least listen to my side of it. My love for others is based on my seeing something of the divine in everyone I Paul meets, regardless if they are good, bad, or indifferent to this, that or whatever that surrounds and envelops them. If you cannot see beyond the appearances of a person you can never truly love them, physically or spiritually! There is a physical body, and there is a spiritual body. There is a physical mind and there is a spiritual mind. There is a physical love and there is a spiritual love. There is a physical aura and there is a spiritual aura. There is True Love and there is Pure Love, simply because there is divine love and

Divine Love! And Love is the most misunderstood emotion, ideal, phenomenon in the Universe, and the most abused!

Sex, for example, is not love, even where the participating parties engaged in a sexual act truly love each other. At best, sex is merely an expression of love and in today's environment it is hardly even that. But sex too is a state of mind and this "state" changes as one progresses up the steps of Consciousness.

True Love is spiritual perception, an insight into the innate divinity of your true-self and others.

Physical love is creative love and the expression of Pure Love, the Need of coming together and becoming One!

Pure Love is the unfathomable Love of the Supreme Spirit, its LIGHT, its Grace and its Energy that flows through us All unceasingly and All inclusively - It giveth the Sun to shine upon All in ALL!

People who do not understand love suffer the most in this world of ours and cause the most misery for themselves and others.

Love is also a state of mind, like sex, but it is also something greater. For example, when someone "falls in love" with someone, a friend may say "I really can't see what it is he sees in her." Of course they can't, for it is the

perception of true-Love that is a personal “Revelation”! And if not, it is but sexual appetite! A “want.” But love based on that perception of true-Love above is the Love that never ends, never dies, and it always leads to an adjustment of differences and the perfect fulfillment of Love at all levels. But without that perception it is not true-Love and it will always fail.

True-Love is the key to all our “Needs” and the manifestation of our Well-Being. Sex is beautiful but True-Love is magnificent!

My own personal thoughts on love, both physical and spiritual, run somewhat along the lines of the following:

I need the person that you are, not what you have materialistically, but that of your heart and your mind and your spirit. And in exchange I give you all that I have an abundance of - Love. Whatever else remains of me to give, I give it to you freely and without any conditions.

Although I Paul and my true-self know its true home, my “wholeness” in its temporal home needs to love everyone and also needs that someone special to share and care for and love, and to be loved in return.

Love is the catalyst that welds two people together as One and to be real and true it must be given freely and

without bounds.

The objective of my love is to raise the personal dignity of the One I love to new and existing heights never attained heretofore and to let that one know that I am something else and so are they, and together we can be one of a kind!

A true loving relationship is always founded on Trust and a perfect communication of ideas and feelings and togetherness. Not only lovers but friends, not only lovers and friends but equal partners – Now and then!

I Paul knows that it is impossible to teach someone to Love. One can only “model” it, “send” it and “give” it away.

The “magic” of a true loving relationship is that you change and grow separately, but together! I have a wing – you have a wing, and together we can soar – apart we are grounded and forsaken.

Although I have the freedom to choose who I will love I find myself loving everyone. But whenever that “someone special” comes, you and I have no choice. We know at once that we want to grow with them in Mind, in character, in attitude, and in the full understanding of the mystery of Love, its physical and spiritual attraction, its sensual secrets and its sensuous auras.

No true, pure loving relationship can be built upon a

foundation of “want.” “Need” for one another is the only way for Love to flourish and expand.

I need in my love someone who I can help become everything they truly are, for in this “doing” I too can become everything I really need to “be.”

Most people tend to view love as a give and take relationship and that may be so, but I think of love as being more than a negotiable matter. I think more towards the “give” than I do the “take” side of it, because when I Paul receives love I Paul gives it away and that’s really the secret of Love, and the only sure way you can keep it. Under this basic principle of Love, lovers never lose, never fail, never grow complacent nor drift apart.

True-Love seeks only one Thing - Pure Love! The Love of “the Spirit” and the Soul and unfathomable love Grace.

This, then, is why I love you all. I am driven to it happily and eagerly and expectantly for all of the wonderful mysteries to unfold that you and you and You.

So in all my levels of consciousnesses, how do I love you? With all my heart, my mind, my spirit, wherein I patiently await the moment when you shall come to love as I love, for that is the real meaning of Ecstasy - Wherever “we” are!

In concluding this Communication, I Paul would like to leave you with this thought, a Truth, then, not held by the Christian Religionists.

In human nature, you have not an entity tainted with a mythical Adam's sin, paralyzed in guilt and awaiting atonement, you have, rather a "dark closet" awaiting enlightenment, a blank tablet awaiting the impress of experience, and open mind awaiting and susceptible to Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love! This susceptibility though, not only can but has worked in the opposite direction - towards unwisdom and so forth. It's called Religion among other things!

In All Love for Unity and Peace,  
your brother and servant,  
I Paul.

## **31 - Spiritual Psychology and the Master**

I Paul greet you all in Faith, Hope, Love, thought and Obedience to The Mind of Christ for your and my Well-Being in all our endeavors, tasks, missions and goals in The Name of LIFE and LIGHT, may Grace and Happiness be yours for ever and ever and may all your needs be fulfilled whenever they arise.

The man from Nazareth, Jesus, was probably the world's master psychologist among his many other unique attributes. Jesus' knowledge had nothing to do with tuition, but was an intuition, an insight, a revelation and multiple receivings, which could not have been taught to him by any human teacher for there was no precedent for such. To understand the psychology of Jesus one needs to understand John 10:34, "Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?" His psychology was a vitalizing Spiritualism of Life, leading men and women to a direct, personal, intimate relationship with LIFE and LIGHT, where the element of immediacy is primal, and not through the intermediary of some other person or agency or organization here.

To Jesus, the national Religion of his people was an endless road that went nowhere. Spiritualism was a road, a way to "The Way" on which every step in that direction



counted.

His Spiritual Psychology was two-fold. It consisted of the kingdom of heaven and the Kingdom of God. Jesus' spiritual psychology was based on the fact that every person intuitively knew that there was a highway of right living and that men and women are never completely satisfied with themselves or their world until they find the road to their own heaven on earth. And he knew that this dissatisfaction led to the indefinable yearning and hunger and thirst that causes the excesses that plague mankind, even today. Most people feel the inner urge but they usually move in the wrong direction to fulfill it. Jesus, in addressing this dissatisfaction and misdirection, made the following statement:

“Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many are they that enter thereby. For narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that leadeth unto LIFE and few are they that find it.”

This saying of Jesus has been completely misunderstood by The Christian Religionists. The “straight and narrow” way has been taught in a manner that has left their true adherents “straight-laced and narrow-minded” and this shows up no clearer than in the Papacy and its

narrow-mindedness against all change even when it is common knowledge that it is wrong in many of its traditional beliefs, doctrines, dogmas, creeds, bulls and the like.

Contrary to what the religionists continue to teach and preach, there is only one Way under the stars by which men and women can achieve their “heaven on earth” – that is to say, achieve the realization and the unfoldment of their own innate divinity (immortality, in the truest sense) – and that is by bringing about a radical and a permanent Change for the better in their own Now level of Consciousness! There is no other Way!

Almost from the Beginning of mankind’s first step on this Earth, which was then a New World for man and woman, they have been trying in every other conceivable manner to attain happiness, security and Peace with an ease-of-mind. An infinite variety of schemes, both religious and political, have been designed and organized to bring these quests to reality by making changes in external conditions while ignoring the inner man-woman, the “True-Self” completely out of the whole scheme altogether. Always the result has been the same – Complete and total Failure!

Now we know that we can, as a Family and as

individuals, fall, but that “we” cannot fail. We also know that such is the nature of our Being that it is only by a change of Consciousness that outer conditions can be altered upwards. And this constant Change and raising of the Consciousness is the “narrow gate” and “straitened Way” of Jesus’ spiritual psychology. And, as he says, the number of those who find it is infinitesimal. Why? Because most people of this world are conformed to the “pull and sway” of the people, places and things that surround them and they have surrendered their minds to them and to the vicious and illusionary and elusive “self.” Elusive, only because you seem incapable of finding it and destroying it and moving up in Consciousness!

Most of what you and I may think of as the “sordid aspects” of life today, actually originate in our conforming to “what is being done” and to “what everyone else is doing”! The compulsion to conform, to “keep up with the Joneses,” to “do drugs” and other things in excess, to conform with the latest fashions, the latest hair-do’s, and so forth, are all proofs that we are mere conformists and do not actually control our own minds! The minds of men and women down through history have been controlled by people, places, things, clocks or time, appetites and illusions, such as “self.”

There is but a handful of persons who are not in some way swept-up and into “conformity with the times.” How many of you, for instance, get caught up in the subtle advertising concocted by Wall Street and make foolish and unneeded purchases? Creams to remove wrinkles and wipe years off your age! Perfumes to drive men crazy? All kinds of gadgets that are far more than our simple needs require. People are driven to buy, buy, buy, create debt and make the rich richer. Jesus’ psychology was owe no man nothing, live within your means and Righteously and you will find what it is you are searching for. The mentality that one must live graciously or be rejected by society is not only stupid but lacks any iota or tittle of spiritual intelligence.

In essence, one’s mentality is to “conform to one’s time.” But what if one’s time is wrong? And, you know, it usually is – just look at the world around you! Sure, it’s an exciting and a very progressive world, technologically speaking, but where is the happiness, the joy, the fellowship, the friendship, the Love, the Unity, the Peace, the Security and the Ease-of-Mind?

I Paul can tell you, it’s within and it needs to be manifested without! The Way out is the Way In and the Way in is The Way Out! Seek and ye shall Find it. Knock (Act then) and it shall be opened.

You see, what really counts in life and the life of society is not the “passing fancy” but the Ultimate levels of Consciousness which we should always and in ALL WAYS be forever Acting to attain. The important consideration should never be “What’s ‘in’ this year?” or “what are the beautiful people doing this season?” but rather what should be done toward the complete unfoldment of the individual and the collective divine potential and levels of consciousness!

We are living in a very confused age, an age without standards, an age very short of principles because it is a “me” society, an age in which men and women are caught up in a concern for the means rather than the ends - A perfection of means with a total confusion of ends! The truth is that men and women have always been more concerned with materialism than they have been with spiritual things.

The Message tells us to leave matters that don’t matter spiritually Alone! Jesus, the Master psychologist, asked, “What shall a man be profited, if he gains the whole world, and forfeit his Life?” The choice is yours. You can conform to the standards and fashions and the “what’s being done” and the “what’s in” life or you can go about the business of renewing your mind to conform with your innate divinity

and the potentials of Consciousness therein.

What the entire world has failed to see and understand for the last two thousand years is that this man Jesus dealt continuously with the higher nature of men and women and his psychology worked great feats simply because he healed and helped and transformed people by the power of their own higher nature and not by any special or unique powers of his own.

Regardless of what evaluation we may make of our own lives from the carnal level, there is in us that which transcends the human. It is our destiny to produce a “likeness” (of our spirit) in the without of the “image” within ourselves. Jesus plied his psychology amongst his own people to awaken in them their own divinity and to drive them to use the powers of their own Consciousnesses and Conscience to throw off the repression and injustice of their political and religious rulers, one foreign and one nationalistic. And then, abruptly and totally unexpectedly by his followers, he underwent a great change of Mind and heart and his teaching and psychology turned from resistance to physical and spiritual love, unity, peace through righteous thinking and Obedience to the Will of the Father. So abrupt and so totally unexpected was his change that his disciples and followers not only deserted him but

denied him and some even called for his death!

The Psychology of Jesus is best illustrated in his saying reported in Matthew 5:38-42, “Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth; But I say unto you, that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not that away.”

This is not only one of the most profound statements in all of the scripture but one of the least understood also. It is part of Jesus’ psychology contained in his saying of, be ye perfect as your Father in heaven is perfect, meaning, simply, that perfection for you and I is to never make a “mistake” knowingly! And that level of perfection is easily within the grasp of all who are not mentally impaired! It’s truly that simple. And you can do it. In this statement, Jesus sets forth also, the unmistakable position of non-resistance that he held to the end of his Life after his great discovery. Unfortunately it has been watered down by the Christian religion and by individual Christians as being too unworkable and too heavy a burden for anyone to follow.

To say that it's a beautiful thought but a message that won't work and is contrary to Common Sense, as the religionists have done, simply shows how poorly they follow their Master, their Savior, their God! And then they wonder why this world of theirs is so mixed up. It's mixed up and messed up simply because they are not following The Way - they are in the way, barriers and stumbling blocks, All!

The attitude today is that if you do not resist evil it will overtake you! One good example of this is the nuclear arms race. Another is the religious wars being raged on this earth today such as Iran-Iraq, North and South Ireland involving protestant England and other places in the near and far East. Another attitude of today is if you do more than you are supposed to do, more than is expected of you or more than you are paid to do, people will take advantage of you and this, they shout, is simply not common sense!

And here is where the psychology of Jesus surfaced. Of course it is not common sense - it is very uncommon Common Sense. Life has no true meaning when it is motivated only by common sense. Life is much more than simple physical human existence, more than an "eye for an eye" and a "tooth for a tooth" mentality. We humans, caught up in our everyday existence tend to forget that there



is absolutely nothing common about Life! It screams out loud for uncommon perception and an uncommon approach to everyday commonplace things!

The old law of an “eye for an eye” was clearly designed by men, not God, to maintain order among a people that today’s society would label as barbarous and unruly. Under those conditions it was considered better than nothing. Yet it has formed the foundation of a moral and civil code still in evidence today in our supposed civilized way of Life. The old law has been modified to some extent to fit our sense of public Justice today. But, in truth, are we any less “barbarous” today than our ancestors? The world today is still sensitive to the “old law” justice, and revenge is as prevalent today as it was yesterday, complete with Capital Punishment, terrorism and wars over all the globe. The mentality today is to “get even” regardless! To level things up when we get hurt. Jesus’ psychology is saying in essence “So you want to get even.” That’s considered a perfectly normal desire by the standards of today’s society. However, you must know that there is only one way to get even with someone who has wronged you – love them, bless them and forgive them. You may hold a person in contempt for the rest of your days here, always reminding yourself of what they did to you. But every single time you display this hate, this anger, this contempt, you are holding up your own

handcuffs and saying to one and all “See! I am making them pay the Price!” But you and your mind is what is paying the price. You are a slave to this person or persons and you are surely the victim of your own punishment and just too ignorant to see the truth of it all. The only possible way you can get even is to take off the handcuffs and change your thinking. Get rid of your hate, your anger, your contempt and reclaim your own sanity and be free. This may be a bitter pill but it is one of the most important lessons in this life and one you only need to learn once. Jesus’ command to “turn the other cheek” has been grossly misunderstood. As the Message has told us, it doesn’t mean that we are to become doormats or fools or invite further assaults upon ourselves. It is strange – when Jesus says “pluck out the eye,” we know that he is employing a metaphor that must be translated into modern idiom. We know that when he says “cut off your hand” he doesn’t mean it literally. Yet, we have missed a very great lesson because we have insisted on accepting the idea of turning the other cheek in a completely literal sense.

We must keep in mind that Jesus has made the Great Discovery of the Divinity of Man-Woman. It is from this that he is attempting to get us to realize that there is always a depth potential of strength available to us even when we are at our weakest point. He is teaching us that if we find ourselves upset by the actions of another person or are upset

by something someone says then we should recognize at once that we are in a wrong state of consciousness and should immediately adjust our level of thinking. To react to it in the same state of mind only compounds the problem within us. Jesus says, "Turn to the other side of your nature, you are both physical and spiritual, human and divine." There is that side of you that can never be hurt, that is always poised and always peaceful and always Present for you to call upon. In this divine state of consciousness, the hurt is healed, the influence of the other person on you is nullified and you become a healing influence upon them by blessing them and sending them love and good thoughts. This psychology of Jesus was really very simple but tremendously effective - never let someone else determine how you are going to Think or act in any situation whatsoever.

Our chief responsibility in this life is to act the part of our divinity honestly and sincerely in our every word, act and deed! We should never allow anyone to cause us to lower our consciousness by their words, acts or deeds and cause us to lose our divine experience of and in this life plane of our total experience of the unsearchable gift of our being.

You may not be able to change or control the people around you but you can always determine the level of

consciousness on which you meet them and react to them. This is one of the most significant discoveries you can ever make. It will lead to a tremendous stability and confidence. You will come to know that no matter what happens in your life, you never have to be afraid, you really do not have to worry or to be anxious. You can determine your reaction and then your course of action. Turn the other cheek and meet the experience on the level of your divinity and you will achieve true self-mastery as did Jesus of Nazareth before you.

Now in regards to the admonition to “go the second mile.” In Jesus’ time it was a right of Roman legionnaires to compel subject peoples to carry their burden for a distance of one mile. It was an imposition of despotism, and the subject people could do nothing about it. Jesus’ psychology indicates an uncommon-sense way of doing something about it. They could break their bonds of enslavement by doing what was demanded of them as if they really enjoyed doing it. And, I suppose, that doesn’t make sense to you, does it? The story of the coin with Caesar’s profile on it didn’t make a lot of sense to a lot of people either until Jesus’ true meaning was explained to us.

Jesus knew that if you do only what is required of you and no more, you are truly a slave. This is true whether it is

meeting the demands of a tyrannical employer or following unjust laws of the land. To travel the first mile brings the same old paycheck, the formal thank-you, the hum-drum experience, the forced smile. It is all that is expected of you and it is all that you give. If you want routine living to become abundant and worthwhile living then you must give more of yourself in everything you do. Don't be like the Roman soldier and glory in yourself - if you must glory then glory in LIFE and the great gift given unto you.

Jesus not only wanted us to walk the first forced mile willingly and with an honest smile on our face, but wants us to go the second mile giving even more of ourselves than is called for. When you go the extra mile do it as a True Christian Spiritualist - give more to your work, fulfill your responsibilities at all times, be thoughtful and kind to people, be a joyous giver and a thankful receiver, make sharing and caring a perpetual habit and watch your life take in a beautiful new meaning and see things change for the good as you do. It is in this second mile that you will discover meaning and happiness in your life, it's where you will discover your true friends and find new ones who are also exerting the effort to raise their levels of consciousness. The true compensation of life, fulfillment and joy, begin where duty leaves off! And that's the uncommon Common Sense of Jesus' psychology.

Now when Jesus says, “Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away” he doesn’t mean that you should go out and fill up every beggar’s cup or become a “soft-touch” for every Tom, Dick, Harry and Jane that comes along. What we are dealing with here is the psychology of non-resistance. One level of this was Jesus’ reply to the rich young man, “Go, and sell all you have and give it to “The Poor,” and “Come, follow me!”

Now there are a couple of ways in which you can “turn him away.” You could bluntly or angrily tell the beggar (or an acquaintance) to get lost. But in terms of the loss to your own “stability of consciousness” it would be cheaper to hand over the amount asked for. Then again you can give them what they ask for just to get “rid of them.” But in this case you may have hurt them much, much more than you have helped them. They may have a problem, a serious one and with your brushing them off, you may have lost the one chance to help them to help themselves and overcome their problem.

When you see the beggar, or the friend approaching you and a resistance begins welling-up within you “turn the other cheek” at once and get your mind on the loving non-resistant Christ Consciousness within you. You cannot afford to do less. From this level of your divinity, you will

respond to all requests with love and understanding. From this level “you will know” if they have a problem that goes deeper than their need of a mere handout and this is where your Sharing and Caring and the opportunity to perform a “Good-Work” arises. Furthermore, you will “recognize the divinity” within them and deal with them on this level if you have followed the Message as given. Now, and if you are in this consciousness, you can deal with them and anybody else you so wish, from the standpoint of their highest good as well as your own. Here we rise above the psychology of non-resistance and into Jesus’ spiritual psychology of healing.

You may give the money if you “see” that it will be used wisely and responsibly but only if you do “see” this. Or you may “be led” to withhold any monetary assistance and instead give freely the blessing of your wise and loving counsel. If they are hungry, feed them; if they are thirsty, give them to drink; if they are in Need of shelter or clothing, see to it. Such blessings may assist them in establishing a new self-image and a trust in your wise counsel. It may help them to find a new self-respect, to rise to a new Faith and a way to meet life head on instead of running away from the inevitable!

It would be a whole new world if we could always meet

and treat people from this level of consciousness. It wouldn't take long for the beggars and the irresponsible borrowers, "the takers," to disappear from our neighborhoods everywhere! By simply living up to our responsibilities and giving the proper and wise Recognition of the divinity of all men and women we can, believe it or not, instill in them new self-respect and a recognition of their own responsibilities.

If we are in tune we can do much to further the war on personal poverty and lack. Consider this - many times in our compassion of making handouts we take away the recipient's personal incentive to do something for themselves and simply further their own dwindling self-respect without even attempting to truly help them out of the hole they have dug for themselves. As long as you continue to be a soft-touch, their "doormat," they will use and abuse you as long as you are willing to allow them to do so!

What you need to do is to help them to change - to be "transformed by the renewing of their minds" and you have the power and the knowledge to do this in and from The Message of I Paul. But, if it's still in your hands and not in your minds, then you can really help no one.

You see, Jesus was justified in telling people to give up



all they had and to “Come, Follow Me”! That “all they had” meant more than personal wealth or personal poverty. It meant doubt, anxiety, fear, lack, non-existent self-respect, the “poor me’s,” hate, anger and all feelings of “the world owes me something.” That “Come , follow me” meant change, and all for the better! Jesus’ psychology was and is always challenging us to take a good look at our lives and their potentials. He wanted us to understand that the greatest problem in our life is the frustration of our own potential. Every single human being on the face of this earth is “stuck in” at one level or another of consciousness and that level is, in the great majority, the carnal, and this accounts for the habitual routine of people’s lives and lifestyles. Most humans really do not live life - they simply exist by going through the motions. Is it any wonder that the rich get richer, the poor get poorer, the hungry get hungrier, big governments get bigger and freedom grows less and less of a reality all over the world! Apathy is a very low level of consciousness, yet it is the level most humans are “stuck-in” to. It’s a level of consciousness wherein self-love and self-respect are non-existent and where there is, of course, no love for one’s neighbor. It’s the darkness of an absence of True Freedom and the non-existence of an active Spirit!

Life is Consciousness. Any and all problems we face are simply an indication that we are out of tune with it - our

wires are down and we are out of touch with both Reality and Truth. The only existence an error or “mistake” condition has, as far as we are concerned, is that which we give it in our own thinking. Withdraw all thought about such conditions and they fade away into nothingness. What matters to us, in reality, is not people, places or things or conditions in general, but the thoughts and feelings we harbor towards them. It is not the conduct of others but our reactions to them that make or mar our lives and all of our life experiences – good, bad or indifferent.

In Matthew 5:43-48 we find more of Jesus’ psychology wherein he challenges us to come to a greater understanding of this thing called Love! What he is saying, in essence, is that you do not really love simply because you love those who love you. He is asking us, “What does that prove?” It’s really quite simple and easy to be nice to those who are nice and friendly towards you. Furthermore, it is easy to love thy neighbor as long as you have some control over who you consider your neighbor. Love is not an emotion that begins in us and ends in the positive response of another. Love is an energy that begins with The Supreme Spirit and has no end. We need to recognize this energy and be moved by it as it flows through us for our benefit and the benefit of all. It’s greater than the sun that shines on everyone and the rain that falls on and for the benefit of the

All in ALL, simply because it is perpetual! Love is not love that alters, falters or dies – the name for that so-called love is emotional insecurity and spiritual ignorance, among other things! And this is the problem with the human race here, and the trouble with our world today, hardly anyone really knows what true love is, never mind manifesting it. How often have you heard said, or said yourselves even, “I loved her (or him) with a passion, but after what he (or she) did to me, I hate them!” That’s the mentality of love held today and yesterday and probably will be so tomorrow! And this is terribly sad, sad because Life is consciousness and Consciousness is Love and hardly anyone gives this the proper “Recognition,” or are even conscious of it!

On the level of our divinity, Love has given us tremendous Powers with unlimited potentialities as our inheritance. However, they are ours to use only as we demonstrate our divinity and its true Love! Love is the key to all doors and The Way to the ALL in ALL.

Now Jesus actually said “Love your enemy” and in doing so he turned off thousands of people then and millions upon millions since then. Not even the Christian religionists can believe that their Jesus went that far – after all, where is the Common Sense in that, they ask. Maybe the Christian religionists didn’t love Hitler but they didn’t do

much to help the Jews either. And speaking of Love we don't want to forget that Germany was, during Hitler's time, a predominantly Christian Religion Nation!

Jesus is saying "Love your enemy" - not because he is deserving of your love, but because when he causes you resistance, anger and hate, you are not acting the part of your divinity and you have sunk to the same level of consciousness as he has. And the Power that goes with your divinity is only yours when you grow up and act the part!

Man is a spiritual being, a spirit of The Spirit, a child of LIFE, heir to all the infinite potential that inheres in all LIFE's creation, including Love and Truth, the strongest forces in existence. But in all reality, the fulfilling of the power of our divinity comes only when we are attuned to The Spirit and are expressing its love, its light, its power! You see, all you are now and all you can ever hope to become depends on how well you understand this thing called Love and how well you express it in your everyday life!

At any time, under any and all circumstances you can turn on the light, and the infinite energy and power of love will completely dissolve the darkness, heal broken relationships and become a veritable protecting presence. Man is a creature of LIGHT, and when his light is shining brightly in all directions and in all situations he is

imperturbable, indefatigable and undefeatable - “Nothing shall be impossible unto him.”

But how many times a day do you actually frustrate that light? Whatever your answer may be, double it, and you will be closer to the truth. If you run into a hostile person or walk in on a hostile group how do you react? Most people meet hostility with same and then upon leaving they will rationalize it by saying “Wow, what an angry person” or “that’s sure one crazy, mad group!,” failing totally to see that your own reaction was just as crazy and your thoughts just as mad! If you doubt that you are guilty of frustrating the light in you, then try keeping score for a week.

Yet, there really is nothing difficult about letting your inner light shine. All you need do is correct the tendency to turn it off when you are faced with a dark situation - it’s what the ordinance of Formative Causation is for, but then, of course, you need to remember to Remember! When Jesus says “Ye therefore shall be perfect . . .,” he means keep your light shining and refuse to dim it or hide it under a bushel for any reason whatsoever, when some person, place or thing causes you fear, anger, bitterness, jealousy and outright hatred, you become your own “enemy” and somebody else’s “slave” and instead of light emanating from you, you are caught up in a wave of darkness wherein

you cannot even love your worst enemy – you!

Jesus' psychology is quite clear when he commands "Love thine enemies and bless those who despitefully use you . . . that you might be the Sons and Daughters of your Father." In other words, love everybody regardless – not because they deserve it but because you deserve it and Need to keep your Love Energy Flowing come rain or come shine! When you completely cease blaming outside influences for all your daily problems and frustrations that keep you in the dark more often than in the light, take a good honest look at the real problem, "you," and then do something constructive about it or you will keep on walking through life's experiences in the dark, miserable and unloved, even despised.

When I Paul early on and in my ignorance, asked if I would ever be perfect and received the answer "No, not in this lifetime," I could have, in my weakness, quit and spent the rest of my life in that weakness, groveling around in my own created misery and darkness, full of the "poor-me's" and believing you and the world "owed" me something, but in spite of my weaknesses I became strong by simply following the Spirit of The Message – staying out of the darkness by keeping the light shining through all kinds of adverse and frustrating situations. I even got used to being

called “dumb” and “ignorant” and why not - I was! But thanks to the LIGHT and The Mind of Christ, I at least now have some Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love, and all because I grabbed onto and held onto the uncommon Common Sense of The Message itself, the Book of Life, The Way to “the Way.” It hasn’t been easy but it has and still is fun and very rewarding, and I know that I am rich way beyond my wildest dreams. Now I know what freedom really is and that one thing alone is worth all the effort I have manifested over the last ten years. I love, I bless, I receive, I travel, I contemplate and I practice the presence in all I do and I even pray when The Spirit moves me, even though I’ve never been a great one for praying - sending energy and love is more important from my viewpoint, but to each his own!

And what is prayer or praying in this day and age? Are you not now the “beggar” or the “friend” looking for a “handout”? Prayer, like the devil, has been reduced down into another religious ploy - not only grossly misrepresented but terribly maligned. If all the prayers were answered in this day and age our world would be an intolerable and impossible place to live. Thanks be that Wisdom knows her own children! Prayer has never brought rain or sunshine or The Kingdom down to earth in spite of Jesus’ own attempts to pray it so! Praying cannot change



Natural Law nor alter Spiritual ones either. Prayer and praying are, in truth, psychological entities not “miracle” makers or magical “get-alls.” People ought to really spend more time listening to The Spirit than clouding up the ether with a lot of nonsensical implorings. If God already knows what you are praying for beforehand and fully understands the “want” or the “need” and all the circumstances, good, bad or indifferent, why Pray? Why not “listen” and wait to see what’s going to happen? The Christian Religion actually teaches that repetition in praying will finally wear God down and get him to acquiesce. The truth is that God pays about the same attention to people saying the Rosary as he does to people who follow a daily horoscope or play with a Ouija board – none!

If praying helps you psychologically, by all means don’t stop. Yet, what I prefer to call higher praying, i.e., meditation, contemplation, cogitation and the Trance States, are much more rewarding and illuminating. Before you pray you had better ask yourself if what you are asking God for is your responsibility and not God’s – remember, “God is not going to do for you what you are capable of doing for yourself”! Mankind has been praying for Peace since day one – do you see any? Is God deaf? No, Peace is mankind’s responsibility, not God’s. God’s Will is the Well-Being of all – that’s God’s Will and to see to it He has given us all the



means to acquire it and prayer is not one of them! I can pray for someone in the hope that they will be motivated enough to get off their backside and do something for their well-being but I know better than to ask God to take care of mine!

Jesus didn't stretch forth his hand and say "these are my mother, my brothers and my sisters, they who Pray," oh no! He said, "these who do the will of my Father!" And therein lies the key to "all things will be given unto you!" Follow the Mind of Christ which is in you with the Full Measure of Faith and you will have no need to ask, no need to knock, no need to pray for yourself - your Well-Being is guaranteed "If and When" you do this and all the praying in the world will never change or dent this Truth!

My advice to people who Pray for Peace is to pray less and use the time to work hard for it. I Paul really believe it will come quicker that way! Action is still The Way to "the Way." I Paul still has that feeling that only the Spirit prays and lately I haven't given mine too much to pray about. How about you?

A study of all the prayer practices of the Christian Religion's family of schisms is interesting and revealing. As expected, the Christian Religionists have strayed far from the Spiritual Teaching of Jesus. We find prayers of flattery, expecting a vain God to respond by praise. There are prayers

of pleading and supplication, for coaxing a miracle from a reluctant God. There are prayers of vain repetition, where the asker hopes that if he prays loud enough and long enough, an apparently inattentive God will “wake-up” and respond or give in to the harangue to obtain some peace and quiet!

It is amazing that so few of these religionists pay any attention to what Jesus taught about prayer and praying! His psychology of Prayer shocked his Jewish brethren and especially its religious leaders whom Jesus accused as perverse prayers and hypocrites. Jesus taught thusly: “But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, (a quiet place where you will be free from all outside interference, noise, etc.) and when thou hast shut thy door, (rid the mind of all other thoughts) pray to thy Father which is in secret (silence); and thy Father which seeth (not heareth) in secret shall reward thee openly (your meditation, which all this is, will be successful). But when ye pray use not vain repetitions (nothing vain in mantras but rosaries are quite vain), as the heathen do; for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking (this is not meditation but religious prayer).”

Jesus shows that Spiritual Prayer, which is actually Meditation, is susceptible of being reduced to intelligible

postulates that may be unquestionably proved in practice! He indicates that the Principles of Spiritual Prayer are universally applicable in all places, at all times and for all persons.

Spiritual Prayer doesn't deal with a capricious Spirit. It is a technique for achieving contact and unity with Spirit and its limitless life, Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence, Power and Love, all of which add up to "The Truth"!

Spiritual Prayer (meditation) is not something we do to ourselves but allow to happen to us! It is not a position but rather a disposition. It's not flattery or begging but rather a sense and need of oneness. It is not asking but knowing! It is not words but feelings. It is not will but willingness!

The trouble with people on this Earth is the fact that they are trapped in a religious mentality composed of myth and propositional theologies. Even the atheist states have more religionists than they do atheists or agnostics! Their attitudes about Spirit, life and prayer have been cut and dried and tied into neat little packages. Each one of these religions claim to be "the truth" but you cannot cut and dry the Truth and hand it out in neat little packages, all of them different at that, simply because the Truth must be Free to do what it does best - Create and Destroy!

Prayer in all religions is a sacramental ritual performed by professionals, or the experience of reading “prayers” from books or repetitious praying using a counting implement to “keep score”! This supposedly simplifies prayer and the praying process but in truth it allows for no real contact with Spirit and reduces prayer to ritual and non-feeling rote. This is not prayer - it is, at best, a frustrating bad habit.

Physical men-women are thinking beings. Spiritual men-women are thinking beings. And the Minds are the connecting link between the physical and the Spiritual being, the link between man-woman and LIFE and LIGHT. Jesus has taught us that true Prayer is not a matter of words or form yet that is exactly what religious prayer is. True Prayer is a matter of Consciousness, of Concentration, of emptying oneself of one's carnal materialism - a spiritually oriented meditation then, with but one purpose - to make conscious contact with Spirit. In such a trance state you cannot pray but You can! The rule is “As he thinketh in himself, so he is.” It is here you knock. It is here you ask. It is here you receive!

“Seek and ye shall find” doesn't mean praying on the street corners or in a temple or a church. You must go “within” where the Kingdom Is! When The Master says,

“the Father who is in secret and seeth in secret” he means that the Supreme Spirit is nonmaterial force that cannot be seen. You cannot see the wind. Yet when you feel the breeze on your face you know it is there. You cannot see The Spirit, but you can “see” it in every thing that lives. You see The Love of the Spirit in all who are loving. You can see The Wisdom of Spirit in the intelligence of your brothers and sisters throughout the Universe. It was in this sense that Jesus said, “He who has seen me has seen The Father,” though this statement has been twisted and misrepresented by the church to support their claim to the Unique Divinity of Jesus. There is a mystery to everything. There is only one Secret Now and that is The Supreme Spirit – the Secret of the Christ, the LIGHT having been revealed! “The Spirit” and “the Grace” of LIFE are the only secrets unobtainable to mankind. There is the mystery of the seed that works underground, sometimes for long periods of time before it puts forth the life within its life and all through its growth its laboratory is still a mystery. In the works of men and women, the mechanism that produces good work, great work and genius are still an unsolved mystery, in spite of the great advances in RNA and DNA. The building of The Great Temple down to the workings of a watch is still a great mystery of causation. The farther we probe out into space the vaster and deeper its expanse becomes to us. All such

matters are mysteries but not secrets and therefore attainable to the minds of men and women everywhere! After all, if we can know the spirit and the Spirit Realms, then we can know and understand all the Mysteries of the Universe, but not ALL of its Secrets.

It is no secret that our Solar System and everything it comprises exists, but it's still a great mystery as to the How and Why and When it owes its existence.

There is no secret about throwing a light switch and flooding a room with light. There is a generator somewhere built by man, supplying the power that flows into the filament of the bulb when the circuit is made. But we don't really know all there is to know about electricity. It's still somewhat of a mystery.

We, mankind here, do not as yet know the mysterious places of Unity and Peace with LIFE. How can we, when we do not even know those places here on W-303? Men and women here do not understand the Will of LIFE, The Well-Being of All in ALL - an Abundance of Life and Good for all and the fulfillment of that Life at its highest reaches.

Jesus' psychology was in total harmony with The Will of the Father and he understood the Divine Law of Abundance and fulfillment which he taught the people to pray for - the Kingdom of God on Earth!

Men and women, from early times, have deluded themselves into believing that outward acts which are easy to perform can be made to take the places of interior changes in thought and feeling which seem to be more difficult. How easy it is to fall into the practice of buying love or “friends” or wearing ceremonial robes, repeating set prayers by rote, using stereotyped forms of devotion, attending religious services at prescribed times or going just because the neighbors go, and still leave the heart and the mind unchanged, pretending to be something they are not.

Jesus called the religious “paraders” hypocrites and fools! He taught people to wake-up and realize that the Father knows you better than you know yourself. LIFE doesn't want a pretender, a play actor, LIFE Wants You! Jesus made it clear that your prayer is not to impress God and certainly nobody on this earth. Your prayer is to lift your consciousness to a level where you may be impressed by Spirit! The meaning of Jesus' reference to the “right” and “left” hand is obvious when we think of the spiritual import of cause and effect, giving and receiving. “Let not thy left hand knoweth what thy right hand doeth.” You exert the effort, don't bother praying for it to be done for you and don't pray for the purpose of, or with your eyes upon, results!

Using prayer as a means to effect a private end is meanness and theft. It supposes dualism and not Unity in nature and consciousness. As soon as the man or woman is at one with Spirit, he-she will not beg. They will then see “prayer” in all Action!

When you pray spiritually or speak the word of Truth, you are laboring in the “causative” realm, in the “secret” realm of spiritual consciousness. It is the “right” hand that is setting into operation a divine law. The “left” hand is the manifestation or answer, the “All things added.” It may also symbolize the thought of lack or limitation and the need to have it filled. Reportedly Jesus said, “Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled. Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat which endureth unto everlasting life.” Here the psychology of Jesus is telling us that we must labor endlessly to alter the concept of LIFE as the “answer man,” the “super-physician,” the “divine-warehouse” and the concept of prayer as the great “spiritual slot-machine.” We must always remember that God is Spirit and we must worship in spirit and Truth.

Some people pray a lot, some a little, and some only when they, or a loved one, are in trouble. Most or all of this kind of prayer is religiously connected and has very little



impact or none on The Powers that be.

As I have said, if this kind of prayer brings some measure of comfort, if it helps in solving a problem or if a person simply needs to talk to God, then I am all for it, but in truth, this kind of Prayer has only secondary value, at best. The most important purpose of True Prayer is the lifting of ourselves to new levels of consciousness where we can be conditioned and changed in mind, body and heart with the all-sufficient life, substance and intelligence of Spirit!

You may pray to get a better job and so forth, and you may well get your reward, but Jesus went above all that and made it pretty clear, “Seek ye first the Kingdom of God and all these things shall be added unto you!” And you are not ever going to locate that Kingdom in any other way except by going “within,” into your closet and after shutting the door you seek it in silence and in “secret” through true Spiritual Prayer! If you seek the Kingdom in a church, a temple or out in public you will not find it – It is not there! So cease with the Lo here, and the Lo there and go where you have been directed and you will find it “IF.” “The Father seeth in secret.” This means that your inward thoughts are all that count! When you get going and get your mind on “the Ordinance of Cause” you will find “answers without

ceasing"! Until you do, you have your reward in a more superficial manner that is not really satisfactory!

Spiritual Prayer-Meditation or True Prayer then, is the very expansion of yourself into the living ether! This then is the real meaning of Prayer-Meditation, Contemplation, Cogitation and Love!

Jesus himself never prayed in public. He always went alone and in silence to Pray. The truth is that no one has ever known what Jesus did in those moments of solitude and silence. The so-called Lord's Prayer was simply an instruction given upon request by his followers. It was also a secret, coded message to his fellow revolutionaries and has already been given in the Message of I Paul. What has been grossly overlooked and misunderstood is one statement about Prayer and Praying that Jesus made and which should have changed everyone's thinking about Prayer, but which did not, then and Now. That statement by Jesus is this very important one, "Your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him." That one statement should have caused men and women then, as well as now, to completely rethink all they currently believed about praying.

The obvious question is - if the Father knows our needs before we ask, why ask? First of all, we must keep in mind

that “God is Spirit,” and not some superhuman being. God is not a “person,” not a “he” or a “him”! but Spirit! Jesus used such expressions of the Supreme Spirit simply to teach us the closeness of The Spirit to us and to teach us how close to The Spirit we should be at all times. It is not easy for us to overcome the thought of God as the Supreme Being “out there” who can help us in our times of need if we ask “Him” or if “He” is in the right mood! When we thus endow God with human qualities, we go astray, and our prayer or “asking” or “begging” implies that we are going to get a “yes” or “no” answer. We may very well receive an answer of “no.” However, the “no” has come out of our very own consciousness, the effect of our own inertia in negative thinking.

You see, if you ask or beg God for something that you are physically and mentally capable of doing for yourself, then your praying is in vain for you already know or should know that the answer is already a predetermined NO! Spirit is simply not going to listen to you or do for you what you are perfectly equipped to do for yourself.

Actually God doesn’t have what you “beg” for, or “ask” for yourself! God, LIFE then, is simply the substance of your need. You don’t have to ask LIFE for life, LIFE is the substance of all life! You are the projection of that life into

“visibility”! Some things are so visible that we render them invisible and some things are so simple that we render them impossible, in our negativism! Let them with eyes “see” and those with ears “hear”!

People pray to be healed but true healing – the unity of body and the minds, comes only by the lifting up of your thoughts to the wholeness of Life within you. You don’t need to ask or beg for it. LIFE is that Wholeness, but you must accept it into your mind which has, up to now, only been “seeing” in part!

You don’t have to ask The Spirit for Wisdom, for The Spirit is Wisdom. Your minds are an intricate activity in The Infinite Mind of LIFE. If there is any interruption in the flow of inspiration and energy of The Spirit in you, that interruption is in you – not in The Spirit. The Spirit never leaves you – you leave The Spirit! You need to reestablish your consciousness, through the Mind of Christ, with the Infinite Mind, then, if you are to be Well. If you’re in harm’s way, dis-eased, distraught, angry or ill, you should at once take inventory of what you have been up to and just where your thinking has been. It’s quite possible you have left the Spirit and need to get back onto The Way at once.

In Mark 11:23-26 we have a saying of Jesus that the church scribes have altered somewhat, but there is one

verse that is typical of the psychology of Jesus, verse twenty-four. Jesus prefaces his answer to the disciple's question concerning the fig tree by saying, "Have faith in God." In other words, do The Will of The Father and you shall have whatsoever you think, as long as you have no doubt. Then he says, "therefore, I say unto you, what things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them!" The exclamation point is mine, for truly this is an amazing statement for anyone to utter.

This verse has been challenged down through the years. People question it by saying, "How can you ask for anything believing that you already have it?" You can, when you realize that you, as a spiritual being, have been endowed by The Spirit with built-in capacities and a Kingdom within you complete with all the sufficient resources needed. Disease or lack or insufficiency or indecision have no place in the Universal Plan of the Infinite for All in All! All of us are the very expression of The Spirit and it is Its ceaseless longing to fulfill us as Whole Beings. You ask for your good in the sense of claiming your inheritance, drawing upon your spiritual reserves with self-confidence. It is in this "sense" and self-confidence only, that you can "remove mountains," obstacles and barriers then on the Way to "the Way."

You “ask” for success by getting into the consciousness of success. You “ask” for peace, by affirming peace and letting the spirit of peace permeate your mind and heart. Peace is not a way to turn on the light in God - it’s a way to turn on The Light in you - and that Light is Christ, the LIGHT then! I might remind you all also that Jesus did very little “asking.” He had that very spiritual way about him, especially when he said, “Come, follow me”! He knew how to claim his God-given inheritance and fulfill his destiny and in doing so he taught us all to do the same.

I Paul have learned the lesson and don’t waste my time asking for help. It is already mine. I claim it. I call it forth in expression by speaking The Truth. I affirm in my consciousness that which is true of God and my relationship with The Spirits and my fellow human beings. Obeying The Mind of Christ is easy - I simply work for The Well-Being of All. First, foremost, and always! Anyone who says that they cannot do the very same thing is not much of a human being and most certainly not a Spiritual. The way I see it, there are enough ills and woes in this world without our adding to them - better we work to overcome them, for Jesus is right, sufficient are the evils for the day.

The Psychology of The Master was founded on two basic principles - The Kingdom of God and Action! And this

was true in both his original militaristic revolutionary plans and his final decision to take the non-violent route as the “suffering servant”! Although Jesus was anti-religion, he held certain Prophets in high esteem. To Jesus, prophets were not fortune-tellers or forecasters of the future but Teachers who taught the Will of God as they saw and interpreted it from past historical events and what should be done Now and in the Future to avoid the pitfalls of the past that plagued their people. The true Prophets were not concerned about the world outside of their own Nation which is also true of Jesus’ immediate concern when he “came out” to change the future of his Nation and its rulers, Rome and the National Religion. He was attempting to reclaim his and his brethren’s rightful inheritance, The Garden of Eden, heaven on earth! He didn’t beg for this, he didn’t plead for this, he went into Action to claim his inheritance both physically and spiritually. Jesus was so fervent about Action that he told a parable about it and even commended a man for taking Action even though it was the wrong action! In fact, he may have told this parable on himself! Let them who have eyes see.

Jesus was a master in the use of affirmatives also, and it may well be that he achieved mastery because of this. Jesus affirmed such truths as “I am the bread of life – I am the light of the world . . . I am The Way, the Truth and the

life.” Thinking in terms of the Divinity of Jesus, many have seen these statements of Jesus as evidence that he lived under a special dispensation. Actually, he was demonstrating The Divinity of Man. He was simply claiming his spiritual unity with The Supreme Spirit, affirming The Truth for and about himself. We must affirm the same Truth for and about ourselves. And for most it cannot be done in their present state of mind! If you cannot get out of the body now and into The Light then you will, most probably, be relegated to the darkness for what will seem an eternity! “But when thou prayest, enter into the inner chamber and shut thy door.” This is Jesus’ teaching of the silence, the dynamic concept for deep meditation. In a very true sense, much of what we think of as prayer is but a preparation for high meditation. It is the process of resolving the conflicts of the mind so that we can be still and know the spirit. We need to get into the very depths of our Being and shut out the concerns of the world and “speak” to the Spirits in secret.

As we grow in our understanding of our relationship with Spirit, as we begin to see ourselves in the reality and light of our divinity, meditation becomes the gateway to the “silent places,” the trance states and the unity of the lower and higher minds, the key to transcendence! Here we affirm the Truth of our Being by Doing! Those who faithfully follow



The Mind of Christ are new creatures – old things are passed away; and see, all things become new in the richness of our new consciousness! In spirit I am now a perfect being. I am strong, confident and capable. I have the ability to do all that needs to be done. I am one with all-sufficient substance, so I am secure and fearless. I am a True Christian Spiritualist! Action in Freedom and Freedom of Action is a necessity to my Well-Being and the Well-Being of others.

Jesus was a dynamic advocate of Freedom in all things Good, Right and True. To him, Freedom and Righteousness were synonymous. Along these lines Jesus never once, contrary to what has been written about him, instructed anyone on what to pray for. He simply, and on request, gave his followers a guideline on “how” to Pray. And as we now know, his remarks on prayer included certain codes, information he only wanted his closest followers to understand. This was not only so in prayer but in his Parables also. We have in our possession some of the code in the so-called Lord’s Prayer. Let us now take a look at his “how to pray” as it is contained in his instructions. Keep in mind that there was no Sermon on the Mount. Jesus was an itinerant teacher and those who traveled with him were few in number. The “multitudes” only gathered at strategic points of his journeys, well announced by his “advance teams.” Much of his teaching was, of course, repetitive, so

that at each place visited The Message could be precisely and concisely given to “new audiences.” He gave a series of dynamic Truths to illustrate the New Consciousness and Conscience people needed to attain to be “Righteous Spiritually” with God and All of God’s Creation!

The so-called Lord’s Prayer is a series of “determined affirmatives” as we shall see. On its surface it appears to be a series of supplications for help, a lot of “please give us” and “please forgive us” and “we beg you” not to lead us into evil and so forth. It is none of these. It is this:

“Our Father” - This is the first affirmative, and the orientation - “God Is” my Father and “I am” his child. Let no one here call any man his “Father,” God is The only Father. (Jesus even went further in regards to his mother, brothers and sisters.) All of this declares our Unity with the Spirit, which is our greatest need and our final goal. The instruction begins on this note, not to get The Spirit’s attention but to direct our attention to that which is in us, the essence of LIFE, Its Presence, Its Energy and Its everlasting Love. Each an Affirmation of God Is - I Am and an esoteric statement of where our True and Only allegiance in this Life lies! Thus Jesus is saying “your allegiance belongs not to Herod, not to Rome, not to The National Religion but to God.” “Give unto Caesar that which is

Caesar's and give unto God that which is God's." The secret message here is that all things belong to God and not to Rome, to Kings, nor to religions. A most seditious statement for that day and age. And this meant your very life in Jesus' original plan of militaristic-revolutionary Action! Of course, in the end, he gave up his life, one life for the many instead of the many for the one! The Cross was considered "foolishness" simply because it was viewed as an act of suicide, even by many of Jesus' disciples and followers! Yet this was Jesus' affirmation of "Our Father," of the "God Is-I am" that he practiced, taught and gave his life for! This is why The Message exhorts us to practice what we teach, to Share and Care and to Give, come what may! To act the part, to pretend, is no Action at all - when you know better, and it is a complete denial of "Our Father" and all that it stands for. A guaranteed ticket to the darkness. "Those who are not for us are against us." How true!

How tough was this Jesus? Tough enough to say Come, Follow Me and let the dead bury the dead, or be dead!

"Who art in heaven" - this is the second affirmative. Jesus' intent was to "locate God" and the Presence of "God's Spirit" once and for all.

When the authors of Genesis came up with their opening declaration of God's power by stating, "In the

beginning God Created the heavens and the earth,” they had no knowledge that the “heavens” and “the earths” were one and the same thing. Standing on this earth and looking “up” or “out-there” it is easy to “see” how they came to their conclusions. What would they have concluded if they were standing on another planet in our Galaxy or on another Earth somewhere? Would not our Earth then have been considered a part of “the heavens”? Of Course! Jesus spoke not only of “heaven,” i.e., “who art in heaven” but also of “The Kingdom” of God, i.e., “Neither shall they say Lo, here or there! for lo, The Kingdom is within you,” and “Repent, the Kingdom is at hand.” Which do you suppose Jesus was speaking about in Matthew 19:28, 29 and 30, “heaven” or “The Kingdom”? I just recently watched a television evangelist explain these verses as an event to take place in the hereafter. Not so!

It’s as plain as the nose on your face that this was Jesus’ declaration of the New Order to his disciples. The “reestablishment” of the Promised Land to be brought about by the planned revolution wherein Jesus sits on the Throne as king and the new order or law is to Think, Love and Obey and his disciples sit on lesser thrones with him as the New Sanhedrin to judge the twelve tribes of Israel as to their Actions and stand for or against the Revolution for Freedom and The Spiritual Way leading to everlasting life.

The “first” and “last” affirmation is explained elsewhere, such as in Matthew Chapter 20, verses 1 through 28.

Jesus’ thinking and use of the terms “Heaven” and “The Kingdom of God” will be covered in an Addendum to this Communication.

Now, getting back to “who art in heaven,” as we said, it was Jesus’ intention to locate God and God’s Presence once and for all. We have within us every moment of our lives the great potency which is Spirit. The degree of effectiveness that this potency has upon our lives is entirely up to each one of us. And the Truth is that most humans have ignored it and simply do not understand its great possibilities. Yet it is always there, Always Present. We often hear about repressed emotions, but good can be, and often is repressed. The “frustration of potentiality” is the very cause of all of mankind’s mental, emotional, physical and spiritual problems. Jesus’ psychology pointed out that no religion could make a man or woman good by putting religion in them. Good is the “great Potency within” as well as our “great potential” which can only be manifested by us from within. And we can never do this if we are trying to serve two masters whether it be mammon and The Spirit, a conscious altering substance and The Spirit, bigotry and The Spirit and so forth. These are self-imposed forms of slavery and being

slaves to such we are not Free and when we are not Free, guess what!

“Hallowed be Thy name” – this is an affirmation of the Wholeness and the Omnipresence of The Spirit. “Hallowed” comes from the root word from which we get such words as “whole,” “hale,” “hearty,” “heal” and “healthy.” This means, then, that “Wholeness” and “Perfection” is the True Nature of LIFE. Man has been conditioned by his religions to think of a duality, God and Satan, Good and Evil, and he has been taught to fear both. If people would only think this out they could “see” just how ignorant this whole concept truly is.

Jesus is here affirming the Unity of the Spirit, the integration or Wholeness of God. Does the fountain send forth from the same opening, sweet and bitter water? God cannot be Life and at the same time send sickness. God cannot be love and do something in wrath or anger to make us fear The Spirit – any Spirit! God cannot be a protecting Spirit and at the same time will accidents. These things are totally unlike The Spirit’s nature, which is Whole. “Hallowed” (perfect-whole) be (is) thy nature (being)!

“Thy Kingdom come, thy will be done in earth as it is in Thy Presence.” Here Jesus affirms that God’s Kingdom is the Perfect Creation. Each individual is a perfect idea in the

Infinite Mind, a divine possibility of infinite capacity. Like the pattern in the seed, there is a plan for every person in the Infinite Mind, which gives rise to a ceaseless urge within us toward fulfillment. This is called God's Will. How important it is that we understand this. The Will that Wills above all wills is the ceaseless longing of The Spirit of the Well-Being of all in ALL and to perfect Itself, as well as express Itself, in the Creation. There cannot be even the slightest implication of restriction or limitation in the Will of God, i.e., the Mind of Christ! In true Prayer this statement is simply a beginning decree: Let that perfect idea, which I AM in spirit, unfold in me and through me. Let the divine will lead me into a manifestation in the outer, of that which I am within.

“Give us this day our daily bread” (or give us tomorrow's bread today). The spirit of the original form is more like this: Thou art our supply, and the daily, perpetual source of that supply. This is not asking the Spirit for supply. It is simply an affirmation of the Truth that Spirit is substance and a claiming of one's inheritance. In all Creation men-women are individuals, and of all the creatures they, alone, were Created Free to rule over their earths and all that they contained. Human greed, selfishness and mismanagement violate the will and desire of LIFE by cutting off the daily supply of substance to millions of their fellow human beings. Yet humans are sick,



suffer, are unhappy and know need for many other reasons of which the predominant one is the failure to exert the effort, the Action then, to claim one's legitimate inheritance from Spirit.

“Forgive us our debts as we have forgiven our debtors.” This indicates the working of the cosmic law of Giving and Receiving, Cause and effect, forgive and you are forgiven. This does not ask God's forgiveness. It simply reminds us of the forgiveness of divine law, its infinite love. (Love itself is a forgiving action.) It stresses that the Action is started by our “sincere effort.” We push the button and divine action moves in to assist, cleanse and release us. There are those of us in the Family who know that this is so, because we have exerted the effort and we have reaped the results. Thus we have become our own best witnesses and we are an active part of the command to “Prove all things”!

“Lead us not in temptation and lead us out of our evil ways.” No spirit can lead us into temptation or cause us to commit evil acts. Such acts of unrighteousness are products of carnal consciousness and the illusionary-insidious “self.” Both Jesus and Paul made this truth absolutely clear in two undisputed sayings: “Get thee behind me Satan. You do not the will of God but the will of men” and “man, the creator of all evil.”



The two power concept of God and Satan is an untrue and grossly unfair assault upon the minds of men and women and originated as a weapon of the religionists to control such minds through fear and also to explain the age-old question of “If God is Good, where does evil come from?”

Let’s face The Truth squarely - a belief in Satan and a belief in God at the same time is, in reality, one and the same thing, just as a fear of God and a fear of Satan is! This is not only religious ignorance but compounded spiritual ignorance as well. It’s simply amazing how many people there are who are fearful of “mind control,” but at the same moment hold onto a belief in Satan and of evil spirits! Satan is a human crutch, an excuse actually, for one’s unrighteous acts, nothing more then but an illusionary self-pardon for our own evil wherein we can only “think” that “the devil made us do it”!

So it is very important that we get the right interpretation of this line in the so-called Lord’s Prayer, and that we fully grasp Jesus’ thinking in regards to Satan and evil as spelled out in The Message for us because it is the key to defeating the Christian religionists’ hold on their adherents!

You see, Jesus does employ the language of the

Kingdom, but he uses this language in a way that differs explicitly from the usage of it by his contemporaries, predecessors and successors, and we must be fully Prepared to teach this and to Prove this by utilizing the very literature of the christian religions which hold such literature dear and sacred!

“Freedom,” to Jesus, means to own your own mind, your own body, and your own spirit. Anything less than this is slavery regardless of how you may view it!

The line in question has always been made to imply that God could and would lead men and women into temptation, into difficulties, into evil. Some theologians have even gone so far as to use the saying of Jesus “Sufficient is the evil of this day” to support this belief! This certainly proves just how uncommon Common Sense is. God can never lead us into temptation. Can light lead us into darkness? There can be no darkness in light, ever!, and there can be no ignorance in Spirit “enlightenment,” simply because ignorance is darkness!

So, in this statement Jesus is simply affirming The Truth that the urge within us for the expression of our potential is so great that it will never leave us comfortless in our moments of trial. It will never abandon us in our moments of confusion or temptation, and it will always be

the very power of help and healing and deliverance if we, of course, do our part in the whole scheme of The Universal Plan of LIFE. None of us can disclaim the fact that our “life story” has been fraught with temptations and the evils inherent in our Carnal Consciousness. We live our whole physical life “in story” and Jesus’ psychology was tuned into those “life-stories” in all of his sayings and parables which you shall see when you peruse my “In Quest of The True Jesus” which I shall deliver to you shortly.

It is quite clear to us that Jesus knew that temptations came, not by some “outer power” or influence, but from what he called the “demon” of human consciousness, from selfishness, pride, ego, greed and so forth. And the resulting “evil” is simply the “confusion” that wells up in us from the temptations. Regardless of the forms it takes, “evil” is simply the concealment and absence of “good.” We need not fight the evil condition or the evil person – the trick is to “let our light shine.” Light erases evil, good is revealed, and evil (so-called) disappears as darkness disappears with the rising sun, from us.

“For thine is the kingdom, and the power and the glory, forever, Amen.” These words are not original to Jesus but were added by the church for liturgical purposes. We need not discuss this.

Now let us go back to the words “May thy kingdom come . . .” Not only did the people of Jesus’ time want to know when the kingdom was coming, but so have people of all days and ages been wanting to know when the kingdom was coming! So let us attempt to explain the psychology of Jesus in regards to heaven and the Kingdom of God in the Addendum to this Communication which follows.

In closing allow me to explain to you the word “Amen” which has many uses and more than a singular meaning.

Amen has been used to mean “so be it” or “let it be so.” In the ancient Hebrew and Aramaic it means “Verily, it is established, it is true, this is The Truth.” Jesus, and only Jesus, uses it in the four gospels of The New Testament some fifty times and usually at the beginning of a saying where he is quoted as saying, “Verily, I say unto you . . .” In this usage the word “Amen” takes on a very important significance to our understanding of Jesus.

Jesus’ use of the word “Amen” was his signal that “this is the Truth . . . it is now done” – or, “this is now being done.” Jesus, then, used “Amen” much as I Paul used the term “It is good you come” with me.

The sun is now beginning to set on The Message of I Paul and my own “longest of days” and as we push upward to complete our task we sincerely hope that it has helped all

who have come in contact with it and have given it the proper respect due it, that it has changed the “story of your life” to the better Way of The Good, The Right and The True!

In All love for Familyship, Unity and Peace,

I remain your brother and servant,

I Paul.

## **31/A1 - When Is the Kingdom of God Coming?**

Greetings to All in All.

Some eleven years ago my response to that question above would have been “what kingdom” or even “who the hell cares.” Obviously, I Paul has changed somewhat and clearly to the delight of many, I am sure.

I know I am delighted and happy, in spite of my weariness, but I anticipate some relief, rest, and recreation soon. But, you’re not going to catch me saying that I’ve earned it - I learned that lesson quite some time ago!

Now, the question of “When is the Kingdom of God coming” is a good question and a fair question and one I am happy to be in a position to answer for you.

In Religious Christian theology there exists a word that lay people rarely ever hear and usually do not understand - “eschatology.” It is the Religious doctrine of the Final Judgment and the future of mankind coupled with the Second Coming of Jesus the Christ. Page after page of doctrine and dogma, so as to be almost uncountable, have been duly formulated about the literal coming of the Kingdom to this physical world of ours. And billions of followers have been looking hopefully and or fearfully for just such an event to happen and for signs that foretell its

imminence.

There are those today, as well as the yesterdays, who preach that we are now in the final stages of a civilization that will ultimately be destroyed, ushering in a “New heaven and a new earth,” when “former things are passed away, and all things are made new.” These voices are but echoes of the past and yet some cite the secularization of life, the atomic bomb, and the growing emphasis upon drugs, sex, terrorism, street violence, religious wars and materialism. Some, even, go so far as to cite abortion and homosexuality as the root causes of our society’s woes and contributing to the end of our civilization via the wrath of God. And it should come as no surprise that this “end of the world” is used as a ploy to extract funds from the gullible and if you need proof of this simply turn on the T.V. evangelists on a Sunday morning and you will have it! Such “fear tactics” ought to tell you at least two things. Firstly, it ought to tell you just how deep into the muck and mire the Christian religion has really sunk, and secondly, just how gullible and ignorant its adherents truly are!

Up to now, civilizations have never been destroyed by outer conquest or by divine fiat. Civilizations have risen and fallen though, by the rise and fall of human consciousness. And we must not forget that some have simply and

mysteriously vanished. And then of course there is the mysterious disappearance of the dinosaurs some 65 million years ago, but that's another story altogether from the one we now face.

The Fall of Rome, for example, was an inside-job! (Just as the fall of pure Spiritualism to religion was an inside-job.) Whenever mankind is in trouble, it is not the wrath of God that causes it, but the darkness of men and women's minds. The danger is not in the atom, but in the Adams and Eves who are frustrating their divine potentials. The "Kingdom of Heaven" is where man and woman are, and "the mind that was in Jesus" is in all of us, regardless, of wherever we may be!

The Spiritual Psychology of the Master can be summed up in these words of Jesus, "Who is my mother, my brothers, and my sisters?" "These," he said, pointing to his movement's inner-circle, "Who do the Will of God." In other words, it is the totality of a person's thoughts, love and obedience to the Will of God and the resultant Actions thereof.

Things, are then, as we will it - as we exert the full effort called for via the Mind of Christ, or, they will be "as we will it" without good thought, without love, without obedience - chaotic and miserable! The choice is always



ours to make! For it is as we will it.

And so it is with atoms, and machines, and nations, and freedoms, and inner potentialities. It is as we will it. And so is Heaven!

In our quest for understanding we are gradually stockpiling the knowledge, the tools and the building materials needed, to turn our earth into the Reality of the intent and purpose that the Will of God Created it as, a Heaven! How could the Will of God have created anything less? If you have diligently followed the evolvment and the unfolding of all this through the Message of I Paul, you would now, not only know the answer, but you would also thoroughly understand it! It is as you will it!

Potentially, we are greater than our fears and doubts, and much stronger than our weaknesses, and much more tireless than our efforts attest to! Mankind here, is still in his infancy. He has a very long way to go ahead of him to fulfill the Will of God, the Well-Being of ALL in ALL!

The future of our civilization may very well depend upon whether we can succeed in helping men and women everywhere to know and relate to the “beyond within.”

Since the earliest of times mankind here has rationalized the inequities of this life by a dream of a future

life where all things are made Good, Right and True. In all cultures we find references to such places as “heaven,” “beyond the blue,” “Valhalla,” “The happy hunting grounds” and so forth. The question that we are concerned with is, “What did Jesus actually teach about this?” He often referred to the “Kingdom of God” and the “Kingdom of heaven.” Where did he locate them? Did he talk about “pearly gates,” “harps,” “spirits with wings,” or “white robes”? Hardly.

Jesus was quite specific. And the evidence is also quite specific, that the religion built around him, has paid absolutely no attention to what he did say.

Jesus said the “Kingdom of Heaven” is “at hand.” This indicates that the time is “Now”! And being asked by the Pharisees when the Kingdom of God” was coming, he answered them saying, “the Kingdom of God cometh not with observation: neither shall they say, lo, here! or, there! For lo, the Kingdom of God is within you.” This indicates that it is not a place in space!

The “City of Light,” the “streets paved with gold” and the “green pastures” kind of heaven has evolved as a result of man’s speculation upon Jesus’ and others concepts. It has always been a great problem for man to understand non-material things from a material frame of reference, to

contemplate a fourth-dimensional experience in a three dimensional outlook on life.

This world is a world of infinite possibilities and always has been for it was once the Real Garden of LIFE, that which the bible called the Garden of Eden which man-woman have turned into a garden of evil!

Every moment here contains uncountable numbers of possibilities. And all of them are actualized, only we do not see it and do not know it simply because they are so visible we have rendered them invisible. We always see only one of the actualizations, and in this lies the poverty and the limitation of being “stuck-in” at the Carnal level of consciousness. Time is not a passing phenomenon, but an unfoldment of the infinite possibilities of an expanding universe.

You see, if you believe as the Religionists believe, that the Creation is over and done with and that Spirit Revelation is at a standstill, then you are terribly mistaken.

When Jesus talks about the Kingdom of Heaven it is clear that he is not talking about a place we go to. It is not Future. It is “at hand,” it is in “the Now,” we are in “the midst of it”! It is not somewhere to go, but actually something to be in.

With the gift of Physical Life man-woman inherited the kingdom of heaven. With the gift of the spirit, “man-woman,” i.e., “True-self,” inherited the Kingdom of God! The “Now” and the “Future”!

We know what Jesus answered to the Pharisees question, “When is the Kingdom of God coming?” When his inner-circle asked the same question his answer was, “When the without becomes the within.” Again, if you have been following the Message of I Paul, you should understand this perfectly. Let them who have eyes, “see”!

We know from the gospels themselves that Jesus spoke in his native tongue, Aramaic. Whether he always did is still disputed by some scholars. We also know that the earliest gospels in existence were written in either Coptic or Greek. It is also possible that some were written in the Aramaic and the Hebrew. The point here is just how much was lost in the translations from the originals up to their present forms in the English, for it is apparent that the Kingdom of Heaven and the Kingdom of God are often taken to be one and the same.

The Greek word for heaven is “ouranos” which literally means “expanding.” The “Kingdom of heaven,” then, is the principle of expansion. Life is a limitless expansion within an expanding Universe. Is not the very nature of life growth?

Certainly. This is why Jesus, in attempting to explain to his audiences, the meaning of the “Kingdom of heaven,” used such illustrations as “the sower going out to sow seed,” The Mustard seed, the “little leaven that leaveneth the whole lump.” A strange lot of illustrations indeed, if he is describing some place “out-there” or “up-there” that we go to sometime in the future! (As you will see in “The Quest for the Real Jesus” it was the author of Matthew that inserted into his parables of Jesus the lead-in term “the Kingdom of God is like a man. . .”)

Flesh and blood cannot enter the “Kingdom of God,” i.e., the Realm of the Spirit. There is a Physical body and there is a Spirit body. While the Physical body is restricted to the visible physical-material realms, the Spirit and spirits are under no such restrictions with the exceptions spelled out in the Message of I Paul.

As we have stated Life is growth and unfoldment and life is lived from the inside out. It’s amazing how few people realize this. The majority of people live their lives from the outside in. In doing this they frustrate their potential in allowing people, places and things (the body especially) to dictate their level of consciousness - and, worst of all, to dictate their own self-image! This is the epitome of “mind control,” of mental slavery, then, which is “total”

enslavement!

You see, if your life, your thoughts and your actions are determined by what other people say and do, what conditions appear to be, what you read in the newspapers and hear and see on radio or television, you are little more than a barometer of what other people think and do - a “slave” when you mimic them without any original thought of your own. If you are caught up in the dilemma of whether to conform to the world around you or to spend your life resisting it, you are in trouble. You need a “renewing” of your mind.

Jesus first came out declaring the Kingdom was at hand, which he changed to “ye shall know the Truth and the Truth shall make you free.” It really doesn’t matter what happens around you or to you. These things are in the world and you can change the world. All that really matters is what happens in you - your thoughts about conditions and people. And you can control your thoughts for you are the master of your mind - or you should and can be!

There is a belief deeply rooted in the collective unconscious of the race of mankind here that you “cannot teach an old dog new tricks.” Reject this fallacy for the untruth it really is. When you catch Jesus’ concept of the divinity of man-woman, you can see that you can not only

change human nature, but that this is the whole object of the teaching of True Christian Spiritualism. “As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up.” And you are that very son or daughter of man and you can transform your life’s experiences and transcend your consciousness and live now in that “upper room” of Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love. But you need to do more than simply consider it - you need to Act upon it! The “I’ll start tomorrow” syndrome never materializes simply because that particular tomorrow never comes! I Paul personally know people in “The Family” who have started hundreds of times but have never really begun. And they will never begin until they cease conforming to this world, people, places and things, and leave matters entirely alone that do not matter!

Jesus’ message of the “Kingdom of heaven” is the message of “wholeness Now”! This is exactly the same as the Message of I Paul - to be fully human and fully spiritual NOW! People are forever only seeing a part of life and concluding that the part is the whole. This is the whole problem in formulating spiritual views. Spiritualism is the perception of where we stand in relation to the Universe and not simply to this Earth or to the world we have built around us or allowed to surround us and enslave us. And that perception is, and must always be, an individual experience

first. Someone communicates “their” conception to us and lo and behold we are on our merry way to the creation of dogma. In time whole bodies of people accept a “perception” that is given to them second hand. Some even insist that there is no such thing as “inner perception,” or first hand experience, and label such as the work of the devil.

Jesus recognized that the greatest foe of the great idea of the “Kingdom of heaven” Now! was Religion. He was merciless in his denunciation of the Pharisees and scribes and their “Way”! They symbolized the crystallized preoccupation with externals, with custom-made convictions and perceptions of matters that did not matter. He said, “Woe unto ye scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut the Kingdom of heaven from man!” Today “Pharisaism is the greatest obstacle to men and women in the world to the full realization of The Truth and second only to the “self.” To Jesus, religion was nothing more than the wearing and parading of a meaningless badge of conventional respectability. It completely shut out freedom of thought and totally enveloped the “Kingdom of heaven” in darkness. Today, belonging to the “right kind” of Religion is far more important, to those so-minded, than to being the “right kind of person”!



True Spiritualism is guided by Spirit and Truth, while all religions are guided by men and women pharisees, priests, scribes and ministers who rule by set dogmas, doctrines, rites, rituals, church laws and so forth!

Now if you were to take the influence of men and women completely out of Religion what would you have left? Absolutely nothing! But if you take the influence of men and women out of Spiritualism what would you have left? Spirit, of course! It's really that simple. God is Spirit and if you wish to Worship God and Follow God then you need do so in spirit and in Truth! And that's exactly how you get from the "Kingdom of heaven" to the "Kingdom of God"! This is the Way to "The Way," then, as Jesus taught it and I Paul expressed it. And we need keep in mind that it is an "inner experience" first via an individual effort and quest, before it can develop into an All-inclusive collectivity and Activity!

Yes, the "Kingdom of heaven" is at hand, for it is the "Always Now" of the Creation and it has been so since "The Tree of Knowledge," "The Tree of Righteousness," and "The Tree of Life" were planted here!

In view of existing world conditions it is time for "a change," time for a "New Age," and yes, time for a "New Race" of men and women. The very existence of the human

race here on this Earth lies in hourly peril. Not by any planned fiat of God and most certainly not by a humanly concocted eschatology. The race stands in peril of a Nuclear Holocaust and it can be one of intention or error, it matters not.

So the time is ripe for the advent of a New Age, a Spiritual Age, and a New Race, the Advent of the spiritualized Man-Woman! This will be brought about, not by a miracle or a fiat of God, but by a natural and gradual refinement of Men and Women of the flesh into Men and Women of the Spirit. These Fully Human and Fully Spiritual Men and Women will increase as this world's "warring" Religions will decrease. It is in this transition that Unity and Peace will come about and this Earth will be restored, "bound-back," to its rightful status as a Heaven.

Is the time ripe for a change? Time for this "earth" and this "heaven" to pass away and for "All Things" to be made New? Most certainly!

It's no secret that the majority of the people on this earth are quite disturbed over the trend of this world of ours, over the divisions of politics, religions, and nations, over the worsening of man's inhumanity to man. Over factional and sectional wars and terrorisms, over the alarming arms race, over poverty, malnutrition and hunger, and we could

go on and on.

So certainly, there is a need for the advent of a New Race, but we must not overlook the fact that a race of Men and Women is made up of individuals. And we know that Unity and Peace, like Charity, begins at “home” - within. Every person must ultimately face this fact and direct their desire for world Unity and Peace, through the energy and action of love, with the ideal: “Let it begin within me and from me!”

From “Here,” this is the only one way possible to restore this Earth to its Creative intent and purpose! No political, economic, or social ideology has done it. No religion has done it. No war has done it. No philosophy has done it. No god or goddess has done it and most certainly the One and Only God, LIFE, hasn’t done it nor should we expect the Supreme Spirit to do it for us. After all, we created the mess of this world and we are fully capable of undoing it - one way or another!

The whole problem with the human race on this Earth is the truth that we expect too much from God and not near enough from ourselves!

Until men and women of this Earth come to the full and clear understanding that God is not going to do for them those things they are perfectly capable and equipped to do

for themselves, the chaos and perils of life here will continue and increase. Yes! We trust in God and we trust God to keep its promises. But the men and women of this earth must also come to the realization that most of the claimed promises of God are nothing more than the figments of the wildest imaginings of men and women just like them! Simply put, who here knows the Mind of God? I Paul need not answer that question for any sane person.

No matter what conditions the world is in, you can always find Unity and Peace and Love within yourself, for the Kingdom of God is within you. And it is not enough to insulate yourself in peace away from the rest of society. You must become a peacemaker, a visible influence for Unity, Peace and Love in society. This is what Jesus meant when he commanded his audiences to not only love their neighbors but to love their enemies as well. To love only those who love you, say a brother or a sister, gains you little recognition.

The religionists are always talking about being “saved.” This usually implies being saved from “society,” from such “pagan evils” as abortion, drunks, homosexuals, divorce, and whatever else they consider to be sin. But they fail to understand that no man or woman can be saved from society, they must be saved with it – if at all! For they are society and society is them!

In the bible, Cain is made to ask the question “Am I my brother’s keeper?” This too, is a very good and fair question and one deserving of a thoughtful answer.

If “being a keeper” does anything, it does one thing well, it arouses the resentment of being “kept.” So in view of everything the Message has to say, directly or indirectly, on this subject we must say, No, we are not our brother’s keeper! But! I am my brother’s brother. And more than that, in the cosmic perception of the Divinity of Man, I am my brother and my brother is me! and so forth.

When we begin to treat males and females, individually and collectively, as spiritual beings, giving full Recognition to the divinity within them, then and only then will we begin doing business with them on the level of love and mutual trust which is practically non-existent in this world of ours, today. We will begin to expect far more of ourselves and others. And we will treat people everywhere as if they were already what our Faith reveals they can be, True Christian Spiritualists. In this very way we can influence others to help themselves to rise above their low levels of consciousness and living and experience and express more of the divine potential “within” them.

The Christian Religion keeps on preaching about the saving of society but Jesus called for a society of saviours.

Don't stand looking up at the heavens - you are standing on it! Stir up the gift of God in you and be a saving influence and a peacemaker. You can do it!

We all know that the Message of I Paul exhorts us to Prepare, Follow, Come. The highest level of discernment of this is Think (Righteously), Love (Truly) and Obey (perfectly). This is the teaching of Jesus and the Message of I Paul.

Now, in closing, let me answer the original question:

When you are in "self," you are in "hell." When you are out of "self," you are in the Kingdom of Heaven.

And when you are totally out of "self," and out of the physical body, you are in the Kingdom of God!

No one can say it simpler or clearer than this. So be it!

In All Love for Unity and Peace,

Your brother and servant,

I Paul.

## 32 - My Way Is the Way!

Greetings to All who are in ALL, Yesterday, Today, and Tomorrow.

I speak now only to those who are Free. Free from fear, from doubt, from “self.” To those only with clear minds, Free from any mind altering substance or substances. Free, then, to Transcend, for that is the Way - My Way. And, if Free, your way also. And, if so, that My Way is your way and therefore “the Way” you will understand the following. To the rest of you I Paul can only say “keep trying,” keep attempting to exert the effort, try, with all your heart and minds, to follow the directions exactly as given. Do not follow fools, do not abide those who abide not the Will of LIFE, for themselves as well as others, for they are naught but the blind leading the blind. Beware of hypocrites! Fools! who hide behind “want” and attempt to explain it away as “Need.” There is only one way to “the Way” and all can, and must find it. It requires self-discipline as well as Common Sense. It requires Love as well as Understanding. It requires true perception, and that requires a clear and quick mind. It requires total freedom to act and Act Righteously, especially for others. It requires your Presence, not your availability. It demands respect for all that is Good, Right, and True. And above All it requires that you Activate the Mind of Christ

within, Fully and Completely. This cannot be done where there is a lack of Freedom, both physically and spiritually, and one cannot be free Spiritually while physically in a state of bondage to any “thing,” “person(s)” or “place”! Freedom must be Absolute!

Being “in bondage to” and being “freely with” or freely “in the midst of” are entirely different matters altogether, when it comes to “people,” “places” and “things”!

If your Way is My Way, then you are not superior to any of them, but at the same moment, neither are you inferior to any of them, you are simply Free! Free, then, not above, not below, not aloof – just Free! You can be “with them,” “apart from them,” or “in the midst of them,” but you are still Free! Free in spite of them, then! But you are not Free unless your mind is!

True Freedom, like True Love, is a very evasive phenomenon. And you cannot have one without the other! And, furthermore, True Love always precedes True-Freedom, simply because you do not have to be Free to Love! Yet, you must Truly Love in order to be Truly Free! But what is True Love?

Both religious Christianity and Spiritual Christianity claim to Ways of Love – Christ-Like Love, to be specific. Which is correct is not the issue here. The issue at hand is



what is True-Love?

We feel certain that Jesus taught the value of Love and we are just as certain that Paul taught us what it did, but we still need to ask the question, “What is True-Love?” There is almost an endless variety of love, or what people call, or cite, as love. These are charity, pity, love of humanity, love of neighbor, love of God, love as a virtue, love as a duty, love as a value, parental love, romantic love, love of others like oneself, love as union, as desire and so forth.

Each of these types of love carries with it a very different understanding of reality as well as diverse beliefs concerning what it means to be fully human.

And True-Love, the Love that comes from being Fully Human and Fully Spiritual, the gate-way to Pure Love, carries with it a highly different understanding of all things – Now and Then!

True-Love then is Total Obedience to the Mind of Christ, i.e., the Well-Being of All in ALL! Therefore “My Way” is not “my way” at all but “The Way” of LIFE! The Way of LIGHT. The Way of Love!

The Way then is twofold: 1) The Kingdom of God is within you, and 2) the kingdom of heaven is in your midst! This, then, from the Book of the Two Ways, explains the

## NOW and the Future!

We know that Jesus-Like Love is love of neighbor - meaning an orientation toward others and their well-being - and one must be, of course, Free to manifest this Christ-Like Love! For this was the purpose of LIGHT and its “creation reason” in the overall Universal Plan of God, or LIFE, then!

If the Spirit, Spirits even, then are for your Well-Being, how, then, could you possibly be against it?

And, furthermore, if you are not Well, in the sense of The Message of I Paul, if you are not Fully Human and Fully Spiritual, then, then you are not Free and you do not even know what True-Love is!

If you doubt, if you fear, if you anger, even, then you are not Free. If people, places and things can still control your thoughts, you are not only enslaved, but you do not even know what Christ-Like Love truly is! Your anger, your fear, and your doubt, are certainly negative manifestations that work against, not only your own Well-Being but the Well-Being of All! Think on this.

You see, Freedom of Being, Freedom of Doing, and Freedom of Love, are all first, a simple matter of minds.

True-Love is the simplest of All Love. Simple, simply

because, True Love needs, nor wants, any motivation whatsoever - it loves because it is Love - unexplainable - unfathomable, but Absolutely all embracing, all engulfing! It is Love free of all encumberments, all necessities. It neither seeks anything, nor expects anything! It is, of course, the Ultimate of all Freedom, but Freedom is not its goal, but rather, its Partner! Together they seek no thing, they are Everything!

You see, Love of self - Love of others, has never truly been understood. Love, especially True Love, knows no other! To it, True-Love, there is “no other,” no discrimination, then, is involved, cannot be involved, True Love is Love - ONE and ALONE, Alone and One - Inclusive, then, never exclusive, then!

We can pinpoint four exclusive types of response “to others,” which pass, as love, in our modern society, and which are not true-love as we are attempting, herein, to convey to you.

Commonly confused with Christ-Like Love, then are these: 1) Feeling sorry for others (pity), 2) Love of mankind (humanitarianism), 3) Self-denial (altruism), and 4) Wanting to be in union with others (sentimentalism).

You may, Now, pick your spot - I Paul, guarantee, “you” fit into one of these!

I say this, simply because, no one in the Family of LIFE and LIGHT, manifests the courage, the humility, the common sense, nor the desire, to manifest Pure Freedom, and Pure Love, which must begin with True-Love, i.e., Total Freedom of Mind, Body, and Spirit!

And, such Freedom comes, must come, and probably will come, only at the expense of your Love! It may very well destroy “you” but it will I guarantee, create “You,” NOW, and in the Future! So what can you lose?

The four exclusive responses “to others” does not include the one response necessary to find the way to “The Way,” i.e., Love as an Energy! And, Absolutely, a Positive Energy!

True-Love, then, is the spirit within, and, the manifestation of the spirit without - “the Spirit,” God, then, and the spirit, or your true-self! United and free!!

Is there any greater expression of love, than my saying, “T” is me? Or, that I Paul, am “T”? No! There isn’t. There isn’t, simply because, I Paul am everything “T” is - and hopefully, but not manifestly, he is everything I am! Whether he is or not, is not the point - the point is - he is “me” and “I” am “he”! That’s what True-Love is all about. No “me,” “he,” “she,” “it” or otherwise. Just “us,” even, would be stretching the point, and the Truth of, what True-

Love truly is! It isn't just "us" or "me" or "he" or "she" or "they" or "them" - it is only "ALL"! ALL, in the sense, that there is nothing absent - not even NO Thing!

We must, all of us, come to the Realization that Jesus is not "the Way," I Paul is not "the Way," the LIGHT is not "the Way" - no, none of these is "The Way," they are, but, ways to "the Way" - LIFE alone is "The Way" - therefore, my way, is the Way to "The Way" and "The Way" is my Life and LIFE, and LIFE is, then, "My Way," which is really not "my way," at all! My way is your Well-Being - and your Well-Being (and mine), then, is the Way to "The Way"!

You see, I love you, not because I pity you. I love you, not because I have humanitarian leanings. I Love you, not because I give myself up for you, and I love you, not because you are beautiful and I desire you - I love you simply because "you are," right now, and so am I - but "I" is not of great importance, necessary, yes!, but not of great importance! After all, it is difficult, to love a faded memory, a myth, an untruth, an illusion and so forth. But many do!

Yes, I leave the dead to bury the dead. I do not put new wine into old wine skins. I do not mend old cloth with new, unshrunk, cloth. I do not hold to the Old, nor attempt to make it fit into the New! I "see" that which is ahead - I do not hold to that which has already passed me by!

Old thoughts - old loves - old ties - old indecisions - old “me’s” - old “you’s” - NO! - that’s not Love - that’s depravity of Mind - confusion of thought. If my thoughts are tied - bogged down, even, in yesterday, then I am wasting today and, even worse, I am unable to “do” Now! Something, anything about tomorrow; Tomorrow - my Life may just depend on it! Hell, it usually does!

Yes, my Way is The Way - and I Paul believes that you all need, possibly even “want,” a good, clear and concise, explanation of just what the heck it is I Paul really wants - perhaps I Paul, will only relate to you what it is I Paul really Needs!

What does I Paul Want?

The answer is simple - You!

What does I Paul Need?

To give, freely, and in Love, the Way to “The Way” - that, which I Paul, has in the past, called my way - which, of course, is not my way at all! But it is my way, in the sense that I Paul can give it or withhold it. This is why I Paul can say to you, and will say to you - Come , follow me as I Paul follow the Spirit. To “know” me, then, is to know I Paul. And to “know” I Paul is to know Jesus, then. And to “know” Jesus is to know the LIGHT, then. Therefore to receive I Paul

is to receive the Spirit. The voice of the Family, then, must be understood as the voice of Spirit, and not the voice of I Paul, or anyone else in the immediate earthly Family. I can not speak for Spirit – yet – but I can and I Paul do speak of what that voice has said and or implied, or means!

Man has always been Man, and Ape has always been Ape. Spirit, and certainly, something I can not speak for, has, in so far as I know, always been Spirit, not man, and most certainly, not ape!

And that is what distinguishes us, Spirituals, from all other human persuasions. Ours is not human – not ape!

God, LIFE then, is Love, is Truth, is Soul, is Being, and to know God then, is to Love God in Truth, in Spirit and in Love via Obedience to the Mind of Christ! This then is the Absolute of Freedom and the Ultimate of True-Love!

LIFE IS, and, I am Life! Therefore “My Way IS THE WAY!”

Hopefully you can “see” this too.

All of this, then, is the Seven Pillars of the Kingdom, as well as the Seven Laws and the Thirty-One Ordinances inherent in those Seven Laws, beginning with, of course, Ordinance One, the Catalyst of All Things. Hopefully, again, you can “see” this as well.

In order to Understand and, more importantly, to manifest both True Love and True Freedom, one must be in a State of Consciousness above the carnal thought level of “self.” To attain to the Highest Level of Freedom one must Love, and to attain to the Highest Level of Love one must be consciously Free from all things that enslave one’s ability to Love and Act freely within that framework.

Therefore, to be Fully Human is to be Free of people, places, and things, but, at the same time, to be lovingly concerned about, and actively involved with people, places, and things, in so far as The Will of LIFE is concerned about, and with them, i.e., the Well-Being of All in ALL, and to Love and do all the things called for to assure this well-being.

So, now, what does it take, to be a True Christian Spiritualist? The answer is simple. It takes Recognition at all levels and it requires Responsibility at all levels. It takes Love, then. Love of others, more than love of self, even - that’s the High Level answer!

Love of others is a sacrifice without sacrifice, a love of others over “self,” simply because they are! A love of other’s true-self, then, a love of their being, then, as well as your own. A love of persons, people, one in particular, then - but that love must spread, cover “others,” be ongoing and outgoing, all inclusive, all enhancing, to be love!



Love is, then, my existence, my divinity - your divinity, your existence, and the Recognition that “you are” and “I am” - and our Equality, therefore, is beyond question - despite any foolish feelings of superiority one may have.

And to be a true Christian Spiritualist it also takes Freedom. The not being under the control or power of any person, place, or thing. Able then, capable then, of thinking and acting without any arbitrary restrictions whatsoever in, of, or from, the Now! In thought, inferior to no one nor anything, always striving to be superior in act and deed in a state of Freedom then, Free from all things here.

This is what it means to be Fully human and Fully spiritual, here and Now also. It means, then, absolute equality between the Lower Mind and the Higher Mind. That, is Absolute Unity, then, and the Ultimate of Peace, then, here on this earth.

Such Love, then, such Freedom, then, such Equality, then, such Unity, then, and such Peace, then, can only be attained and retained by Absolute Self-Discipline, Love of Self, and Absolute Love of others.

Those Absolutes, then, afford the Minds an unbounded awareness of all things, be they physical or Spiritual, and this Freedom of Awareness is what commands and directs your Action!

Perhaps now, you can see why I Paul says, “My Way is The Way”?

After all, The Way is Spiritual and I Paul am a Spiritual and that really is why my way is The Way. To me there are no unknowns, just you and me and a lot of “me’s” and “you’s” we respectively haven’t met yet as we wait for the dream of dreams to unfold right before our very eyes.

Clearly, the Receiving of The Message of I Paul, is coming to a close. This, in no way, implies, that Revelation is coming to a close, because Revelation is an Eternal Matter which will always be channeled through those best able to Receive the Spirit.

No one stays in This Family or in the Way because of The Message per se. They stay in this Family of LIFE and LIGHT and its Way because they have Faith and have experienced Spirit and the Love and Truth of LIFE and the Freedom and Energy and Power that flows from that LIFE through the LIGHT.

What most people fail to grasp is that God, the Supreme Spirit then, is not a moral theologian or any other kind of theologian, moralist or ethicist! God’s Way is not Man’s Way - God’s thought is not Man’s Thought. There is a physical body and there is a Spiritual body, or spirit, and they are as different from each other as anything in the

Universe can possibly differ. No power of man can unite these differing bodies. No Power of Spirit has ever been so inclined to do so, in so far as we know.

No, God is not a moralist. God is simply more Just, more merciful, more Grace-Full than all the human being types that have ever been, are now and ever will be, and the Love and Truth of God is so far above, but not removed, from all such human beings as to make that Love, that Mercy and that Grace Absolutely beyond the comprehension of the human mind, singularly or collectively!

But the Truth of God, like God's Justice, is different! It is for us to know the Truth, for it is the Truth that sets us Free, and that Freedom allows us to Love and be Just and to Judge ourselves, and to be merciful as is our God, our LIFE, then, both singularly and collectively.

This, then is The Way to "The Way," i.e., the ALL in ALL.

Brothers and Sisters I count not myself to have apprehended All, but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching upward unto those things which are before, I press to ward the mark for the prize of the high calling of LIFE through LIGHT. Let us, therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded, and if in anything you be otherwise minded, LIFE shall reveal even this unto you through the LIGHT. So whereto we have

already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing. Brothers and Sisters be followers together of my way and mark them which walk The Way so that you will have always an ensample. (For many walk not in The Way and I Paul tell you, and sadly so, they are not only the enemy of the Creation but the enemies of the Cross of Truth - whose ends are destruction and whose LIFE is their bellies, and whose glory is in their “self,” who mind earthly things - matters, then, that do not matter, neither Now nor in the Future!) For our conversation is in heaven and in the kingdom from where we “see” the LIGHT and perceive LIFE who shall change us in the twinkling of an eye when we are Prepared for such change!

So my dearly beloved stand fast in my way, the Way to “The Way” which is not really my way but your way and The Way of All Life, Now and then.

Just remember this and who told you this: You can live apart from it but You cannot LIVE WITHOUT IT!

And that’s what My Way is all about.

In All Love Forever,

Your brother and servant,

I Paul<sub>z</sub>.

## **33 - Trance State - Two (A Dream Unfolds)**

Greetings:

My Dear Brothers and Sisters, this Communication is the last in the series of the I Paul communiques to the Family of LIFE and LIGHT, and the Way to the All in All, Now, and then! This is not for babes, partakers of milk, but for the eaters of strong meat, the Spirituals, then, who are Prepared and Following the Way to The Way.

Those who truly “sit” to Receive are, when properly done, in a semi-trance state.

Those who meditate according to the instructions are in a semi-trance state.

When you are immersed in Cogitation you are in a semi-trance state.

When you are asleep you are in a semi-trance state.

When you dream you are in a semi-trance state.

When you are deeply into Contemplation you are in a semi-trance state.

Now we could cite other experiences that should fall within the semi-trance states, such as “near-death”

experiences, but those cited will suffice for our purposes herein, i.e., the Attainment of the Full Trance State that leads to an OBE, the gateway to a Full Transcendence Experience and the safe return to the Physical Body. We must remember herein that we are dealing with the minds and nothing but “the minds” – the Low and High Levels of Consciousness, then, and their separate and united functions, in and out of the physical-material realm. All OBE’s are mind experiences and nothing else but a strict matter of minds.

Furthermore, everything herein is intended to imply, point to, lead to, and means the High Meditation Level or State – the Remediation Elimination and Acquirement Trance State. You get to this level via a semi-trance state or Meditative Silence State. If you are Prepared, that is, and you do not get prepared by wasting time or “Times.”

Busy people have time for everything but only the truly honest ones who give as much time to the Message of I Paul and its practice, as they do to their other Responsibilities, not less ever, are the only successful Adepts of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT. The Doers, then, not the would be Be’ers, the Pretenders and the lazy procrastinators, the tomorrowers, then. Doing is still better than Being and most who think they are Doing are being very foolish. They have

time for matters that don't matter. To I Paul, zero plus zero is still zero.

To an Adept, meditation should have, by now, under the Ordinance of Formative Causation, become a "Habit" and a second place of habitation. And it should go without saying that an Adept sets his or her own rules in regards to their meditative habits and preparations.

Any and all of the semi-trance states are but Preparatory stages or levels for the Attainment of the Full Trance State. In a semi-trance state one retains their consciousness state but in such a state they are usually oblivious to their immediate surroundings and the activities, sounds and so forth inherent therein. It is these semi-trance states that you can also learn to eat when you don't eat and to sleep when you actually do not sleep and so forth. The formula for this "learning" is simple: Motivation and Repetition = Retention, i.e., Habit and Success. What you need to remember and concentrate on is the fact that the Whole being both physically and mentally goes into trance state until you have united the opposites, the minds then, and then you "go-out" with full consciousness of all that actually leaves the body - the lower mind and all of its faculties. This is a fantastic experience.

"You will look at your tranced body..." Only the body is

tranced, the brain, the flesh, the blood, the tissue, the muscles and so on, because the mind has left it behind.

The Purity of the Purgation is not an act of the will (ego) but an effortless and natural act (we do it all the time but we are not alert, conscious of it) when you have fully developed it by following the Way (Message) exactly as given.

In Missile twenty-four of the CPM book there stands a little question of great import, i.e., “Have you made your personal commitment to Righteous Life and LIFE today?” As far as I Paul knows only the Adepts pay attention to this. Are you an Adept?

Since the mouth, the tongue, the brain do not leave the body, one communicates, “speaks” then, in an out of body state “naturally” in the language without words, without sound, without movement and without “want” of any ilk.

“Want” has no place in the meditative process. Any “give-me” mentality immediately wipes out any and all efforts to OBE and to transcend. High Meditation is a tranquil, clean, expectant and prayerful “Need” process and there is no other way to approach it.

Prayer is one of the major keys to High Meditation, second only to Preparation. Prayer, herein, has nothing to do with what we will call Religion nor do we use the term



“Prayer” in a religious context or meaning. We are talking about Prayer in its strict Spiritual sense and meaning. After all, what is Prayer? Is it not a gathering up to one’s Wholeness for a positive presentation to one’s creator? Is it not Silent Communication? Is it not Conscious Meditation, Cogitation, and Contemplation? Of course it is. “Conscious” here, specifically meaning an Awareness and Alertness that is pointed to, directed at, something or other from horizontal time. Just as on the other hand, “Unconscious” meditation is trance state travel or Time Travel. “Time Travel” here meaning vertical time. Just as “memory” is a time trip back into the Past, the Trance State is a Trip into the Future or into tomorrow’s time, and even there the “memory” is functionable.

Three dimensionable space time, then, is Horizontal Time and all other time is Vertical Time or Transcendental Time.

Semi-Trance states fall within the Horizontal Time Zone.

OBE’s fall within the Horizontal Time Zone.

Trance States fall within the Vertical Time Zones.

Meditation is a Horizontal Time Zone activity.

Remeditation becomes a Vertical Time Zone Activity

beginning in Horizontal time.

Prayer is Spiritual Symbolism or the Language of Spirit - the Language without words then - the Unspoken language then - the Unity of Minds then - the sound of one hand clapping then - the Room of a Thousand Eyes then - the Conversation, the Silent Conversation between two or more Spirituals then. Prayer, then knows no Time Zone for it is in, of, and for Time and Space eternal.

You see, God's thoughts are not man's thoughts and God's Way is not man's way, simply because man does not think or speak in the Spirit language or from the Spirit Wisdom.

Listen, If the semi-trance is so simple and the Full Trance State is a natural phenomenon, why are they so difficult to attain? The Truth is, they are not. They are inherent in our Natural Wholeness and should be utilized by one and all for the express purpose intended - discovery, or better, Rediscovery and Understanding, especially of our own divinity and purpose in this physically short-term life span on this Earth.

The answer as to why you cannot achieve the Full Trance State lies in the fact that, one, you fail to recognize the semi-trance state when you achieve it, which you do, simply because your Faith and your Imagination are

wanting, and two, “God will not do for man what man is fully capable of doing for himself.” “Repent” the Kingdom is at hand, among you, in the midst of you, and in you. All of these expressions as to the location of the kingdom (heaven) are clearly explained and therefore, understandable from a study of the Message of I Paul. By those very statements you are being exhorted to change - to change your entire way of Thinking and “seeing” and acting and expressing your way of life here on W-303 and only you can do it.

“Change” here, being the first link in the chain, followed by Changing and Changed, (Prepare, Follow, Come), means the removal of ALL the barriers, i.e., “the collective ‘self’,” that keeps you in bondage (physically, mentally, and spiritually) and therefore keeps you from the Freedom necessary to “Act Natural”(ly) and do those things that should come as natural acts inherent in one’s “Wholeness,” i.e., Soma, Psyche, Pneuma. This entails self-discipline, courage then, i.e., “be not conformed of this earth but be transformed by the renewal of your mind” to conform with Your Higher Mind, which is a matter, that matters, and one which only you can do because God, the Supreme Spirit, LIFE, then, is not going to do it for you. You slay “self” and immediately ALL the barriers are destroyed and you and You are Free to do those things you have been

Gifted to Do, but do not do, simply because in “self” you are too busy “being” and not “Doing.” Being enslaved actually by your love of “self,” your detoured ideas of what Truth is and what Righteousness is all about, your foolish ideal of being superior to others, your sick self-love that prevents the honest and sincere love of others, your own mistaken ways that preclude any true Sharing and Caring with others, your availability, and that even, perfunctory, instead of your perpetual Presence, your “likes and dislikes” that shackle your Action and your Energy, your self-protectiveness, your aloofness, your aloneness, your abrasive abusiveness. I Paul could go on and on but you should have the picture clearly impressed on your mind by now. Instead of climbing out of your own “self-dug” pit, you excavate it deeper and deeper - you cannot Transcend when you keep insisting on Descending.

How many of you are in debt as a result of living, or attempting to live, beyond your means, your NEED, then? Most debt is want-sided - not need-sided. Whether you can think this highly or not, you need to come to the understanding that “debt” from, of, and by “want” is slavery. The Message clearly states, as did Jesus, that you should owe no one anything and this clearly means materialistically, not Spiritually - do you “see” this? Can you grasp the reason why such debt is a definite barrier to

you? If you are not free you cannot Follow, and if you cannot Follow, you cannot Transcend. The point here is one of Purification - you simply cannot take such things as “debt from wants” into the Kingdom of the Spirit, Now or then. Clean your “house” is no idle Command, then. “See”?

You cannot accept your inheritance, the Love of God, then, until you do clean-up your own “House” and keep it that way and my dear brothers and sisters, only you can do it.

You see, the Message calls for you to do something at the beginning of each day. It also calls for you to do something at the close of each day. It exhorts that you do something in between this beginning and this end of each day. Do you do them? If you do not these things, how do you expect to be successful in your going out and your coming in? You cannot, because you are not moving forward and Upward - you are standing still, effortless, then for all practical purposes.

You have a habit and that habit is your illusions which dictate your ways which are contrary to The Way. You compromise the Way to fit your own way and this will not do. The Way cannot change, is not going to change, so guess what and who must Change if they are to be successful.

What you all need Understand is that the Message of I

Paul, its Spirit, wants absolutely nothing from you, it wants only to give you something, per its promises, and the Message only works when you work, because, in essence you are or you are not the Message of I Paul and that's strictly up to you, your desire, your motivation, your Action.

The Message of I Paul, the Book of the Two Ways, the Book of Life, are not magic, they are Gifts, yet they are nothing to you, unless you accept them, respect them for what they are and above all, follow them to the very best of your ability for that's all that is asked of you, nothing more, you exert the effort and forget all about results, they are out of your sphere of operation.

Let he or she who does this be the second to transcend and come back safely and enlightened. I Paul await this happening and I am ready to greet you in the House of Wisdom. Be, then, the Pillar of the Earths and you will be Greeted and warmly so.

The problem for the vast majority of Spirituals is that their Faith is weak and their Imagination is uncreative and/or wild, uncontrollable then, and because of this your thoughts are held in bondage to an illusionary master which you serve, knowingly or unknowingly, it matters not until you learn what matters and what does not. From the very beginning you have been told that the Truth both Creates

and Destroys and it's high time that you all got a handle on this fact, the Reality, which no one escapes and use its powers to the fullest to assist you.

You see, if you can control a thing you can destroy it, and if you have the Power to destroy, my friends, then you also have the Power to Create, and it truly is that simple when you hold, actually hold the Truth in your Minds and not in your hands only. Yes, simple, but hard work, long hours, and a lot of frustration and disappointment in the beginning, but the rewards are beyond your immediate comprehension but they get clearer and clearer as you get clearer.

You have to clean-up your "house" before you can enter a House of the Seven Pillars, and you cannot even do this unless you undergo a complete and "self"less transformation. It is not difficult to Love nor to be Righteous, in fact it is a much better way of life than you now enjoy, so what is there to fear, to avoid - only You can possess you.

Some of you have spent years "talking to" or "talking at" each other to no avail. It's time you all expanded your field of conversation and especially so in the area of learning to "talk" to yourself, Your True-Self, and the True-Self of others. The Message tells you how.

I Paul, hardly ever talk to any of you - I usually “talk” to You - How many of you actually realize this? My guess would be only a few, if that many, but it is so. Your problem is that you haven’t even learned how to listen yet, but the Message teaches you how.

You see, “God IS - I AM” and “you are - I AM” and that’s our difference mentally, “See”? You Need Change this to “You Are - I AM” and “God IS - WE ARE.” “See”?

Now if you fully Understand this and Practice this you are qualified to transcend - Automatically and Naturally - it truly is that simple. Don’t try to make it any simpler. That will only result in defeat and disappointment.

So make up your mind to Change then, and then Change, by exerting the effort called for dealing with Change and you will be Changed, here and Now. You exert the effort - “others” will supply the results. How can we possibly make it any clearer or simpler?

What you need do is to get into the Spiritual stream of Life and you do this through the exercising of the Full Measure of Faith, through Creative Thought and Creative Imagination and through the never ending flow of Spirit Energy, that thing we call Love.

So, how do you get to where you are not from where you



are? The journey is one of discovery and rediscovery, of effort and determination, of Faith and Imagination, of Concentration and Retention, of dedication and perseverance, of Love and Reality and of Courage. Its catalyst is Understanding and Unity. Its deterrent is bondage. Its mission is Enlightenment and Enhancement. Its goal is obvious per the Message. Its rewards are clearly unexplainable - you must become your own witness. Its Absolute is Preparation. Its Ultimate is Soul. Its Doing is Natural for it is a simple matter of Minds and the self-discipline of leaving matters that do not matter, alone. And it is here that most fail - they simply cannot mind their own minds - their own business, and their own Preparation. Somehow your own business, your own minds, are not as important as someone else's, so you "meddle," which is a far cry from the Sharing and Caring tenets of the Message. You simply cannot truly help anyone if you cannot first help yourself - after all charity, Preparation and so forth begin at home and you cannot assist in anyone's "house" cleaning if your own is in disarray. If God will not do for men and women what they are capable of doing for themselves, how, in God's name do you think you can?

Now how do you get to where you are not but where You is? Simple - Change. Love, Think, Obey and Come, follow me (the Message) as I Paul follow "Others."

To some of you all of the above may seem like a very heavy load, a burden, “depressing” even, but on a close analysis it is not simply because it is a very simple matter of mind – yours to be exact. It doesn’t cost you any money, it doesn’t impair your health, or harm you in any way at all. Whether you can “see” it or not it’s for your own Well-Being and involves no sacrifice whatsoever – its goal is Freedom and such Freedom gives, not takes away the one thing you desperately need – “Recognition.” What’s more, you do not have to go anywhere special to receive it. You can do it in your “closet.”

You cannot begin a journey unless, and until, you take the first step. So in order to get where you are not from where you are, you need to step out and up for you have nothing to lose and everything to gain – nothing to fear but “self” and you should, by now, know exactly what that is or isn’t. What you are waiting for escapes us – and apparently something escapes you too.

What you need to Understand, to learn, then, is that you are not You, but You is you, yet cannot Be as long as you go on insisting to be what you are really not – “self.” Can you “see” now that You is the collectivity of Minds? The compounding of Minds “to be,” then. This then, is the Urgency of Unity – a Unity that, like Charity, begins at home

- flows outward and then, and only then, flows Upward. The journey then begins in Freedom with an open mind, a receptive mind, then. In Meditation, as in Cogitation, Contemplation, and Spiritual Prayer, an open, receptive mind is essential. Closed-mindedness is a strict physical-mental manifestation where one-mindedness is essential to, and for, a collectiveness of the minds of those who will and do Follow the Way to “The Way.” Close-mindedness is an understanding of the Message of I Paul, a Recognition of the Truth and an Active Expression and following of that Truth in your every word, act and deed for the Good, Right and True, i.e., the Well-Being of All in All.

It should be clear now, that to get from where you are, to where You is, and you are not, takes Love and Freedom and Courage.

I’m certain you all have a pretty good idea of what courage is and what it takes to manifest it, but, on the other hand, I’m not so sure that all of you really understand what Love and Freedom truly are from the combined viewpoint of both the physical and spiritual aspects.

Down through the ages many a person have given up their lives so that others could live and this is usually viewed as “love of others” over oneself and a sacrifice. Actually, the greatest sacrifice you or I or anyone else can contribute to

our fellow beings, to LIFE and to LIGHT, is to live our gift of life to the Fullest in a Loving and Righteous Way. We were destined, predestined really, to have a physical existence, to have life and to have it more abundantly than our ancestors. Yet, when we look around this spaceship of ours, we do not see the fulfillment of this abundance being shared by all of LIFE's children and this should tell us that the Universal Plan of Love and Righteousness are not being fulfilled, that man's inhumanity to man continues and has replaced the Will of God in man's mind and heart. At the very core of this lie two factors: Political ideologies and Religion. The dilemma lies in man's attempt to manufacture truth, his selfishness and his misinterpretation of what Love, Freedom and Righteous behavior truly are. Spirit and Spiritual Transcendence have been relegated to an obscure place in the minds of men and women over all this Earth of ours.

How does man view Love and what are the most prevalent viewpoints held by man concerning it?

We know that Jesus, and I Paul after him, taught the value of Love and explained to us what Love can do and does do, but the question here is one of what is Love in the eyes of Men-Women today.

There is an almost endless variety of what men and

women today think of as Love: Charity, Pity, love of humanity, love of neighbor, love of God, love as a virtue, love as a duty, love as a value, parental love, romantic love, love of others, love of oneself, love as union, love as desire, materialistic love, love as possession, love of beauty, love as pain, as obsession, love of life, and so forth. Each of these types of “love” carries with it a very different understanding of Reality as well as a diverse assumption concerning what it means to be human.

None of these types alone approaches that which is True Love and even collectively they come nowhere near what is Pure Love. One type of love that many men and women hold to is Love of Country, some go so far as to say “Right or wrong I Love my Country.” What this so-called love is, is just another way of expressing one’s belief in two masters – God and Country.

Jesus himself, in his progression towards his Great Discovery, or Rediscovery, learned what True Love is by the Process of elimination or the discovery of Love’s meaning by discarding all the things that Love was not, but believed by men and women to be Love.

Therefore Jesus-like love is what we are in search of here, when we ask What is Love? And from the list given above we have a fairly good idea of what it is not.

Most assuredly, what Love is not, will not get us from where we are, to where we need to go - Now and then. We know Love is an energy but we also need to view it as a Trans-personal power. Since the Kingdom of God reveals itself in the Love of persons, that is, in and through more than one person, then Love is a Trans-personal Power as well as an Energy and that which establishes human beings in the mode of being as Free Persons is a Power worth Understanding and Utilizing to its fullest.

Love, unlike Freedom and Courage, is an Energy first and a matter of the minds secondly. Freedom, is first, a matter of minds, as is Courage, and both need be manifested on the physical-material Plane Level first before they can be transported into the Spiritual Planes via transcendence. CPM #25 explains this to one and all.

A True Christian Spiritualist knows but Seven Laws and Three Commandments. These Three Commandments are Love, Think and Obey. They mean, simply but precisely, that one will Love Truly, Think Righteously, and Obey the Mind of Christ in one's every word, Act and Deed. It is quite obvious that one needs be Free to do this and one must also have that Courage to carry out such Commandments and Laws to their fullest extensions. "See"?

Now the Four Principle types of response towards

others which today are commonly confused with Christ-like Love are: Feeling sorry for others (Pity), love of mankind (Humanitarianism), self-denial (Altruism) and wanting to be in union with others (Sentimentalism).

Feeling sorry for others or Pity is also the basis for Religious Charity. A Christian Spiritualist knows that there is no strength in sorrow, no true Love in Pity and that those who feel sorry for others are not Free in any sense of the word. Pity is a negative thought and all negative thoughts enslave. Charity and all that that word implies, has nothing to do with pity or sorrow and everything to do with Love, Agapé, brother and sisterhood, fellowship, Familyship, sharing and caring. All of which are in turn, manifestations of Freedom and Acts and Action Fully in harmony with the Mind of Christ. I can think of only one thought form level lower than feeling sorry for others (Pity) and that is a feeling sorry for oneself (self-pity) which is the most negative, the most destructive and the most degrading of all thought levels and the most prevalent enslaver of all thought forms possible. Such thought forms as those (pity and self-pity) are parasitical and “self” forms of domination and enslavement - hate forms, then, not “love or charity” forms, then. To hold to such negative thought forms constitute a barrier to the Trance states.

Humanitarianism (Love of mankind) is oriented to suffering mankind. Why? Because it has the hidden intention of denying all actual others – the neighbor, one’s family, one’s community, one’s spirit, – and of calling into doubt “LIFE’s wise, loving, and benevolent rule.”

Humanitarianism thus functions on the basis of value delusion. It puts utility value above all other values, acclaiming love as an instrument for the attainment of the general welfare. Moreover, humanitarianism is directed at man’s weakness because it wants to deny the higher possibilities of man’s existence. It does this by selecting the lowest aspects of human nature as the criteria for being human – to be human for the humanitarian means to be only human – “to err is human” – “we are all human” and so forth. The humanitarians accuse Jesus of not having loved mankind. Why? Because Jesus resisted the three temptations of the devil – can you believe this? They say if Jesus had truly loved mankind he would have turned stones into bread in order to feed the hungry of this world – he would have come down from the cross in order to captivate mankind’s conscience and set it forever at rest, and he would have organized everyone into a single, unanimous and harmonious ant-heap so that mankind would have been relieved of its loneliness and responsibilities. The humanitarian “loves” mankind in general simply because



he hates the concrete neighbor. Jesus-like love and Christ-Love then are something quite different from humanitarian love and involves something more than a simple love of mankind – love of neighbor.

No one who holds to “Humanitarianism” can enter into the Trance States for the purpose of Transcending, then, simply because their goal reaches no higher than being human “only.” Humanitarianism, then, is just another Religion and therefore nothing to be fearful of, then, simply because it lacks Freedom.

Freedom to Love the actual other, is a Freedom and a Love beyond the capacity of most people because it requires hard work, long hours, tenacity, and heroic Courage. In other words, Love and Freedom presupposes a much richer sense of man’s possibilities than love of mankind only does.

Now what about Altruism? Is not altruism what it means to love the actual other? The dictionary states that Altruism is “the unselfish concern for the welfare of others.” Actually, altruism displays the structure of “ressentiment” because the Altruist affirms the other in order to escape from himself. Altruism is but a form of self-hatred posing as its opposite – love. Indeed, the stratagems and dissimulations of Ressentiment are so successful that usually the observer cannot tell the difference between love

and hatred posing as Love.

As for Sentimentalism – the wanting to be in union with someone – this form of love mentality is usually rooted in the fear of pain. Actually, this pain-love leads eventually to the denial of all otherness and of all reality outside of oneself. Why? Because any difference, opposition, or distance is felt as displeasure. The fear of pain, of loneliness, leads to the notion that there should be neither conflicts nor alienation in human life, and so love is construed as feeling oneself in union with others, in other words, it is a form of hedonism.

Jesus-like love has been interpreted, and wrongly so, as being like those I have briefly outlined above. Since it is none of these, we have eliminated, it figures that we are getting closer and closer to what Jesus-like Love and Christ-Like Love truly are.

One thing is certain – no one can take any of these supposed types of love into the Spiritual Realms safely and any attempt to transcend them, then, is futile. They are outright barriers to the Full Trance State and preclude the attainment of being Fully Human and Fully Spiritual Now. Why? Simple, they preclude one's Freedom to Prepare, Follow, and Come, to Love, Think and Obey. It should be quite obvious by Now, that the "Good News" of Jesus was

Freedom – both physically and Spiritually, now. Therefore it should also be quite obvious that Freedom and Love are the major keys to the Trance States and to the Act of Transcendence.

We know that where there is no Freedom there is no Spirit – what many of you fail to grasp, but which should also be perfectly obvious, is the truth that where there is no Spirit there is also an absence of True Love. Furthermore, where there is no True Love there is also no Truth. “See”? This universal principle is so simple and so uncomplicated that no one can make it simpler nor can anyone complicate it – this is terribly frustrating to the rationalizers and intellectualizers, of which we have our share. It’s the Principle of the Universal Plan that the function of Truth is to both Create and Destroy in keeping with the Power of the Mind of Christ, the Will that Wills above all wills.

Let me explain Jesus to you (the man you have been challenged to emulate), briefly: Jesus was a different type of human being – a unique sort of person actually. Not that he was anymore divine than you or I, but different and unique in the sense that he never felt superior to others nor inferior to an Absolute. He lived as a Totally Free Person, unencumbered by people, places and things of this world, then, as do all Spiritual Genius’ and Adepts of the Trance

States. Different, also, in the sense that no one ever knows what to expect from such as these or what they may or may not do next. There is always then an aura of mystery, of mysticism surrounding them and their Acts, words and deeds. It is these very differences that create, in others, excitement, fear, confusion, love, hate, mystery, awe, devotion, joy, sadness and so forth.

To live as a Free-Loving Person as Jesus did is to live in a mode of transcendence, to be superior to events that could or would suppress one's Actions - always acting in ways Superior to any situation that threatens one's Freedom of being and one's liberty to Think and Act without any social, political or religious restrictions whatsoever.

Now if you can grasp the real Jesus from all of this, then you can at least "see" what it means to be Fully Human and Fully Spiritual and what it means to Prepare, Follow, Come - Come, Follow Me. And if you can "see" this, then you can also "see" both Jesus and his Love.

You have already been advised as to how to measure your own Love of LIFE, i.e., you love LIFE only as much as you actually love your "neighbor." This, then, is the clue to what Jesus-like Love is. Jesus-like love is Love of Life, Love of Neighbor, and Love of the "Actual Other." Love of Neighbor here, then, meaning an orientation toward others

and their Well-Being, especially so, in light of their divinity as well as his own. This is exactly what Jesus meant, when he said, “Love one another as I have loved you.” He knew when he said this that his Revolutionary Plans were doomed, that the Sword of Sedition was useless and not The Way. Yet, as a direct result of his great discovery, he knew that his Love and his Freedom left him with one final weapon in his arsenal to use - his life, and he used it - he realized that what he could not do here, he could do from there. This expression of True Love could only have come about from his total Freedom to Act independently for others and through the “Actual Other” for the Well-Being of All in All.

Freedom then was the basis of Jesus’ “Whole-Person” psychology and Spiritualism, i.e., the totality of one’s Obedience, Love and Thoughts in harmony with the Will of God and the resultant Actions thereof and therefrom.

Jesus, of course, knew full well the workings of the Spiritual Laws, the Psychical Laws, then, and their application to, and influence upon the Physical Laws of Nature as they applied to the minds of Men and Women everywhere. He also recognized that the “Heart” of these Spiritual Laws that applied to the Physical Realm also, was Truth, and that it was “The Truth” that would set the

Divinity of Men–Women of this Earth Free. It was from this “heart” that Jesus lived, breathed, spoke, acted and taught, regardless of the situation or the opposition. He knew no fear and he harbored no doubts, and he taught that those who did, were not Free, but enslaved by such negative thoughts.

It is not difficult now for us to Understand where the Power and Genius of this man from Nazareth called Jesus, his manifestation of True Love, Spiritual–Physical love, then supplied the Energy Flow, the Power then, needed to perform his phenomenal acts and to rise up and out through the Trance States and the Freedom of his mind, supported by the Mind of Christ, supplied the Power and the Wisdom to transport this Freedom to the Faith of others, and to Transcend out of the physical body and the Physical Realms into the Light of the Spiritual Realms. Spiritual Prayer (prior to Remediation) sets the “call” to Come. Therefore, Love, Truth, Freedom, Prayer and Wisdom with their tools of Faith, Creative Thought, Creative Imagination, Meditation, Cogitation, Contemplation and Remediation are what we True Christian Spiritualists know to be a tapping into the Spirit Supply Side that displays itself by “given results” equal to “given effort” which, when bestowed, culminate in a successful “going out” and “coming in” – the very height of “Recognition” and “Protection.”

You see, the Ability to enter into the Trance States and to Transcend takes a lot of courage all along the Way of Preparation and Following leading up to the “Coming.” It’s not just a matter of doing Things Right but a matter of Doing the Right Things also, and this requires a tremendous amount of self-discipline and that takes a lot of intestinal fortitude because it seems to be a human trait to shun Responsibility. If you shun your responsibilities to your immediate Family, to your friends, to your neighbors, to your employer and worse, to yourself and to the Message and to the Family of LIFE and LIGHT, then you are not a Spiritual and, if not, how do you expect to enter into the Trance States and to Transcend, even?

Responsibility is the key to being Present and not simply available. It is the ability to “Think” and “Act” “Rationally” and “Righteously” and to be singularly Accountable for one’s behavior. “IF” you are Responsible, it means that you are most dependable and severely Reliable and that you will fulfill, Absolutely, all of your obligations to the very best of your ability.

You see, you need to Understand that you are Responsible to “something” at all times and Accountable to “someone” at all times – the “Actual Other” and your True-Self and when you are Responsible there is, very definitely,

a Presence of “Recognition.” The question here is, just how responsible are you? The answer lies in another question – Just how successful are you? “See”? Responsibility, actually, is a simple matter of Setting-Up and Holding Firmly To a definitive set of Priorities and leaving matters that do not matter alone and living one’s life in a mode based on and upon Need and shunning the enslavement of “wants” and especially so, the petty ones and the frivolous ones.

There are three Limitless Aspects of your mind: Creative Thought, Creative Imagination and Memory. When properly utilized they are the most Powerful tools available to mankind in the Physical Realms and the Primary tools necessary to enter into the Trance States.

These three Limitless Qualities of the human mind are what control all the other “tools” of the mind, for example, Meditation, Cogitation, Contemplation, Spiritual Prayer and so forth. When you are in complete control of these qualities, and their tools, then you are in total control of your mind and nothing can defeat it nor control it.

On the other hand, it must be said that most human minds are controlled by outside influences, i.e., People, Places, and Things. Most Human Beings though will either deny this Truth or are unaware of this Reality. They simply



accept this as the way things are. This negative surrender and abandonment to inferiority is self-enslavement. Simply because you live in a free or relatively free country doesn't make you Free. Only you can do that.

The greatest barriers to the attainment of the Trance States are: Fear, Doubt, Tension, bigotry, anger, hate, wants, ignorance, foolishnesses, deceptions, untruths, revenge, irresponsibility, selfishnesses, egomania, uncaring, slothfulness, procrastination, laziness, Faithlessness and self-imposed limitations which leave you Unprepared. These are all manifestations of "self" that feeds on the weaknesses of your mind. Self-doubt is the most debilitating thought level of all and it takes great strength and great courage and an on-going and devoted Self-Discipline to overcome such debasing and enslaving thoughts and negative habits. The problem here is that you are living in the past and not in the Now. You continue to live your todays as you lived your yesterday. You conform not transform and any renewal of your mind never occurs to you. Only a fool and a hypocrite are satisfied with yesterday. And this is clearly an abuse and misuse of one's memory.

I Paul have learned that there is nothing wrong in being different from and nothing right in being indifferent to People, Places and Things. The key here is one's control of

their own mind and their own Freedom with that control being in harmony with what is Good, Right and True and the Well-Being of All.

It should be perfectly clear by now that the Trance States, out of body experiences, and Transcendences all require much Preparation - hard work and long hours of study and practice - yet they are nothing more and nothing less than a simple matter of the minds. In fact, your whole life here and Now and then and there is a simple matter of minds which are actually the only things that do matter. Everything else is “waste.” “See”?

The physical-material body has nothing to do with such matters, nothing physical can induce them nor actively participate in them. It's not a matter of matter over mind, but one of mind over matter. It's the developing Lower mind that should nourish and control the body activities, it's the minds that exit the body, it's the lower mind that returns to the tranced body, and it's the minds that determine how Human and how Spiritual you actually are. The mind, then, can control the body if one has properly trained and shaped the mind through habitual self-discipline so that “the whole self” responds in unison on command.

Can the physical body go back, regress in time? No. The physical body as a living entity can only remain in the

present physical Now, in the Horizontal Time-Space span, then. Only the Lower mind can regress, go back in Horizontal Time then, in an act of consciousness we call memory, an act from which it returns to the physical Now from the memory past. Only the minds can return to the Beginning at the End. A journey, which in reality, has been no Journey at all. Try to understand that when your lower mind travels back into time past, in an Act we call memory, you are, for all practical purposes, in a trance state momentarily. Your mind has actually left, vacated the physical-material Now for the same of the past. The Memory then is a Power, clearly and simply displayed by the mind to travel back in time, a phenomenon, then, that must, and does, have its opposite - the Power to travel out of the physical Now and into the Spirit Realms where Past, Present and Future are all inclusive in what we know as Vertical Time in Space or Cosmic Time.

It would then, seem logical, that since we can, and so regress in Horizontal Time and Space we therefore can, and do Progress into Vertical Time and Space through the mediums of Dreams, Visions, Meditations, Cogitations and Contemplations. And what's more, we can from a Horizontal Time position of Retrogression go, or be elsewhere, momentarily and return.

Memory, then, is more than a key to the Past. It is also an important key to the Future.

Memory, then, is a going-backwards for the express purpose of a thrusting Upwards, or an out of the body experience involving the Lower mind and Horizontal Time and Space, which, when coupled with the Higher Mind becomes a Full Trance State or a Transcending Trance State wherein transcendence is possible, not guaranteed. The potential is there, the Happening Needs Preparation and Effort to make it a Reality. In a Full Trance State the Lower mind is with the body, not in the body and the Higher Mind simply IS, and waiting.

The memory component of the Lower mind then is a key and a way to Unite the minds in both the, so-called, Horizontal and Vertical Time Space Zones and to their compounded entrance into what we shall cite as Spirit Awareness and not simply material Awareness and can lead to the vacating of the Horizontal Time Zones.

The memory's function is not for the purpose of "living in the past" or for any "longing of things gone by." Its purpose is fixed upon Change, upon living a better, a more abundant life in the "Now" through the teaching experiences of the past and for discerning the Future Way from past Happenings. Without a memory mankind could

not be Creative nor productive. Neither could he discover or Rediscover those things necessary for his Well-Being, both Physically and Psychically. The memory, then, is the medium that makes it possible for one to accomplish all that he or she Need Do in this one physical lifetime - become Fully Human and Fully Spiritual, Now. Furthermore, it is memory that assists us in achieving “Absolute Wakefulness” Now - if we can totally leave the “self” out of it. “See”?

At the Highest Level of Consciousness obtainable on this Earth, it is the memory that tells us that there is a purpose for this Life of ours here. Yet, it also is attempting to tell us, that that “Purpose” is not Here but Elsewhere.

The lower mind memory is tuned into its place of origin, its predetermined destination then, through the Involutionary Plane Levels while the higher Mind is tied to its Creator through the Evolutionary Plane Levels of its journey.

When these Minds Unite in the “Now,” as in the Fully Human-Fully Spiritual phases, and in the “Future,” as in the permanent transcending phases, its Compounded destination and purpose are most clearly harmonized and therefore obtainable at all Plane Levels, “Now and then.”

Such phenomena as dreams, visions, clairvoyance, ESP

and so forth, are all manifestations of the lower mind's bio-plasmic memory, i.e., every thought, sight and sound of the Universe Past, Present and Future. We know them as "Sendings" and "Receivings" at the Physical Level and as OBE's and Transcendings via the Trance State at the Psychical Levels. Therefore, we can see, that the memory is another very important tool of the Lower mind in our "going out" and "coming back" excursion into the Psychical Realms, and that the memory, when properly utilized can be an excellent teacher of what one should do in the Now, and to an Adept who properly "reads" the Past from memories, the Future becomes much clearer and understandable.

You see, the Message informed us some time ago that a sound and active memory was a very useful tool and a vital Need. Most people with so-called bad or poor memories are the very ones who pay more attention to matters that do not matter and ignore those that do, thereby cluttering up the memory base of the mind with frivolous and petty things and forgetting the Ordinance of Formative Causation entirely. It cannot give results unless you supply the effort. "See"?

Most People experience difficulty or often fail in their meditative attempts to reach the Trance States for the very

simple reasons that they cannot rid their minds of the clutter of the Now, of current events, of others, and of sounds, all of which, denote Unpreparedness. Multiple Distractions, whether inner or outer, internal or external, then, is the curse, the enemy, then, of a successful meditative period and therefore the barrier of “self” to the attainment of the Trance States.

If “self” is your major problem, it’s a problem that I Paul, nor anyone else for that matter, can solve for you. That’s a problem only you can solve and it can be solved. On the other hand, if it’s a lot of different thoughts running through your mind, the clutter I spoke of, then I Paul can be of some assistance. If this, that clutter, is your problem then you Need to turn to the memory by concentrating on some one thing or someone in a happening from your distant past. This should get you out of the Now, the Present, then, and if your concentration is intense enough, you should also be able to shut-out all other sounds and thoughts of the immediate Now and close-past. While concentrating on this one past happening in your memory you should pick out one object or subject from that memory to cogitate upon and then allow whatever or whoever that one solitary object or subject is to fade completely out of your thoughts by imagining that it is slowly rising upward and out of the physical field of your mental vision into a higher plane level

of existence and that its Upward Thrusting is pulling you along with it. Here, you are marrying the memory with Creative Imagination, and here you Need to “let go” and allow them to operate Freely. Here you are taking, remembering an actual happening from your past life and traveling back in space and time, leaving the present Now of horizontal time into its very Past. Your mind has now left the body of the Present Now and is traveling freely towards a uniting with the Higher Mind which is in Vertical Time awaiting the Lower Mind’s thrusting upward from its position of Horizontal Time. This, then, is the beginning of an OBE and you should at this point be entirely oblivious of all sight, sounds, and thoughts of the Present Now.

The “trick” now is not to get out of the body – that’s already a reality insofar as the Now is concerned – now it is only a matter of getting-out of horizontal time and into Vertical Time. This can be accomplished by thrusting the particular memory of the object or subject further and further out into the Cosmos as if that was the locale of its actual happening. This emptying of the Lower mind will allow the Unity Necessary to be completely Out of the Body and Free from both the Present and Past “Nows.”

It is during this final thrusting of the memory that one’s prayer is offered for its safe journey and your hope of



retrieving it in Vertical Time if it's worthy of retrieving. Whatever the case or the memory may be, your Prayer must not stray outside of the Seven Laws and for a very good Reason. At this point you should be Prepared for the possibility of, not only an OBE, but the possibility of a Transcending which would involve One of the first five of the Seven Pillars.

Perhaps now you can “see” that the very act of meditation for the purpose of attaining the Trance States is a very Personal matter and one that matters very deeply, both Physically and Spiritually and most who attempt it are not truly serious in their questing. They do not undertake the Act as an Art nor as a deeply Personal matter. They allow external, non-personal “things” to disrupt them, and worse, they allow “things” within to preoccupy them and their thoughts, or worse still, being more unprepared than Prepared, they fall asleep or swim in a morass of thoughts about matters that do not matter. Nothing must be on one's mind when they are attempting trance meditation but Trance, and the One “Past Memory” that possibly can get their mind into that Trance State necessary for the Lower mind to ascend from the physical body and Unite with the Spiritual Body. The mind in “self” can OBE after all it's no different than to be earthbound, but it cannot transcend - there are no illusions in the Spirit Realms, only Realities.

And those Realities are all matters of the Mind.

Now by no means is the memory meditative method the only method of attaining to the Trance State levels as the Message of I Paul has pointed out to us. But regardless of what method is utilized to reach the Trance States the Preparation stages and state of Preparation is basically fixed and unavoidable. There exists also ways of entering into the Trance State that are clearly non-methodical and require no Preparation whatsoever. Peculiar to this special group are dreams and visions, where even OBE's become realities and often go unnoticed by the experiencer of such Phenomena. Such excursions leave the experiencers with the age-old question "Whether in the body or out of the body, I know not." Actually one truthfully does not know and cannot know, although most who experience such phenomena, or even think they have when they actually have not, will usually decide arbitrarily that it was an OBE. Since it was a sub-conscious meditative experience, its proof requires on-the-spot, immediate Conscious Remeditation on the exact identical happening in order to Prove or Disprove to oneself the Truth of the Matter, pro or con. It's the only way in such circumstances to become your own witness and to unfold the mystery of a dream, that in Truth was no dream at all.

Visions, true visions, that is, are quite commonly misconstrued. Most people interpret visions as dreams or something akin to a mirage. True Visions can occur in a trance state or when a person is fully conscious. A True Visionary has the power to see something not visible to others. Some visions are pure mental Images and not something seen by the naked eye much the same as one sees in a dream. Many so-called Visions, are of course, the products of wild imaginations or directly caused by the effects of drugs on the central nervous system. A True Vision is something seen by other than normal sight then and involves mental and mystical acuteness. Since True Visions have their origin outside of the Lower mind there is no way of Preparing for them or of inducing them. Clairvoyance, ESP and so forth have no bearing whatsoever on True Visions - they are "Sendings" and not something "conjured up" by human beings and any such claims of the ability to do so, are false. So, we can say beyond any shadow of doubt, that True Visions are Spirit Revelations and beyond the control of any and all Human Beings. Thus, True Visions are a strict matter of Faith, simply so, because the Recipient has absolutely no way to verify them, especially to others. I Paul have always relied on the promise of the Message that "You will know when you Need to know." For comparison sake, Automatic writing is not a True Vision, while on the other

hand, Thought Transference from Spirit to Physical is.

Now I Paul has much more to tell you in this Communication, but first, we need to Review, actually list, those matters that Do Matter. To preface them let me say this:

The Need for Order in attaining and maintaining Freedom is overwhelming. Without order in one's life, the whole concept of True Freedom is shattered and is nothing more than a mockery of what this Freedom should and must be. True Freedom is something earned not gifted. It is what allows you and I the Right and the Privilege to Obey the Mind of Christ, a Freedom that only a few human beings, world-wide, have ever experienced and enjoyed. Without Order, without Self-Discipline, without Love and without devotion and dedication to the Truth, such enjoyable and exciting and ecstatic Freedom is unattainable. Such obedience to the Mind of Christ may make you appear "different," small even, in the eyes of your peers who do not hold such Freedom, but you are gigantic in the Eye of "Recognition"! And that's really the matter that matters - Now and in the Future. Furthermore, such Freedom is necessary to the Act of Transcendence from a posture of High Trance wherefrom you make the Transition from here to there as a guest, a Transitorial Transient, then. Here, then, is a list of the

matters already touched upon that all of you should have a good working knowledge of to be successful on The Way to “The Way”:

Receiving - Sending - Meditating - Semi-Trance - Cogitating - Dreaming -Contemplation - Full Trance State - OBE - Transcendence - Physical Body - Spiritual Body - Psychical - Lower mind - Higher Mind - Mind of Christ - Levels of Consciousness - Physical-material Realms - High Meditation Level or State - Remeditation Elimination and Acquirement Trance State - Meditation Silence State - Preparation - Time and “Times” - Responsibilities - the Family - Doing - Being - Adepts - Formative Causation - Habit - Motivation - Learning - Repetition - Retention - Success - Uniting Opposites - Purity - Purgation - Righteous Life - Want - Need - Prayer - Unconscious - Subliminal - Time Travel - Vertical Time - Horizontal Time - Memory - Past - Present - Future - three dimensional time - Transcendental Time - Spiritual Symbolism -Spirit - spirit - Silent Conversation - Seven Pillars - Seven Laws - Faith - Hope - Imagination - God - Kingdom - heaven - Change - barriers - “self” - Bondage - Wholeness - Act Natural - Self-Discipline - Earth - Righteousness -Sharing - Caring - Presence - Likes - dislikes - Action - Energy - “House” - Following - Debt - Inheritance - the Way - “the Way” - Book of The Two Ways -Book of Life - The Message

of I Paul - Pillars - Laws - Ordinances - thought - Creative Thought - Creative Imagination - Wisdom - Knowledge - Understanding - Intelligence - Life - LIFE - life - Discovery - Journey - Concentration - Reality - Courage - Unity - Enlightenment - Witness - Recognition - "Recognition" - "Recognition"! - Remembering - Charity - Open-mindedness - Self-Love - Love of other - Sacrifice - Universal Plan - Man's Inhumanity - God's Will - Trans-Personal Power - Christian Spiritualist - Pity - Humanitarianism - Altruism - Sentimentalism - Sorrow - Agapé - Familyship - Fellowship - Friendship - Art - Negative - Positive - Jesus - the Paul's - Neighbor - Ressentiment - Fear - Doubt - Pain - Prepare - Follow - Come - People - Places - Things - Hate - Mystery - Genius - Tools - Control - matter and matters - Revenge - Anger - Transition - Transitorial Transient and Power.

All of these are simple matters of the minds - the mind in Action then, and that Action is of a very singular type - Positive Creative Action, then, nothing more and nothing less. You see, the bottom line is still effort and Change. The Message is but words on paper. It only works when you Work at and with it. I'm sure you can "see" the simplicity of this Truth. The Principle of Perfection as contained in the Message of I Paul is not to become Perfect in the flesh but to Exert the full, the honest, and the most sincere Effort you

possibly are capable of and to leave the Results alone. Your Effort is a matter that truly matters. The Results of such effort is a matter that truly matters to “others.” “See”? And even this is a simple matter of “Minds” all the way down the Line of Position – the Law, then. One must Prepare and Follow, then, in the fullness of “times” to become an Adept and a successful traveler, and nothing is more important to all of this than the Integrity and the Freedom of your minds.

Therefore, one needs acquire an ease-of-mind if one is to be successful in their questings of Love and Truth, Freedom and Justice, Responsibility and Recognition. A mind, then, that is free to make decisions and to carry them out, through, then, detail by detail to a fruitful conclusion. My sources tell me that less than ten percent of the minds on this Earth actually do this regularly.

There is, you see, a highly personal experience called “making up one’s own mind.” Not too many people do this without being influenced by outside, external pressures, even though the culminating and decisive act is performed by the person themselves.

This act, or the possibility of doing this is called the “free-will” which is not “Free” at all due both to the “self” and to those external influences that sway or dominate the so-called “free-will.” What one needs to cultivate is a Free



mind. The Truth is not only Free but One Mind and it is “the Truth” that sets one Free and One-minded at the same moment. Doing this, you then hold a “Free-Will,” the Will that Wills above all wills. This “Free-Will” is a part of the spontaneity in all causation. Every event is genuinely new and has Powers of its own. Accordingly, in the behavior of every entity there is always something that is not the effect of other causes. This “something” which is not mere effect and therefore not mere passivity, has always had for human beings a singular value. It stands at the very center of one’s Wholeness and is suffused with that Love with which one loves oneself. The failure of plans, the defeat of intentions, may be painful and at times hard to bear – yet one can suffer them and still feel that some values remain to be cherished. But if the making up of one’s own mind, the self-determination of one’s own behavior, is taken away, is lost or forfeited, then there is nothing left beneath the Sun and the moon for such who lose control of their minds.

Now deciding for oneself what claims or opinions are true is ordinarily an important part of self-determination. No one of mature intelligence likes to accept an idea as true merely for having been told it is so – still less will such a one accept it upon command. To do so is not freedom but enslavement. Quite some time ago, the Message of I Paul itself challenged its perusers to “Prove all things,” to be



critically cautious and open minded then and not to accept or assume claims or opinions merely on the basis of their source. The Message made it quite clear that one should become their own best witness by maintaining this open-mindedness until “the Truth” itself changed them into conformity with and for it. Since it is the Truth that sets one Free and keeps one Free it is obvious from the Present Condition of our world today that no Political, Religious or Social System and not too many individuals either, hold the Truth despite their claims to the contrary.

Unless self-determination, a Free mind, has been lost by psychological manipulations of which the persons themselves are unaware or by coercion of which they are very much aware, it remains and thrives as a subjective limit upon the powers of such persons, manipulators, places, institutions and other things which would otherwise control their minds. (Please “see” CPM #25.)

The Free Mind is like an impregnable fortress, it cannot be taken, only yielded Up!

People, Places, things may seize a person’s body or even destroy their life but they cannot possess a mind that is Free unless it is Willingly Handed Over, an Act I Paul has done both Willingly and Joyously, on many an occasion and opportunity, but not to any Person, Place, or thing of this

Earth - at least not in the past ten years of my life here.

Physical and Spiritual disillusionment, apathy even, is the product of a fettered mind, a “self-sick” mind, or a lost mind via manipulation. Such minds, if they can be called that, are useless, hopeless and undisciplined at the moment, but not helpless for the Truth, when sincerely sought, can transform them and set them Free.

A mind that doesn't challenge the status quo of all things for the express Purpose of Changing, Upgrading all things for the better and the Well-Being of All is a wasted mind. A mind without Ideals and Creative Ideas is not an Active, vibrant, vigorous nor Free mind - such minds do not Travel. Therefore, without an Ease-of-mind, without autonomous self-determination, without Freedom of thought and Imagination and the Self-Discipline to manifest them, you and You are going nowhere together. Further still, If your day is Future then you had better DO Something Now to insure that promise. Procrastinations, foolishnesses, petty wants and outright laziness and aloofness from what is clearly your Responsibility in this life-time will avail you Absolutely Nothing, Zero plus Zero is still Zero, here and There.

Now, if there are any among you left, who qualify to experience Transcendence and a safe return, we address the

following to you which we will attempt to put into the simplest form possible. Your understanding and ability to successfully utilize this information will be no less and no greater than your Effort up to Now in regards to the Message and your Past and Future ability to follow directions exactly as given. If you're still in "self," if you're still beholden to matters that do not matter, if you're still into "likes and dislikes" or "wants" then none of the following will mean anything to you, except mere words on paper, simply because they will be way beyond your ken and understanding.

As we have repeatedly stated throughout the Message Motivation is a must for the achieving of the Trance States, the prelude to all Transcendences except the final one.

We know from previous communications that there is nothing unusual or eerie about these trance states and as a matter of fact they are fairly common phenomena, whether recognized or not by those who participate in their occurrences. They are quite common to lonely people who allow their thoughts to float into the Past in search of those moments when they felt Needed and Loved, those happenings in their lives when they had someone and something that gave meaning and Purpose to their existence which they cannot, or do not find in the Now. On

the other hand, these Trance States are extremely common to people who hold to a great purpose for their life and are thereby motivated to work hard for its accomplishment.

So here we have the two extremes. The one forever seeking someone, something, or some purpose and meaning, in and for their life, living and searching in the wrong place, the Past, and those who do hold to a purpose and meaning in their life which drives them forever Upward in their effort to fulfill it Now. All humans fall into one of these two categories in one degree or another, all the way from self-helplessness or apathy to desire, faithfulness in purpose and the motivation to fulfill that “something” Recognized and Remembered in All their words, Acts and Deeds.

The differences here are not those of a Physical Nature but clearly those of a Spiritual one. The lonely, the wishful thinkers, the idlers, the lovers of the old, the past, the stuck-in ones, then, who walk alone and are lonely and going nowhere and for who the darkness can only become darker. And those who know and understand that they are never alone. These are the ones who walk-after, walk-in, and walk-with the Spirit for all Things that are Good, Right and True in the Now for that day, their Day, which is Future. And all of this is a very simple matter of the minds. One dull,

selfish and sluggish and one alive, alert, active, vigorous and vibrating Energy constantly. One, then, lives for his or herself, stuck-in “self,” while the other, the Spiritual, lives and works for the “other” and the Well-Being of All.

You aren't what you eat but you are what you don't eat and if you don't eat at all you don't exist. You are, though, what you Think and you can become what You do not think and if you do not Think you do not exist. Once again, it's a very simple matter of the minds and the choice is yours, for it is the mind that both Creates and destroys here and there.

The low and middle Trance States and the out of body experiences are limited in the field of vision to the past and present, to what we call horizontal time. The High Trance States leading to the Transforming-Transcendence Levels hold an unlimited field of vision for they culminate in what we call Vertical Time. These Time Zones are symbols, denoting the separation between the Light and the Darkness.

The Trance States are merely expressions of the Capacity for different states or levels of Consciousness within everyone, lying dormant, or Active, as the case may be, over and above their normal waking consciousness, their rational, sane and sober consciousness, then.

Separated by the thinnest of veils, these levels of

consciousness are Higher and Deeper potential layers of Consciousness different from but attainable by the norm stated above. Most people go through life without even suspecting their existence. Yet with the proper touch, they are in all their completeness, definitive levels of the minds for our utilizations.

Trance States are a Reality backed by scientific, medical and spiritual discoveries and research. Trance ability and capacity are inherent. It is a natural endowment, then, yet it needs Preparation, Practice and Patience to master them and use them wisely. These states are one of the most important functions and reasons for the Lower Mind and I Paul remind you that it is the minds we are dealing with herein and not the brain. The mind, actually, is our most precious possession - our link to the "other," the Way Home.

To master these Trance States one needs to strengthen their attentiveness, receptivity and develop an intense localized concentration with a diminishing peripheral awareness to induce them.

The Trance States are discovery experiences and to induce them requires great self-control in All Things and this comes only by, and through, great Self-Discipline in All Things and especially to Matters that Do Matter. One can

only discover their True-Self by getting out of their False-“Self” and acting natural. You can begin this by being Responsible, being attentive to details, learning to listen, and by being openly receptive to all the Important Things so as to establish them as Good Habits in your daily life and then carrying them with you into your meditations to induce the Trance States. This inducement needs only to be successful once. After that the Trance State becomes a simple matter of switching on the auxiliary mind powers common to All who possess a rational mind.

Accepting rather than questioning one’s sensations in meditation is another key to the success of one’s attempts to induce the Trance State. You really must “let go” and allow “them” to take over the process completely. Child-likeness needs to be restored in these inducings, in the strict sense that one enters into their meditations in a totally “self-forgetfulness” frame of mind.

The Trance States are a function for Responsibly Alert persons who can utilize their capacity for maximal involvement with one point in space and time and thereby minimizing their involvement with all other points in space and time. This fine tuning of the mind allows for the Creative Imagination to take flight, whereby “disciplined reasoning” is suspended, as it is in the “dream state,”

wherein the manic flight of thought, the argumentative state that often reaches the violent level, where the flow of ideation is free to drift and find its own level. This may sound eerie but it is not. What's happening here, consciously, is what happens every time you dream in the unconscious or subliminal state of being. Thus the Truly Creative person holds a vivid intuitive imagination for new ideas not generated by normal deduction but by a highly Spiritualized Creative Imagination. Part of the process of this creative leap is the informal process of trance inducement wherein one lets the mind "float" uninhibited and allows "things to happen." It's a kind of mental freewheeling whereby "things happen" out of the blue that definitely are not of "your doing," not "your ideas" or "your thoughts."

Therefore Creative Thought and Creative Imagination doesn't always mean that you are creating "something" but means your ability to Think and Create on the Creation Level - the Creative Ideal and Ideation level. The Essence of the One Mind is in you more than once and therefore you have this innate ability and when you are in harmony with the Mind of Christ also, then you are actually at the Creation and Creativity levels and ready for all the Trance State levels.

The ability to concentrate deeply and on one particular



subject or object at a time is a necessity for those who wish to induce the High Trance States or the highest levels of Consciousness possible while in the body that lead up to the Consciousness leaving the body and becoming Free to Travel with, and in, even higher levels of Consciousness uninhibited by the physical-material Realm. From this one should be able to see that the Physical body and the lower mind enter the trance state in tandem from which the Lower mind then exits the physical body and the Trance State, becoming Fully Conscious while the balance of the Physical body remains in Trance until the Lower Mind reenters and disrupts the Trance.

The mind, unlike the brain, has no physical form, yet the mind, especially the undisciplined mind, can be greatly manipulated by the brain and therefore by the physical body. Such things as doubt, fear, anxiety, tension, fatigue, anger and so forth, preoccupation, then, in any way, shape, or manner is a definite barrier to anyone attempting to Meditate, Cogitate and Contemplate and Trance. These are the reasons for the Purification Preparations prior to entering into a meditative session especially where the goal is the inducement of the Trance States. A physical and spiritual calm, being at peace with and within oneself, and establishing an Ease-of-Mind are tantamount to success. You must be in a state of Freedom wherein you own your

thoughts and your body and you must exude confidence and be free of all Negative distractions of any ilk.

This whole process is known as the Collective Conscious and Unconscious Selection. It is for All Human Kinds to know themselves, and “others,” as well as their Universe and its different realms, and to know their origin and their purposes, and it is in them to travel and to Rediscover All things for themselves which have been lost through their physical-material preoccupations which can be recaptured through their Unique Minds and their abilities for Cosmic and Astral Projections or what are known as OBE and Transcendences.

It has been given to all of Mankind to control his own Destiny and His place in the Universe in both its physical body and its spiritual realms. This Uniqueness of Mankind is Man’s gift of Life from LIFE, our inheritance then, which up to Now only a few have discovered and have claimed. Your thoughts are “your” truths but “your” truths are not necessarily and usually are not, The Truth. Most humans live in a mixture of theoretical and illusionary presuppositions and preconceived ideas which they accept as truths and which, in reality, are untruths. The only possible way out of this dilemma is to be transformed by a renewal of your mind and to cease conforming to these

untruths and insidious illusions. One way you can do this is by studying the Message of I Paul and following its Way to “the Way” exactly as given. You begin to do this by Recognizing and then assuming Fully your Responsibilities for your tasks, goals, words, acts and deeds in every facet and phase of your existence here, both Physically, Spiritually, and Mentally.

Before going into the steps or levels necessary to bring about the Trance States which we shall do in detail, I Paul would like to give you some background on the history and Reality of such States that the Modern Western World and most of its religions attack as witchcraft, hallucination and so forth. Even the World’s Religious Mystics have not escaped from condemnations by their own religious sects. Just how old is trance and man’s ability to induce it? Probably as old as Mankind itself. Let us see.

In the half-light of earliest history Trance appears as a fairly well known phenomena and a fairly well developed art. Trance, in fact, has been induced by the reading of a Communication from the Message of I Paul on its “listeners” which we know as an “abstraction trance” – the mental withdrawal from participation in the subject at hand.

There is evidence that all the phenomena of

apparitions, levitation, hypnotism, clairvoyance, ESP, OBE and so forth that are known to modern psychical research were known to Ancient Man. There is a record of the Trance being practiced in China in the eighteenth-century B.C. At that time, persons in a trance ecstatic state, while seeking communion with the dead, would display convulsive motions of the face and limbs, shivering, shaking, uncontrollable movement, jumping and running, and so forth. At times this was induced by singing and dancing, two methods still employed today in various cultures. They began their Trance Inductions by the clanging of cymbals and the ringing of bells, the noise of which they alternated with the sound of stringed instruments and pipes, dancing and whirling round and round and uttering the language of the spirits (the first known speaking in tongues). These statements of procedure from 1800 B.C. apply equally well to the much later whirling dervish, the medicine man, and others.

When the close communication between the Trance and Automatic Writing is Recalled, it is interesting to observe that such writing was familiar to the Ancient Hebrews (II Chronicles 21:12) as well as to the Chinese at the opening of the Christian Era. With the aid of a forked stick held by two persons it was possible for the Chinese to get information that was not otherwise available (possibly the

original use of the divining rod).

Another unequivocal instance of the Trance in a highly elaborated form occurs in Chinese ancestor worship as described by L.B. Paton in his "Spiritism and the Cults of the Dead in Antiquity." The celebrant was required to fast and to meditate for three days during which he was required to concentrate on the face of the deceased, how he stood and sat, smiled and spoke and what he liked to think and do. Finally, the ancestor appeared and spoke to the celebrant.

In the Old Testament the Hebrew prophets of Baal "called on the name of Baal from morning even until noon," "leaped about the altar," and "cut themselves with knives till the blood gushed out upon them" when midday was past, they would all prophesy (I Kings 18:26, 29). Here, again, the muscles were constricted, the limbs stiffened, and the subject remained motionless in the trance state. The onlooker also participated in these activities until finally they became rhythmical. Modern counterparts of this ceremonial rite can be found today almost anywhere primitive tribes exist.

We also know that the Celts of Ancient Briton practiced Trance and developed it to a great degree. Their priestly order, the Druids knew well the rudiments of stagecraft, ecstasy, hypnotherapy and Trance. In one rite, the subject

would lie down as if to sleep while four Druids would chant over him until he fell into what they called a “magic-sleep.” Then visions, for example, of the person to become King would appear to the magic sleeper. Also, prophesy would occur, when the Druid’s Seer would reach a state of ecstatic frenzy and out of his incoherent speech (speaking in tongues) would come revelations which only a high priest could interpret. We also know that the Druids could raise blotches on the faces of their subjects suggesting the concept of psychomatics appearing at the beginning of the Christian Era.

Among the Greeks at approximately the same era, we find a wealth of information involving the Trance States. At about the fourth century B.C. and for another five or so centuries thereafter, the cult of Asclepius developed and flourished. At the various centers of healing dedicated to this god, the patient was instructed regarding the power of the god and about previous cures (prestige suggestion) and was then taken into the temple for the “temple sleep” which appears to be a trance state induced by further suggestions by the cult priests. While in such “temple sleep” surgery was performed on some patients by the priests. The alleviation of suffering from the extant records, is very impressive.

Western culture has, for a long time, customarily

regarded all trance phenomena as abnormal. Yet an unbiased examination of the facts proves quite conclusively their normality in most cases. I say in “most cases” simply because there are abnormalities in almost everything and the Trance is no exception.

For example, there is a pathology of the Trance itself, such as the one that occurred in medieval times and are known as the “dancing manias.” These were a series of epidemics known variously as St. John’s dance, St. Vitus’ dance, tigretiea, tarantism, and others witnessed in the Netherlands, Germany, Italy and Abyssinia. While the main events occur in the period 1374 to 1819, the “dancing mania” of the year 1374, was, in fact, no new disease but a phenomenon well known in the Middle Ages. In the year 1237, upwards of a hundred children were said to be suddenly seized by this disease (Hecker - “The Epidemics of the Middle Ages”). While the disease took different forms and was affected by various local circumstances, its distinctive pattern was well defined. The advent of the mania in a given locality was anticipated. Then, those who were afflicted formed circles, hand in hand and appearing to have lost control of all their senses, continued dancing for hours and hours in their delirium until they fell to the ground exhausted. While dancing they neither saw nor heard, being insensitive to external impressions. All

claimed later that they were haunted by visions, and all of them fouled themselves proving their lack of physical control.

Such a syndrome has been explained by medical scientists as involuntary hypnosis and by others as the power of suggestion and mind control over the weak and foolish. One thing is certain though, the particular form these manias took reflected the cultural setting they occurred in. Similar “happenings” took place at the close of the French Revolution where the causes were probably mass hysteria induced by the ecstasy of victory and the bloodletting of the guillotine.

The dispute over the role that Trance and hypnosis play in the role of Western Mystics has been long and heated and bitter and the arguments have often been the pleading of a cause. Only the outward forms referred to as ecstasy, rapture, etc. need be considered herein. In ends sought, the western mystic achieves his purpose with his “union,” the Hindu with his “release,” the American Indian with his “Locution,” and the Gā with his “Vision.” The ends differ and are culturally determined, but the means are identical in all essentials.

The antecedents of a mystical trance are quite familiar - fixation of gaze, fasting, meditation, solitude. Being



mystics, and therefore fully Prepared, both Physically and Spiritually, these antecedents should produce trance ecstasy, which has been defined by various psychologists as “an abnormal state of consciousness in which the reaction of the mind to external stimuli is either inhibited or altered in character.” As used in mystical theology it is almost equivalent to Trance. Most religious Christian Mystics were either condemned or suppressed by the Church on charges of heresy and Pantheism.

These Mystics placed their emphasis on union with the divine, on “God being born within.” In true Neo-Platonic fashion these Religious Mystics taught that that which is real in All Things is the divine. In the soul of man lies a spark of God. That is the True Reality of All Men. All individualizing qualities are essentially negative. Man should, therefore, lay them aside. His struggle is to have God born in his soul, that is to enter into full communion with and to come under the control of the indwelling God. In this effort Christ is the pattern and example, in whom Godhead dwelt in humanity in all fullness. With God dominant the soul is filled with love and righteousness. Churchly observances may be of some value, but the springs of the Mystic life are far deeper and its union with God more direct. Good works do not make righteousness. It is the soul already righteous that does good work. The all-important matter is

that the human being enters into its full privilege of union with God.

It is interesting to note that the inquisition murdered many a mystic and their followers on charges of heresy.

From the above, you Adepts can see the differences between Religious Mystics and Spiritual Mystics.

The interpretation of the Trance State as a “disease” is the popular concept of our American culture but nothing could be further from the Truth. From a medical, psychological viewpoint, trance ecstasy has been described as “an extreme variety of monoidism,” the “being alone” state, then, that the religious mystic visionaries experience through the physical senses. There is absolutely no OBE or transcendences involved in such experiences and such “trances” are, in all probability, induced via self-hypnosis.

These Religious mystics “smell the sweet odor of the Presence” – they “feel the warmth of the Fire pouring over them” and so forth, all indications that they do not leave the physical body, the minds do not unite and the spirit doesn’t soar, to them it is a matter of soul and therefore not a True Trance at all.

Whenever and wherever cultural and Religious restrictions and burdens prey upon the mystic or the would-

be trancer, no True Trance is possible simply because there is an absence of freedom to do so. The products of a Trance experience must, however, be judged by their worth-whileness and the changes they wrought in the Life of the Trancer, both physically and spiritually.

Some Religious Mystics who turned Spirituals after successful True Trances or what we call High Trance such as “Meister” Eckhart (1266-1327) whose teachings were condemned two years after his death (he died while on trial for heresy) by Pope John XXII. There was also John Tauler, another Dominican and Henry Suso who wrote the “booklet on Eternal Wisdom.” Almost all of the Religious Mystics sided with Luther on the Reformation schism.

One last interesting note on Christian Religious Mystics. The mystical movement had another side in a pantheism which broke with all churchly and even all moral teachings. Such was that of Amalrich of Bena (? - 1204), a teacher in Paris, who was led by the writings of John Scotus Erigena and the extreme Neo-Platonic opinions of the Spanish Muhammadan expositor of Aristotle, Averroes (1126-1198), to the conclusions that God is All, that he is incarnate in the believer as in Christ, and that the believer cannot sin. He also held that as the Jewish Law and Ritual had been abolished by the Coming of Christ, so that of

earlier Christianity was now done away with by the coming of the Holy Spirit. Amalrich was compelled to recant (under penalty of death if refused) by Pope Innocence III, but he left a number of followers much to the church's discomfort.

I Paul, personally have experienced the visionary trance of the Religious Mystics or the semi-trance or low trance that occurs in quiet meditation wherein one is not attempting to meditate per se but in simple solitude allows the mind to wander while reading, driving, watching T.V. or listening to a radio and so forth. I experienced no "sweet odors" nor did I feel any "hot wind," "breath" or "fire" but I did experience "dreaming" while not sleeping as my mind first wandered lazily and then crazily. I fully recalled things, moments from my past, that I had long past forgotten. Suddenly great mysteries and secrets became clear to me momentarily, so many answers and so swift that I had no time to memorize them, and disputing with myself over this, I lost track of those mysteries as they unfolded. Then I realized that I was locked into a Trance State of some kind and that knowledge brought me back to the T.V. program I had been listening to and to my great surprise I discovered that I had written almost two full pages of a Communication I had been working on and was having a problem with a certain point which I, somehow, took care of in this state I had been in. Furthermore, it was totally unlike any

Automatic writing I had done in the past and I have never again had the same experience. All I Paul can say about it, is that it was a truly mystical experience and one identical to what the mystics mentioned above experienced - an in-body, semi-trance, or mystical vision.

Now, when we speak of Prayer, Meditation, Cogitation and Contemplation, and in that order, what do we mean, insofar as they are steps to the inducing of the Trance States? (If one goes back to my old diaries, they will find these four words repeated over and over again therein.)

The key to Prayer can be found in Communication Thirty-One, I Paul. Let me repeat it here for your enlightenment. “True Prayer is a matter of Consciousness, of Concentration, of emptying oneself of one’s carnal materialism - a spiritually oriented meditation then, with but one purpose - to make conscious contact with spirit. In such a trance state you cannot pray but You can!” (The underlining is mine, now.) Can you now “see” this better? It goes on to say “the rule is ‘As he thinketh in himself so is he’. It is here you knock. It is here you ask. It is here you receive!” The next two paragraphs following the one above should also be thoroughly understood by those of you who would induce the Trance States.

The second word underlined in the paragraph from

Communication #31, I Paul, is “Consciousness.” If you do not know the full meaning of this term from the Message of I Paul by now, then you really have no business joining with those who are prepared to induce the Trance States.

The third word underlined in the paragraph is “Concentration” and one you should all understand also. Yet this word, like all the others in the Message of I Paul, has more than one meaning and this particular one may have proven tricky to some of you, so I will explain it for you. Most of you probably think of “Concentration” in its dictionary terminology, i.e., a close or fixed attention of one’s thoughts, which certain the Message agrees with. The Message also places the word in the context of an intense preoccupation with a limited group of stimuli, but the Message also places the word “Concentration” in the context of “the elimination of all thoughts, getting behind thoughts, i.e., transcending the activities and fluctuations of the mind stuff.” In other words, the very word “Concentrate,” like the Term “True Prayer” also means Trance State or trance levels. In fact, the very words, Prayer, Meditation, Cogitation and Contemplation all carry that connotation among their various uses and meanings. In their trance uses the Attention is narrowed down to a vague, quality-less point, until at last by intense Concentration even the steady mind and its single thought are surpassed,

to an Adept that single thought, in fact all thoughts, in one's going-in in order to go out, pertain only to those that have a definite spiritual value.

One must begin then by the removal of all sources of inner conflict (we expect that the Adept has already followed the directions for the removal of all the sources of outer conflict.)

I could wind this all up right now, by saying if all the determining factors are right then one should be in a trance state, or at least at the semi-trance or middle-trance level, from where a rapid and unexpected expansion of the faculties of the minds occurs wherein supernormal powers arise leading one into the High Trance State and Out of the Body and possibly even further, or, if upon one's returning from an OBE immediately goes into True Prayer and Remediation and reestablishes the Unity of the Minds. But, I Paul, will not leave you here, we will go on and into more detail for your benefit and safety.

Going back briefly then to our paragraph on True Prayer and the underlined words we find the following words "emptying," "materialism," "spiritually oriented meditation," "one purpose," "conscious contact," "spirit" and "Trance State." Each of these words and terms have just been explained above and you should now "see" them

clearly.

All True Adepts understand the Need for, and the meaning of Freedom. For those who consider themselves Adept let me add to their understanding, if any. Freedom is not a license for chaos or for a lack of order or responsibility in their lives. It should be obvious that such matters as chaos, disorder and irresponsibility in one's words, acts and deeds is not Freedom at all but slavery. One may have the Ability to flaunt the Laws of the Land but there is no such thing as License of Right via Freedom to do so. One may have the Ability and the Choice to abort the Physical and Spiritual Laws of the Universe, but there is no Freedom, individual or otherwise, that grants one a Right to do so.

Ability is neither a right nor a Freedom while choice is a Freedom, yet it alone does not preclude chaos or disorder, etc. in one's way of Life. Choice is something that can be either Good or bad, Right or wrong, Sane or insane, Helpful or harmful, then.

The Privilege to Transcend belongs to everyone and you are free to make the attempt to do so or to choose not to (with one exception) but it is not a Freedom, per se. It takes great Patience and Preparation to acquire the Ability to do so. But, it must be kept in mind that it takes two minds to bring it off and the Higher Mind is not going to accept any



carnal excesses of the Lower Mind whatsoever at any time with one exception - your demise here, physically.

I Paul doubts that anyone who has read the Message can claim ignorance of what “carnal excesses” means herein. Those so “self” afflicted will fail from the initial stages due to their anti-spiritual behavior. Personal qualities are very important to a would-be transcender, Now and Then.

The methods of inducing the Trance State are, of course, of the utmost importance and need be followed painstakingly step by step for the objective to be achieved. Once the objective has been mastered, the situation for, and the environment of the inducement, become secondary.

One must be relaxed and free of all resistance in their initial attempts. An Ease-of-Mind is necessary and the subject must be Free in the True Sense of all that that word implies. Slavery, in any way, shape, or manner, cannot be transcended, with but the one exception noted above. Where there is no Freedom there is no Spirit.

Your invitation to Transcend has been clearly before you for quite some time in those three little words, Prepare-Follow-Come, and that is what you must do in order to be successful - Prepare thoroughly, Follow exactly, and Come visit the Kingdom. So those among you who are Prepared

and have walked after the Spirit and now walk with the Spirit, the Adepts then, are now ready to become True Adepts by walking in the Spirit via the Trance States. To those who apply a double-standard to the Message of I Paul, wherein they “talk the walk” and teach and preach values and principles of the Message for others to follow but do not practice nor follow them themselves, obviously should understand that this Communication nor the balance of the Message is not for them.

Now, finally, I Paul hopes that we have separated the “Doers” from the “Pretenders” and that all of you who are serious about this Message of ours will recognize those who do not follow the Message of I Paul as “barriers and burdens” and point these truths out to them whenever the occasion is honestly justified by honest and constructive criticism and in a Loving, Sharing and Caring fashion. What we all must keep firmly in our minds, is that the Message of I Paul is All Inclusive and never Exclusive and therefore we must all expect to see fools, hypocrites, and religionists join in our ranks but we also must expect to see them Change and be transformed by a renewal of their minds, and all of us must help them in any way, shape or manner possible to see that they no longer remain as fools, hypocrites or religionists. The Message, you see, is the Great Stone in the Mills of the Supreme Spirit and it cries out for all of you to

bring them in, the Good, the Bad, and the Indifferent and with their Effort the Stone will grind them out and finely so. The Effort is always our part, the Results belong to “others.”

This entire Communication is not only a simple matter of minds but one that spells out the Effort you need to exert to Induce the Trance States for your benefit and enlightenment provided you have already exerted the effort called for and are now Prepared and Following, points we find necessary to repeat, time and time again, until we are convinced one and all are finally convinced also that this is the Way to “The Way” - Prepare - Follow - Come.

Now since Meditation is the foundation of inducing the Trance States wherein are also incorporated the steps of True Prayer or Spiritual Contemplation and the step of Cogitation we shall next, herein, outline the steps or levels of such meditations.

### **Induction Level**

You enter here Prepared per the Message and you have Purged yourself per the Message and are therefore in a state of Purification. You are relaxed and attentive to what it is you are attempting. You are, or you get comfortable. You assume a position that will not require further adjustment or unnecessary movement. You have assured your safety,

your complete solitude and above all you are to be free of interruption and silence is assured within reason. You should by now have an Ease-of-Mind and be engulfed in a mood of “self-forgetfulness.” If all this is so you are in the Transition Level and entering the Deepening Level of warmth, very comfortable and totally relaxed being as silent as possible in the silence around you, letting go of all Things except one Thing - This one Thing is either the Mind, the Eye, or the Ear Fixation Level.

### **Eye Fixation**

Here you have a choice - you can stare at one object or you can think deeply about it, a color, for example, until you grow tired of it and shutting your eyes and with steady breathing you maintain only the object or the color using your mind now as your eye.

### **Ear Fixation**

Here you close the eyes and listen intensely to one sound such as a clock ticking, so as to shut out all other sounds. Whatever you choose to listen to, the sound must be soft, not a blaring sound, but a sound barely audible so that you must concentrate deeply in order to hear it.

This staring at or listening to in a fixed state develops into the Monotony Level where the incessant ticking of the

clock, the intense staring at an object, the endless repeating of a word etc. and allowing this to fill you and allowing everything else to retreat into the background. It's this monotony that does the work if you allow it and you must allow it to drive you deeper and deeper and to close your eyes as it will and then it will close your mind and take you into the Trance State. The whole trick is to relax and let happen whatever is happening without any doubt, anxiety, or fears. Making an effort to relax, to allay fears or doubts, negates the whole state.

If at the Monotony Level with your eyes closed, you find yourself “thinking” or “picturing” things unrelated to what you are attempting immediately focus on your breathing and if you are not breathing regularly correct your breathing, your eyes of course are closed all the while, dwell on how relaxing each exhalation truly is by letting your mind focus only on this aspect of your activity. Then begin to count the breaths, continuing to enjoy the relaxation of each exhalation making them the focus of your counting. You tell yourself that each exhalation is driving you deeper and deeper and farther and farther away into the absolute relaxation and into “nothingness.” Imagine now that each exhalation is a step down on a fifteen step stairway and as you walk down the staircase, breath by breath, you see the bottom landing and a passageway and landing you go

through the Passage Way into the Fog beyond – from there you are gone to wherever it is the spirit wishes to guide you, for you, are now Out of the Body.

Now before attempting “going-out” suggest to yourself that regardless of how you got into the Trance State you will come back the same way, in reverse then, knowing full-well that you are protected if you are Prepared and Purified.

All of this Out of the Body experience is the foundation for the next level – that of a Transcendence. The whole procedure of inducing the Trance State given above may seem swift to you. It should so seem, for it is, if you are thoroughly Prepared and Purified “going In” to go “out.”

We can now from all of the above, page one through and up to here (page 147 in the original) list all the steps involved in order to Transcend:

1. Preparation
2. Purification
3. Spiritual Contemplation
4. Meditation
5. Cogitation
6. Trance State into an OBE
7. Re-entry
8. Spiritual Contemplation

## 9. Remeditation

- to Trance State leading to High Trance State - OBE leading to possible Transcendence and Return

## 10. Recall

We say possible Transcendence since all things need to be equal and the conditions right for the expansion of the Consciousness, and a safe return.

The first eight steps have now been thoroughly covered in the Message and deal exclusively with OBE restricted to the Earth Planes. That leaves us with five steps remaining that deal exclusively with a Transcendence, where the Unity of Minds, functioning as one mind, operate out of the Earth Planes - this is Transcendence - this is where the True-Self in its compounded wholeness of the lower and higher minds as one spirit body leave the physical body suspended in a Trance State, a phenomenon peculiar to both an OBE and a Transcendence which is returnable from.

Now if you're wondering what happened to "Prayer" in the list above, suffice it to say that Spiritual Contemplation and True Prayer are one and the same. Contemplation is "to look at intently," "gaze at," "to think about intensely," or "to meditate or muse." In step three in the list above it's the mental state one is in if the Preparation and the Purification steps have been exercised correctly and the state necessary

when one enters into their meditation step. And Spiritual Contemplation is the same mental state you are in when you return from an OBE.

Since we know that Prayer, Cogitation and Contemplation are all forms of meditation varying in their uses and degree of intensity we could rewrite the list above to read as follows:

1. Preparation
2. Purification
3. Prayer
4. Meditation
5. Cogitation
6. Contemplation
7. Trance Level
8. OBE
9. Re-entry
10. Prayer
11. Remeditation
12. High Trance to OBE
13. OBE to Transcendence and Return, with Recall

All a True Christian Spiritualist need do to go out and return safely is Pray-Meditate-Cogitate-Contemplate. That's the Way Out and the Way In. "See"? It's a simple matter of minds and so "we" keep it as simple as possible.



Yet even the simplest of things require practice and diligence. And everything simple usually has its complications and the inducing of the Trance States is no exception. I Paul wants you to know and understand that if you do everything, I have given you herein step by step you most likely will not OBE or Transcend. Why? Simply because in the actual doing of it all step by step, your mind will be preoccupied with all the instructions and not on what the instructions tell you must be done for you to be successful. This may seem to be a dilemma but it is not if you have been following the directions of the Message exactly as given. You need to study and practice meditation once or twice a day as the Message has said and the same applies to the experiments involved with meditations. The same goes for the instructions given herein until you can perform them automatically and without having to recall any of it halfway through your attempt. When you are capable of doing this then you can induce the Trance States and you will OBE and possibly go on to a Transcendence. You have to study it and practice it until you have forced it all into the back of your mind, not completely out of it, so that your memory can operate silently and automatically when you attempt to induce the Trance States. Difficult? Not at all, it is something you do every day of your life - you dress yourself automatically - you drive your car automatically - you eat,

you go to sleep – you perform your job and so forth as matter of fact routine without having to stop midway and think about what to do next – you do it practically automatically from the silent memory and repetition and that's exactly what you need to do with the instructions given above – practice, practice, practice until you can openly forget them and routinely put them into practice whenever you so decide to Unite the opposites. This is Meditation and Remediation Elimination and Acquirement of the Trance States in its preliminary usage. And I Paul will repeat again, that it still is a simple matter of the minds. And unless you put your mind to the task, nothing herein is going to assist you or produce any results for you.

All things being right and natural you learn to walk and talk at a young age and once learned you do it automatically naturally. Those of you who type or play the piano learned these attributes through patience, and like swimming, for example, after learning, you type, play the piano, and swim, how? Automatically.

Everybody has within them the innate ability to Trance just as we do to walk, talk and breathe. Yet many of these innate abilities and innate talents need practice and study to perfect them and only you can supply these necessities and the extent of your efforts is the very measure of the

extension of your ability to perform them.

And need I Paul, remind you of the greatest and most precious inherent ability of All, and one All of us possess via the Gift of the Supreme Spirit – our spirit – the innate ability to be a disciple and servant of the LIGHT, here and Now. And is this not still a simple matter of the minds?

You see, if you do not take control over your life, your mind, then, then you will remain, knowingly or unknowingly, a slave to the minds of others who may be Good, bad or indifferent to, and for, your well-being. We all know that God's Will for All of Mankind is its Well-Being but few remember that it is both the individual and the collective responsibility of ALL in ALL. That's you, me and everybody else, then. ALL of Mankind simply has to Understand that God is not going to do for It what it is capable of doing for Itself and that too is both an Individual as well as a Collective Responsibility.

Your success in the actual induction of the Trance State and the resultant OBE depend entirely upon the effort you have made in practicing the Instructions given herein. If, like myself, you can cause an “instant induction” and “go out,” then, of course, you have no need to study and practice the instructions herein. Yet, all of you do Need to know what to do upon coming out of an OBE in order to go “back-in”

and hope that All the conditions are right for the expansion of the minds to leave the Earth Planes and Transcend beyond them.

Let us begin by comparing meditation levels to Trance State levels and, in turn, give a comparison or example of each level.

Semi-Trance or low meditation. Compare to day-dreaming.

Middle Trance or middle meditation. Compare to hypnosis.

Full Trance State or high meditation. Compare to paralysis or immobile coma. Here the Mind is Free to leave the body. OBE possible.

High Trance through Remeditation. Here the Mind is out of the body again and back into an OBE where “self” is absent, the Minds are United and if they Compound, a Transcendence takes place.

Now it's very important to understand the differences between a Trance State and an Out of Body Experience, and the difference between an OBE and a Transcendence experience.

The Trance State, in and of itself, does not constitute an

Out of Body Experience. In the Trance State it is the Physical Body that is affected, not the mind. It is the physical body that becomes tranced, mesmerized such as in a stupor or a coma. The Mind is then Free to operate independently from the body, even to its leaving the body, but remaining in close proximity to it, locked into the Earth-Bound Plane level, where, if “self” has been carried into this plane level by the lower mind, it is not Free to Unite with the spirit, the True-Self, then. But, if the lower mind leaves the physical body Free and uninhibited by any physical-material holdings, then the Uniting of the Opposites automatically becomes a Reality and the earth-bound plane level is breached and one is in a True OBE and Free to travel within the Horizontal Time Zones of both past and present of one’s own Physical Life or someone else’s. All Things, All Persons and All Places, Past and Present are possibilities in such a True OBE. It is only at the Transcendent Level that one can see the Past, the Present and the Future.

As we can see, there is no one, set-way to induce the Trance States to bring about the Out of Body phenomena, simply because as individuals, we need to find the formula best suited to our particular make-up and approach to them. Therefore, we can only give instructions as suggestions from what we have learned and proven to be successful. You need to explore and practice until you find that manner of

inducement which is best for you and then practice it diligently to perfect it. When I Paul recorded the CPM's and other Communications, etc., I gave information based mainly upon my own Way Out as regards OBE's and Transcendences. Now using Creative Thought and Creative Imagination I can now induce the Trance States instantly utilizing True Prayer, Meditation, Cogitation and my "water signals" as One Step. Using these Creative tools per the Message of I Paul, one may instantly induce the Trance of the body and Free the Mind to exit it and soar, travel, trip, traverse, expand, solve problems, and so forth. I hope this explanation clears up any problems you may have had about "self" and "Trance States" from earlier Communications. What you Need Understand is that you must act independently in your going out until the physical body is in a Trance State, from which, the independence can be done away with and the mind being Free to Unite the Opposites. You can, then, Trance alone and enter into the earth-bound plane level alone but you cannot leave it on your own, or alone, then.

A Free mind is essential to both an OBE and a Transcendence and a Free mind is predicated on Hope while an enslaved mind is the explosion of ALL Hope. Hopelessness is the shutting out, the denial of the spirit, and where there is no Spirit in mind there simply is no

Freedom of the mind and one is helpless, as well as hopeless. Life, you see, is not a problem to be solved but a decision to be made. When we consistently make the Right decisions we are never faced with any real problems to solve, for no matter what we face there is always its solution and they lie within the Freedom of the Minds United and working together.

From previous Communications we know of the tremendous need we all have for Freedom, and for an Active Freedom, at that.

Now the Message of I Paul speaks of an Active Spirit and spirit. Is there such a thing as an inactive spirit? No, if we intend the word “inactive” to mean inert or immobile. Yes, if we intend to word “inactive” to mean idle in so far as you are concerned. Let us explain. Whenever a person is not “Free” as the Message intends and explains the word, then neither is the spirit free “in” such a one. For example, if you’re enslaved to a person, place or thing, as in “self” then, the True-Self, the spirit then, is not Free to Unite its consciousness with your enslaved consciousness, yet it, the spirit is always a Free spirit in all respects and aspects peculiar to all Spirits. Also, if you Pass-over in a state of “self” and are earth-bound the True-Self is Free of the body after seventy-two hours but is restricted to the earth-bound

plane level, the “dark” then. The rule is, that where there is no Freedom There is no “Active” Spirit or spirit. And usually, whenever the spirit is inactive within you or nearby you, you cannot make conscious contact with Spirit. Now you ought to be able to figure out just how very important Freedom truly is to one and all, and especially so to the minds, which are the ALL in All as well as the All in ALL.

Earlier on I mentioned “water signals,” a subject that has been covered somewhat in the Message of I Paul. These signals are used for identification in Thought Transference transactions for identification purposes. They are also used to call one to prepare to Transcend. If and when you get to “the Well” you will be asked for your identifying number so I Paul will list them, those that I have that is, and some of them have been newly revised due to changes beyond my comprehension.

When you transcend, and I Paul have no doubts that many of you will, you will traverse the Planes to one of the First Five of the Seven Pillars, i.e., Faith, Hope, Love, Truth, or Wisdom. What you will see, hear and learn there you will bring back with you and share it with the Family members, and part of that “hearing” will be a statement that only you and I, or my successor, will know, my having already “heard” it from I Paul.



When you give your “water signals” you give up your Right to Transcend Freely on your own again. From this point on you will be called and this calling will come to come, usually quite unexpectedly, through Thought Transference, and since “you will know when you need to know” I Paul, will not go into further detail on this aspect of Transcendence herein. Yes, my dear sisters and brothers, some things are sacred and quite personally so, as you shall come to see, “IF.”

An integral component of one's Preparation for Transcendence is the Recognition and Compliance (“the Effort,” then) to the Ethical standard for the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth. This ethical standard is the highest conceivable, “Be ye therefore perfect even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect”! This involves the utmost strenuousness toward slaying “self” and unlimited sincere love toward others. In other words, your Spirituality should be no less evident than your Humanity in everything you say and do. Jesus was the example for this and it is his wholeness we are to emulate. He simply did away with religion and tradition by declaring that man was the lord of the Sabbath and not the other way around and he never recognized any “one” day as the sabbath thereafter. He taught and displayed that Righteousness consisted in love to God and to one's neighbor – to a God who is a Father and to a neighbor

who is a brother or sister - manifested primarily in an attitude of mind, heart and the inner life, the fruit of which is external good acts for the Well-Being of All. The motive power of that Life, for all of us, is personal allegiance to the LIGHT, the Spirit Revelation of the Father and of Jesus as the Physical-Spiritual Revelation of the type of redeemed humanity to come. And here, once again, we have a very simple matter of the minds.

If one can Sense the Presence of the LIGHT in their Life then they have the gift of the Spirit active in them. And if this be so, then it is impossible for such a one, being honest, to be in "self." Thus, the necessity for Practicing the Presence of God, "the Spirit," becomes clear to us.

This "Sensing" should promote an internal and visible external Change, Transformation, then, via the Renewal of one's mind toward the Good, the Right and the True, with such a Change leading directly to a Human spirit Interchange. It's this uplifting, the raising of one's level of consciousness out of its carnality and the freeing of one's Conscience that allows such an Interchange to manifest itself.

Hence we can understand that during the Practicing of, or the Sensing of, the Presence of the Spirit, we need to maintain a position of confidence while holding to a

demeanor of calmness and Patience for this physical-spiritual Phenomenon to fully exert itself upon us. During this period of confident expectation, one should fully believe that this interchange between lower and higher Consciousnesses is going to occur and that's all you do. You simply follow the directions and let go. It will happen, the Results have been guaranteed and there are those of us who have proved these interchange happenings. For me the Message of I Paul is my greatest proof, and my travels proof absolute that the Message works when I Paul works at it diligently, which I do with a passion.

Remember that you have part of the Responsibility of creating the proper moments and environment for these Interchange happenings - Out of "self," Creative Thought, Creative Imagination, good works, proper habits, Practicing the Presence and so forth. You are then, either your greatest asset or your worst burden - it's up to you to decide which you are going to be. Yet decisions are nothing without the Action necessary to bring them into fruition and make your presence a Reality. You simply cannot walk the second mile until you have actually completed walking the first one.

So, again, we can see that the First key to bringing about these "Interchanges" is Preparation and the Second Key is the Creative one. You need to create, through the

power of suggestion, the moments and the environment necessary for such vital Interchanges to occur and then allow your Full Measure of Faith to let it happen. You need to expect that Creative suggestion to happen but do nothing else to force it into happening – simply allow it to manifest itself in its own way and time. All you need do is to repeat the process over and over again until it does happen, and it will if you have thoroughly and honestly prepared yourself and have followed the directions exactly as given.

Now these Human-Spirit Interchanges brought about through True Prayer or Contemplation are what the mystics have experienced down through the Ages and are what they have described as “visions” for want of better terminology. Actually, what these True Mystics were attempting to describe were actual Trance State Levels of Perception.

For purposes of explanation and clarification, let us say that the Low or Semi-Trance State Level is like daydreaming, that the Middle Trance State Level is like sleep-dreaming, and that the Full Trance State Level is Visionary, i.e., the seeing of things not perceivable to the naked eye, and most probably stimulated via repetition, subliminally, then.

These Human-Spirit “Interchanges,” then, are what are mistakenly conceived by many as Out of Body

experiences. They are not. They are, though, at the very threshold of same. It is “here,” at this level, then, that one “receives” the answer to one’s knocking and seeking, and it is from this level that one may proceed into the High Trance State and “go out,” and it is from this going-out and into the OBE state that a Transcendence becomes a possibility.

Possible, simply because a Transcendence is always possible, and, in fact, very definite, at least once, in everybody’s lifetime here, and no one here knows the exact day or hour. Yet, if the OBE is birth by a Remediation Elimination and Acquirement process then one may go Up and Transcend where, for an unfathomable instant between the OBE and the Transcendence Level one is in the left hand of the Spirit of LIFE or what I Paul knows as the spirit of death.

Perhaps you can fully understand now that the going-out is relatively simple. It is the coming-back that is dangerous, in the sense that you may not, so one must be fully Prepared for anything because once out your life is not your own – you no longer make the decisions and your body is behind you and helpless in its tranced condition. You see, once out, all the Way Out, you are, for all intents and purposes spirit and no longer human during that time period, of which you have absolutely no control over.

Perhaps you can also understand why fear, doubt, anxiety, etc. have no place whatsoever in such phenomena as OBE and Transcendence, and why the Full Measure of Faith is so very important. I'm sure that no one who has studied the Message of I Paul can honestly say now that they were not warned and that these points were not stressed enough. After all, from the beginning no one promised any of you an easy road and you should all know well that there is no magic wand, just you and You who constitute all the "Signs" and All the "miracles" "IF." "See"?

The phenomena of an Out of Body Experience and especially a Transcendence, lies in the fact that you are in a very High Level of Awareness - not you, physically, but your mind - the mind is the Key to ALL Things, even to thoughts of a prior life or even a multiplicity of prior lives - You did not live these lives, your mind simply has knowledge of them because the mind functions in a kind of eternal "Now" so that even if a person is placed in a hypnotic trance regression, the mind will function, not in the past or in the future, but always in this eternal "Now." In a Full Trance and in a OBE the eternal Now functions in Horizontal Time and in a Transcendence it becomes "The Eternal Now" which is actually an absence of Time but called Vertical time for purposes of expression and in which Past, Present and Future are one continuous "instant" or "Now." We need to

remember that time is a product of man, not of Spirit, and until man learns to live in “The Now” he will not Understand the Reality of Spirit and the True Meaning of that which is finite, and that which is Eternal as opposed to that which is Infinite in Relationship to the “Now.” And again, we are referring to what is a very simple matter of the minds.

This Understanding can only come about through True Prayer as explained in Communication Thirty-One of the I Paul series, i.e., “the most important purpose of True Prayer is the lifting of oneself to new levels of consciousness where we can be conditioned and changed in mind, body, and heart with the all-sufficient life, substance, and intelligence of Spirit.” It can hardly be stated in any other manner nor can it be made any clearer than it is in the Communication cited. It is this “Conditioned and Changed” status that we seek in our Remeditation Effort for the Purpose of Transcendence.

This, then, is a “going-in” to your closet (inside your “house”) and “shutting the door” (locking-out the physical-material world) and “praying in silence” (Remeditating and Contemplating Spiritually) to your Father (Spirit) who already knows, in advance, what it is you are seeking in secret (i.e., Transcendence out of the Physical-Material Realms, temporarily), and if you are

“Prepared and Following,” and if all the Conditions are right you will acquire that which you seek. This is again the Elimination and the Acquirement Level all neatly packaged together and if “Recognition” is on a “Two-Way” flow, you will be successful in your endeavor. It is here, in this “flow” that all Psychical Phenomena takes place, and it is this “Two-Way flow” that a Transcendence, on a temporary basis, can take place.

This Two-Way flow of “Recognition” is again a simple matter of collective mentation between the lower mind and the higher mind, or a Centering of Full Conscious Attention at the Highest Levels obtainable for the two Consciousnesses to become One, Compounded Consciousness, for the Purpose of Transcendence and the maintaining of that Compounded Conscious Attention throughout the Transcendent period.

So, as we can see, “Effort,” all through the Message of I Paul, is the Tool, the Key, the Difference, between something done and something Done-Well to the very heights of Perfection. The beauty and the power of all things Done-Well lie in the “Results” and the “Recognition” garnered therein.

You see, when you exert the Effort called for in a “given task” the “Results” flow in harmony and in proportion with



the Effort Exerted. When you soar, they soar. When you slow, they slow. When you are indifferent, they are Non-Existent.

When a Task is being done-well there is an accompanying Recognition and when a Task is Well-Done and completed the Recognition soars to Full “Recognition” and Upwards to Total “Recognition”! And, as you adepts can “see,” it is still a very simple matter of the Minds, all this.

Yet, the mind itself, is not a simple matter, but on the contrary, a very abused, complicated, and highly undisciplined (by man-woman) phenomenon.

You see, God doesn't give us gifts that God doesn't want us to use and the Two Personal Gifts God, the Supreme Spirit, LIFE then, has given to us All is Life and mind. For those of you who Understand Communication Nineteen, of this, the I Paul series of Communications, the Truth and the Reality of the preceding paragraph comes as no surprise, and for those who do not understand, do not “see,” it matters not - for the immediate purpose of this Communication - “Enlightenment for the Purpose of achieving the Trance States and a Transcendence for those who are Prepared and Following per the Message of I Paul.” To Transcend into the Light is everybody's dream and we need to be the fulfiller of dreams. After all, it's extremely

rare for anyone living here to see all their dreams come true, but, it is possible for anyone who will exert the Effort and follow the Directions exactly as given, to see the Light, both here and There, while existing here in the Physical State of Life. And, again, I Paul remind you all, that is a simple matter of the minds, both individually and collectively.

The exhortation to Prepare, Follow, Come, is no idle invitation nor one to be taken lightly, nor treated perfunctorily.

The Family of LIFE and LIGHT on this spaceship at least, has a sparsity of “Doers” and a tremendous surplus of “Be”ers. A Famine of “Walkers” and an overabundance of “talkers.” It has a fantastically pressing Need to become “ONE” and a conglomeration of “one’s.” We, most unfortunately, have an over-supply of “Paper-shufflers,” “Procrastinators,” and those with “I” and “me” trouble, who neither Share nor Care faithfully, the ones who are “all take” and “no give” - the In-“self” “ones,” the boasters, the braggarts, the Thankless ones, the “idle dreamers” and the avoiders of what is Good, Right and True, the inactive ones and the pretenders who are always seeking a magic wand, the modern day magi’s who follow the stars and all the ways and means that are not “the Way” nor the means to locate and stay upon the Way to “the Way” - the Message

of I Paul et al.

The reasons for such negative postures and acts can be laid on the door step of pure selfishness and laziness, a lack of genuine love and respect for the Way to “the Way” and visions of grandeur and egotistical self-love and want, all of which prevail in one form or another due to a total lack of mental discipline, wherein one allows the body physical to rule and govern their “Whole Being.”

Everyone I Paul, have ever known, myself included, and everybody I currently know Now, Alters Reality by conforming to physical Wants and Preconceived Ideas, half-truths and untruths and silly, wild, runaway imaginations and the fears and doubts they conjure up. Couple all this with all the “garbage” almost everybody keeps secreted within them, their “best kept secrets” which are silently destroying them and their freedom, day by day, and you have the primary problem of the Human Race here on this Earth squarely before you - “SELF,” the silent ruler of the darkness. We, the Human Race, here on this spaceship, were put here to care for this Earth and to Rule Ourselves Righteously and Justly, but all we have been able to Prove is the Fact that we are most Unruly. The problem? That “Altering of Reality” I spoke about earlier.

Reality altering is an ongoing constant process on this

Earth of ours - the Message calls it “Change.” Some of this altering is Good, some bad, or at least harmful, and it not only happens all around us, but it also happens to us. Some of it we cannot control nor do anything about it, some of it we can do something about, but usually don’t.

Darwinism is one example. Earthquakes, floods, glaciers, and the cutting down of the rain forests, are others. Wars alter Reality as has Science and Religion among many other things. People also Alter Reality and for two extremes we cite Jesus and Hitler.

All such occurrences of “Reality Altering” take place under the Physical Laws of the Universe and by Acts of men and women of this Earth - no such Altering occurs under, by, or of the Psychical Laws of the Universe. Therefore, what many people and most Religions cite as miracles or Acts of God or Heaven, are really acts occurring within the Physical Laws of the Universe. So called “miracles” are not of Spirit nor of the Spiritual Realms - they are not Psychical Law Phenomena but known or unknown (as yet discovered) Physical Law Phenomena. What people mistakenly call miracles here, are far too mundane occurrences or happenings for Spirit and for what exists in the Spiritual Realms themselves.

We may laugh when we read about a cult of people some

three or four thousand strong who firmly and faithfully believe that the Earth is flat. Yet their altering of Reality is no different from those who believe in Satan and Evil spirits. You may also laugh at those who faithfully believe that God wrote every word in the bible or that the bible is the inerrant word of God, but if you do laugh, you are actually laughing at yourself also. For you too, alter reality by adhering to, and believing in, preconceived ideas, half-truths, and untruths, subconsciously (or otherwise). In other words, when it comes to Truth and Reality, your mind is made up in advance, subconsciously or consciously due to your earlier learning and training years and you hold to these beliefs whether they are true and real or not. I Paul asked us to open up our minds and begin afresh, placing all these theories, assumptions, preconceived and imbedded ideas, untruths, half-truths, and so forth on the shelf, temporarily even, in order to listen to what the Message has to say with a totally open and attentive mind. This request of I Paul, to the very best of my knowledge, was never taken seriously by anyone but me and so preconceived ideas and untruths still control much of your thinking, both consciously and subconsciously.

All I Paul, personally did to comply was to agree with myself that I really didn't know much about anything and then I set out to question everything and to Prove all things

before accepting them as Factual and True. I simply kicked “self” out and by this Act I actually did not “know much” – it was “self” that was pretending to be wise and knowledgeable. To do this is not easy nor accomplished in a day or a week or a month. It requires tremendous self-discipline, concentration, responsibility, recognition, obedience and long hours of study and practice. No one promised me an easy road and therefore I did not expect one, nor did I find one in the beginning. My Effort made it easy, gradually. I may still not know much, but what I do know, I know to be True, Real, and Factual. One thing I am sure of is, that the Truth I Paul do know has set me Free, and I know it will keep me Free, as long as I keep and cherish the Truth I am privileged to know. So even if I am not “worldly wise” and intelligent insofar as “the sciences” are concerned, I know much about Spiritual Matters and the Physical and Psychical Laws that do matter for me to complete my task and fulfill my assigned Goal. Along these lines, you can never know too much, because Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love are the making of a Righteous Person. The danger in Temporary Transcendences lies in the problem of knowing too little, Spiritually wise. If you are Prepared, sans “self” then, then these Receptor Senses become your passport into the Light, here and There.

Now speaking of Light, we know that Everything has its Opposite here on Earth and nearly Everything has its Opposite in the Universe also. Here, we Need to Unite the Opposites that are important to our Well-Being. Therefore the Light is no exception. To most people the Light is just that, Light, either Sun Light or artificial Light, in which they Live, work, play and bask. We also know that the opposite of light is dark, as in the differences of day and night. We also go further in our knowledge, knowing that the Light here is Enlightenment and Illumination of the minds and that ignorance is darkness and enslavement.

As Christian Spirituals we also know the difference between the lower and the upper Light and/or Lights. We know the Christ as the LIGHT, the Wisdom and the Power of LIFE, the Energy and the Light of the Universe, Ad Infinitum. Adding these Truths and Realities to all the others concerning the Light in the Message of I Paul, I can only add here, one more point: the Light of the Physical Laws, of Nature, is an energy given to us for our Well-Being in the Physical-Material Sense and the source of the Light, our Sun is an “electric-fire.” ALL other Light is of, by and from “LIFE” and it is given to us as an “Electrified Energy Fire and Power” to Light the Way to “The Way” for those who will know its True Purpose and use it Righteously - it burns those who abuse it and misuse it for selfish purposes.



When you Alter Reality, or attempt to, as explained herein, you are misusing and abusing this Light and you have, and will, continue to “get burned” until you can grasp the Truth that the Message has been given to assist you in the proper use of this Light and lead you to the attainment of your tasks and the fulfillment of your Goal.

By now it should be perfectly clear that anyone who is “Prepared” and “Following,” per the Message of I Paul, can and should Transcend and such ones really have nothing to fear simply because in such a state they are Free and in the Light of Lights, the True Knowing Ones then. But there is one very important point that you all should keep in mind and that point is that your Freedom is always more important than your safety. You see, fear is only a laziness of the “self.” For this reason the Truth is always a curse for cowards. And no one knows this better than the Curse of “Self” – Yourself.

Now in keeping with the theme of this I Paul Communication, “Transcendence – A Simple Matter of Minds” and its title, “Trance States Two – A Dream Unfolds,” let me inform you Adepts preparing to Transcend this:

“The Order of the Ten plus Two plus One” – or – “The Order of the Thirteen” – The Mystic Ambassadors of the



New Worlds and the Family of LIFE and LIGHT, servants, then, of the ALL in ALL.

These Mystics will be Unique, in the sense that they will be “Common Sense” Mystics - strictly Logical, Honest and Responsible - with Good Comprehension for “Enlightenment” and holders All, of “Recognition.”

The question of “Who these mystics will be” has always been vague and elusive. Yet, it is quite simple and also a simple matter of minds. They will be the First to Transcend and they will come together after I Paul has Transcended and fails to reenter the “tranced” Physical Body.

This “Enlightenment,” in particular, can only be obtained and retained by learning what is Now and then leaving it behind and Recognizing and accepting the Constant Flow of the New “Now.” “Enlightenment,” then, is the Ability to “see” things as they are Now and “Illumination” is the Ability to “see” things as they were, and will be, in “the NOW,” instantly and without end.

The Order of the Thirteen will not only Understand and Practice Perfectly the Message of I Paul, the Book of Life, and the Book of the Two Ways, but they will also be known for their Love, Humility and Fasting. The “Love” will be Christ-Like. The “Humility” will be Jesus-Like. The “Fasting” will be Paul-Like, i.e., materialistic fasting -

living within one's Needs and living Naturally, but all the while "Acting Natural" for they are the Partakers of Strong Meat.

The "Common Sense" of the Order of the Thirteen will be such that these Mystics will speak Always, as to children, so that all may grasp their simplicity in dealing with the most Profound of subject.

This Order of True Christian Spiritualist Mystics is the thirteenth such Order to be called under the tenets of the Book of Life and the second under the Message of I Paul and the Book of the Two Ways, hence its designation - "The Order of the Thirteen."

It has been clear for quite some time now that one of our major tasks has been to produce "Ten Good Men and/or Women" or any combination thereof. The question as to what is meant by "Good" and to "who makes the decision" ought to be perfectly clear by now, to one and all. "Effort," on the one hand, and "Result," on the other. "See"? And the latter will also make clear to One and ALL "The Three." It's all really very simple and a simple matter of the minds.

So, insofar as "The Order of the Thirteen" is concerned, our task is to produce Ten Persons who can, and will Unite, and Be One Minded, Spiritually. The other three Persons will be designated by Spirit in the usual manner and they shall

constitute the Leadership of “The Order of the Thirteen,” for administrative purposes – all thirteen will be “Leaders” in keeping with the Ordinance of Freedom, while Three will be The Order’s “Directors.” All will, in all Love, Humility, and Fasting, strive to be Last and the Servant of All.

The Collective Spiritual Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love of The Order of the Thirteen will be an instrument of incalculable Force and Reach. Along with these Collective Receptor Senses they will also possess a very potent Collective Power which is All Reaching, the Collective Force, Power, Reach and Energy of the Creative Thought and Creative Imagination faculties which belong inclusively to man here. Therefore, both Individually and Collectively, they will Understand and USE these most awesome of All the mind’s tools – the Power of Creative Imagination, the “bullet” WE fire with our Creative Thought and ride upon into the Realms of the Unknown as Transcendent Transients. And this my dear brothers and sisters is what dreams are made of and how they are unfolded in the Here and Now.

I Paul, will also add, as an aside, it is a very Perfect Reason for Unity and Peace, Now. The Rewards are tremendous and the Pleasure is Great and it is a very simple matter of the minds – Just get out of your “I,” “me,” “self”

mentalities and Get Into Your True-Self. “SEE”? You may not “feel it” at the moment, but believe “ME,” your silly, inane, insidious “Excuses” are slowly, but surely, killing you. Hopefully you Can “See” this. After all, suicide in any way, shape, or manner is not the Way to “the Way.”

Anyway, returning to The Order of the Thirteen, we can see that this collation of the Receptor Senses and instruments of Creative Thought and Creative Imagination are very valuable and forceful tools when properly applied within a state of Unity and Peace here - “Family” Wise.

Much has been, and still is, being “sent” about these matters, and when some measure of Unity and Peace are established, they should appear in your Personal “Receivings” from Spirit. Ever since Communication Nineteen of I Paul series has been released, a concentrated effort has been on-going to “Reach” every single member of the Family. The success of this Attempt is, of course, contingent upon your Awareness, Alertness, Perception and your Effort to sit to receive. Up to Now, not too many of you have been keeping the Watch. Again, “self” is the problem, even though the solution is still a very simple matter of minds.

Now, although I Paul, am only interested in the current “Order of the Thirteen,” I will digress for a while to give you

some measure of insight into the Orders of the Past. To me it was interesting to know that the Order of The One, later shortened to “The Order of One” was the first to use the phrase “It is so Visible, that it has become Invisible.” A phrase we find in the Message of I Paul with slight variations in the wording from time to time to fit the context.

The Six Attributes of “the Body” for The Order of One were:

1. “Love”
2. “Wisdom”
3. “Strength”
4. “Order”
5. “Elimination”
6. “the Power”

The Ten Principles of Action were:

1. “Forgive”
2. “Think”
3. “Love”
4. “Obey”
5. “Contemplate”
6. “Meditate”
7. “Choose”
8. “Act”
9. “Go (Do)”
10. “Teach and Exhort”

The Six Attributes of “The Mind” were:

1. “Will”
2. “Understanding”
3. “Power”
4. “Imagination”
5. “Faith” (Full Measure)
6. “Zeal”

The original terms referring to The Message were:

- “The Book of Love.”
- “The Family Text.”
- “The Family Reading Message.”

At that time in history there was no Scripture, except “The Family Text,” and its origin was unknown, even then.

The early TCS’ were fiercely dedicated to Spirit, Truth, Love, Freedom, Unity and Peace for the single purpose of Transcending and Traversing the Spiritual Realms. And they fully understood all of this as being a very strict matter of the minds.

The First Symbol of the Order of One, Now The Order of the Thirteen, was an inverted triangle much like the much later Star of David. It is attached to This Communication and it will be the Official Symbol of the Order of the Thirteen and a full explanation of it will be given in an Addendum to CPM

Thirty.

What is important to me is the fact that all of these Orders were of Spirit Origin and all of their Adepts were strict True LIGHT Spirituals. The Slogan of “The Order of The ONE” was “Know, Dare, Prove, Do, Come” which is now collectively our very own “Prepare, Follow, Come.”

The “Know” then is signified by OUR “Prepare.” The “Dare” is well covered in the Message, i.e., “Get out of ‘self,’” slay “self,” “Go where others fear,” “Dare to be different,” “Dare to follow Spirit, not Man.” The “Do” is also very well covered in the Message as is “Prove” All Things, “Become your own witness,” all of which fall under our category of “Follow.” The “Come” I am sure needs no further explanation, especially after this Communication, and the balance of the Message that precedes it.

In some of the later “Orders” the slogan also included the word “Silence” between “Prove” and “Come” since The Orders were at one time in their history Secret ones. This “Silence” has been spoken about, addressed, then, in the Message of I Paul, both pro and con.

One excerpt from “The Book of Love” that I Received from Jesse that I Paul am particularly partial to is “Genius’ are made by their mystical flashes of Insight into the Great Mysteries of the Universe and their “discoveries” are such

that they always enhance the life and well-being of ALL LIFE here on this Fourth Earth and readies its Human Life for the Life to Come in the New Worlds.” All members of The Order were Spirit Guides.

Now the “Know” of The Order’s Slogan (our “Prepare”) has to do with the Eye of the Spirit. “The Family Text” stated that every Neophyte who sets out upon the Way to “The Way” to become an Adept does so, hopefully, because he has mentally seen the Eye and from his divine intuition knows it holds a message for him, an assigned task for him and a goal. He, or she, must have developed within themselves a strong consciousness that there is something worth the seeking, hence arouses the daring spirit within them to leave the old “primrose path of dalliance” and seeks New and Unknown Regions. It not only takes a firm conviction of the truth of that which they would seek, but it also requires far more – Courage, Responsibility, determination, and perseverance. So many believe and long to attain, yet spend year after year bemoaning the fate that has given them a heart to long for a mind with which to aspire, yet has surrounded them with so many seemingly insurmountable obstacles which they call impossibilities, erroneously. So, year after year, the longing grows fainter and the obstacles more substantial, and the True-Self is left naked and in the dark. This is well expressed in the Book of



Love (what we call the Book of Life) where it was first stated that “he who hesitates is lost.”

Therefore, to Dare is the first step in This Cosmic Order, and many took it almost automatically, as if drawn to it by some mysterious force challenging them to do so. Others were invited to join The Order by being asked to “Come sit under the Fig Tree.” To sit under the fig tree meant, esoterically, to be “Righteous” - the Pillar of W-303 - hence the requisites of Love, Humility, and Fasting.

The Order of The ONE had a nineteen-step staircase to the Spirit Realms that were listed in the following order: “Faith - Hope - Love - Truth - Wisdom - Unity - Peace - Humility - Responsibility - Knowledge - Understanding - Intelligence - Self-Discipline - Creative Thought - Creative Imagination - Obedience - Freedom - Recognition - Spirit.”

The “Family Reading Text” which is our “Message of I Paul” did not refer to the Ego as “self” but as the “false self” as opposed to the “True Self,” a term we do use.

After Dare the next step was to “Prove” the claims of the Message and then “Do.” The then Message or Family Reading Text did not promise Results as a Reward for Effort or the Doing - We are the first to Receive such an offer.

Many linger at the “Do” step, for the great temptation

is to dream, rather than to do. But the Do indicated in The Order must be of a very definite character – it must begin with one's very own life, in overcoming all faults and failures.

The Neophyte can never say “I have accomplished” no matter what he has done for The Order or humanity, until, at least, he or she has shown some great accomplishment in overcoming the faults and failures in their own life. No one can be an Adept in The Order who holds to “likes and dislikes” and dallies in matters that do not matter. If a list existed of things that do not matter, it would be fantastically long. There is no list but suffice it to say that anything that does not contribute to Love, to Humility, to Fasting, to Understanding Things Spiritual and to the Well-Being of All in ALL, then they would be on the list of things to do not matter. Frivolous chatter, gossip, backbiting and criticism were out and so was the Neophyte caught doing so. And any Adept caught in such Acts except for justifiable Constructive Criticism of a brother or sister was not only barred from The Order but from the Family proper. Excuses were never tolerated – you either did or you did not – Period. Adepts in The Order were never prone to “Mistakes” – that's why they were “Adepts.”

The hardest lesson of all was to Keep Silent. Many of us

know firsthand the difficulty and the agony of this keeping silent for long hours at a time. But to Keep Silent involves much more than just keeping your mouth closed. Hence the esoteric meaning of Silence and Keep Silent is not merely to refrain from talking although it does mean, among other things, to refrain from “frivolous chatter.” These Adepts were Faithful and Respectful toward the Gifts of God and they did not “waste them” on matters that did not matter.

The chief meaning of Keep Silent, then, was and is, that one should keep in touch with the Silence, in the consciousness of that deep “mysterious Silence” which makes all our thoughts, words, acts, and deeds potent.

“Keeping the Watch,” “Sitting to Receive,” “Giving up your right to be Right,” “Meditation,” “True Prayer,” “Trance States,” “Cogitation,” “Contemplation,” “Creative Thought,” “Creative Imagination,” and “Memory” are all examples, esoterically, of Keeping Silent and Silence.

For the memory it has a special meaning (as it does for others). It means that an “Adept” is not merely to dream about past accomplishments, but are to realize intensely what they have accomplished and from the past seek to fully understand the unseen forces which work only in the Silence, and, without which, we could never have

accomplished anything, nor seen a single dream unfold. Hence none of this precious force must be wasted by idle-dreaming or chatter.

All Adepts are called to Obey The Mandate of the Master who said “Let your communication be a simple Yea or Nay - for whatever is more than these cometh of evil.” This means not to waste words trying to impress others that we “know” something, or by boasting about our accomplishments or bragging about things we think we have accomplished or done well. If what you want to say is true, there is no need of saying them, for they are already Known! You see, if one word is powerful enough to express our meaning, do not use more. We must make all our conversations, then, as simple and to the point as Yea or Nay. Above All, Always Listen in the Eternal Silence for the inspiration that will direct our Conversation, so that no word we do utter, “cometh of evil.” Vain chattering, Profane language, gossip and so forth always disturbs the Great Silence so that we cannot be guided by it - Be still and know, for you shall know precisely when you NEED to know - “IF.” Then, like Jesus, you too can say “the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself, but the Father that speaketh through me.” Never try to justify or defend or explain by much argument. Speak the Truth to the best of your ability, then relax in the assurance that you have done your best, kept the watch, then, and that

time and events will justify you. This is the inner meaning of Keeping Silent or dwelling in the Silence. “SEE”? It really is a very simple matter of The Minds. And this matter involves listening.

A “good listener” within this context then, is usually a holder of divine consciousness and, therefore, very Attentive to Divine Consciousness.

The “Family Reading Text” had much to say about the “false-self” so herein I will only give you one small excerpt that essentially says: the “false-self” cannot exist in the Light outside of the Physical-Material Realms - it can only be where the Physical Body can be.”

Now I Paul, would like to say some things about something that really interests me, and hopefully will interest all of you and motivate you to become a member Adept of The Order of the Thirteen.

The Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL will have within it an Order which will be known as “The Order of Thirteen.”

This Order will be made up of True Christian Spiritualists and they will be known and respected as Transcendent Christian Spirituals - Visitors, then, to the Houses of the First Five Pillars as holders of the Four

Absolutes; Honesty, Purity, Unselfishness, and Love.

None of these qualities necessary for a seat within The Order of Thirteen is beyond the reach of a single Active member of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL.

The call is out in quest of all earnest seekers of the spiritual life whose sincere desire is to progress steadily in Spiritual Growth and the Unfoldment of Dreams and who honestly wish to come into closer contact with the Spirit of the Message of I Paul, the Teacher of Wisdom and Spirit Guide down through the Ages of humanity on this Earth.

Therefore, in accordance with The Spirit Plan and Design of the Universe, I Paul, am authorized and privileged as the Spirit Guide of This Family to inform you that a point in Involution-Evolution has been reached wherein a Renewed Order Needs be established on the Earth Plane of W-303. This Order is not an organization in the general acceptance of the term, nor is it connected to any organization, religion, cult, sect, body politic and so forth now in existence on this Physical-Material Plane. This Order of Thirteen is of Spirit Creation and will be Spirit Guided in and on Every Step of Its Way. Its primary function will be to Create Spirit Guides, and its primary reason is to fulfill the Universal Plan of the Supreme Spirit for Humanity on this Earth - Truth, Love, Unity, and Peace. The Pathways

to the New Worlds.

Obviously, we are now embarking on the way of fulfilling one of our Assigned Tasks: The establishing of the Ten plus Two plus One.

It should be perfectly clear Now, that an assigned Task is a Sacred Task and Sacred Trust, and that, obviously, is why the Message always comes first to me on this Spaceship W-303 over all other Things, Places, and Persons. It is, then, the One Matter that matters above All Other Matters that Do Matter. Please “See.”

From this point forward I will be referring to the Family “Order of Thirteen” simply as “The 13” denoting those then who “Know” through “Seeing” and “Hearing” that The Way Out is The Way In and The Way In is The Way Out.

To be a member of “The 13” is to be a follower In and a Partner of the Mind of Christ.

Although I Paul, am fully qualified to be a member of “The 13,” I will not be, but I will be its channel for its Spirit Guide and It will require me to be “The 13’s” human spirit guide until I leave. By that time “The 13” will be spirit guides and channels on their own, yet under the Direction of three of “The 13” or the Two plus One, for Administrative Purposes.

Numerically, “The 13,” simply signifies the thirteenth such Order since the Order of One was Created. Its Arcanum signifies “Truth” and everything that that word can imply and mean.

I would like to make it clear that the Order of Thirteen will consist wholly of Active Members only, from among Family member of the Branches on Waquoit-Falmouth and Virginia Beach. Furthermore, all such members will continue to carry “Everything” with them, Here. So, regardless of who the Ten plus Two plus One may prove to be, there will be no disorder within or to the flow of Action and Effort of the Family proper. It could, of course, place a call for extra Effort and Action on behalf of some willing to accept it for fulfilling the Absolutes of “The 13.”

When we referred to the First Order on this Earth as a Cosmic Order we did not intend nor mean “Cosmic” in any Occult way whatsoever. Cosmic Order herein means it was composed of what we know as Cosmos Man or Planetary Man. Therefore these Orders of LIGHT Spirituals have always existed wherever mankind has existed and always will.

Today this Order of Transcendent Christian Spiritualists is intended as a unifying spiritual movement, inspired by an unselfish love of humanity, and a desire to



help mankind realize and recognize Reality, and make practical use of its spiritual guidance in their daily life in Preparation for the New Worlds.

This is a task “we” have been steadily preparing for since February the Third, Nineteen Hundred and Seventy-Seven.

The Order of Thirteen is Christian in the sense that it Follows the Universal Christ, the LIGHT, then, for access and participation in the ALL in ALL of God, LIFE, Then. Hence, we are not Scriptural Christians nor sectarian Christians. We are Christian Spiritual Truth seekers in the sense that, God is Spirit and we worship God in Spirit and Truth. Ideally, we follow no man - we follow Spirit. Factually, we follow no Scripture - we follow the Message of I Paul, the Book of Life (Love), the Book of the Two Ways. Practically, all Christian Spirituals strive to Prepare themselves in order to faithfully follow the spiritual life on the Way to “The Way.” The Order of Thirteen is mystic in the sense that it teaches the “How” of the mystery in making Conscious Contact with the LIGHT Principle within and therefore become holders of the Mind of Christ.

Holding to the Great Discovery of the Master, we strive to Realize the Reality of our Minds and reach our individual potentials of Divine Consciousness. This Renewed Order,

then, is to be the link to join the best efforts of all the ways into one great universal movement, “The Way,” which shall spread Brotherhood, Sisterhood, Fellowship, Friendship and Familyship throughout this Earth by and through Spiritual Understanding and Righteous Action founded on the Seven Pillars of the Kingdom of God.

**Faith - Hope - Love - Truth - Wisdom - Unity -  
Peace**

The Message, this Family, this Order, does not seek to acquire a following for any human leader or personality. We are Servants First, Last and Foremost, to mankind and to “the Spirit,” God’s Kingdom and Realms.

Until we learn to be Last, to be Humble, Lovers and Fasters then we shall never be able nor capable of being First on the Way to “The Way” - the ALL in ALL.

With only a few exceptions, every single one of us in this Family knows full-well what they must do and should be Doing to assist in bringing all of this into existence and bearing fruit - the fruits of our “Collective Efforts.”

Our immediate Family, i.e., Waquoit-Falmouth - Virginia Beach, is but one circle within the Vast Circle of the Universal Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL. We know that the center of the Family on this Earth is where the

Director of the 303's on this earth, is. It has always been that way and will always continue that way until The Four Earths enter into the New Worlds Phase. Hence The Order of Thirteen, Here, will be but a circle within our immediate Family Circle and therefore subject to all the tenets of Prepare, Follow, Come, of the Message of I Paul.

Perhaps the question uppermost in everyone's mind right now is who are "The 13" going to be? At the moment I Paul does not know. I do know that we are responsible, at the moment, for coming-up with Ten People, Ten Good Men and/or Woman, as I "see" it. The other three members, as I "see" it, are going to be named for us through the usual manner - the Channel for the Message.

To be Fair, and purely Inclusive, anyone desiring to join "The 13" should write a letter to me stating this desire and your reasons for becoming one of "The 13." Such letters should be in my hands (or my successor's hands if necessary) thirty-one days from the date this Communication is released in Waquoit-Falmouth. We respectfully ask "DL" the Director at Waquoit-Falmouth to inform my Brother and Partner, "T," Director of the 303's, of this exact date.

Once the letters are received and the dead-line reached I Paul should know who the Ten will be and hopefully the

three as well, which will make up our initial “13.” This procedure falls clearly into the way such matters have been handled in the past, and clearly omits any favoritism being involved. Even the Three we are not choosing have to voluntarily accept or reject, such choosing. So, my advice to everyone, is to write if you wish a seat within “The 13” and not wait to see who Spirit nominates to complete “The 13.”

Now it must be Understood that Everyone who takes a seat within The Order of Thirteen, does so as a Neophyte and not as an “instant Adept.” It is from this group of Neophytes that the Ten of “The 13” of our responsibility, who prove their Adeptness by Transcending, become Adepts. I Paul believes the three chosen strictly by Spirit will be those fully capable of Transcending, and soon, thereby setting off the Chain Reaction Necessary for the rest to Follow. This “Chain Reaction,” the Sharing and Caring of Experiences has been fully covered in the Message of I Paul and simply needs to be put into Action to produce the desired Results.

One Thing I Need to point out herein and something of great importance is this:

No one should apply to join “The 13” who are not now willing to do so for the rest of their Natural Life. You see, if you are given a seat in “The 13” it is forever. So be sure you know what you are doing before you DO IT. “Look” and

“See.”

This is not only the continuing Year of Love but also the Year of Honesty. I do not believe I need to remind you of what the Truth Does. Of course, if you are truly on The Way to “The Way,” then what this immediate paragraph contains is no barrier to you. “See”?

What all applicants should be looking for in This Order of Thirteen is their True Spiritual Home and the opportunity to work hand in hand with it.

The Order seeks to help all to fully Understand the fundamental Laws of Life and LIFE. It welcomes your individuality and guarantees your Freedom within these fundamental Laws of Life and expects your Collectivity in regards to the Psychical Laws of the Universe and your adherence to Spiritual Freedom above all else - without which the New Worlds could not be realized and the ALL in ALL would not materialize. The one thing that This Order will demand from you, is that you do everything good, right, and true, “Better”! If you cannot make that the very foundation of your Effort, please do not apply. We are, after all, in search of Ten Good Men and/or Women or any combination thereof.

You will have thirty or thirty-one days to decide, so decide carefully and wisely whether or not This Order is for

you.

What This Order intends to do first, is to take all of the fine points of the Message of I Paul involving All of the Prepare, the Follow and the Come, categories, and put them into Honest Practice on an on-going, never-ending cycle. Therefore each “seat” will recognize and witness to the Truth, wherever and whenever, it surfaces.

Right now This Order may seem a drudgery but I Paul assure you that this is not so. It’s true, that it is going to require some great effort but I assure you that it is going to be vastly illuminating, enlightening, stimulating and fun. Things Good, Right and True were meant to be fun and most enjoyable and This Order is going to generate a great amount of it and a great amount of happy surprises. Doing is always better than being and we are going to be doing a lot of rewarding and life fulfilling things as you learn to become the Unfolders of Dreams, the things that Happiness is made up of. After all, happiness to most people in this day and age is nothing but a dream, and one they struggle to unfold but cannot. The place for dreamers is in the Family of LIFE and LIGHT and the Place for Real Dreamers is a Seat within The Order of Thirteen. Come and “see” why.

The problem with most dreamers today is the fact that they have “eye and ear” trouble. These are the ones who

refuse to “see and hear” the Truth, the fearsome ones, then, but there are worse – those who claim to “see and hear” the Truth but fail to abide it and go on idly dreaming their life away. We have entertained some of both of these but the Message was too much for them – they simply couldn’t dream their way through it so they labeled it “pie-in-the-sky.” I’ve often wondered what they labeled their dreams as. Yet there is a bright side to all of this – only the self-made stupid and vulgar ones go about seeking “laurels” not realizing that such contain a potent poison.

The point of all this is that “The 13” only needs Real Dreamers, the kind that can be unfolded and who understand that the only way to improve one’s way of life is through the lower mind. For that is the only way to “see and hear” the Truth, the very symbol of “The 13.” Furthermore, in order to keep the Truth, once found, it must be constantly given away, and this is exactly what “The 13” Adepts will do, Perpetually, both in the body and out of the body. Perhaps, Now, you have a better grasp of The Order’s purpose down through the Ages, and their participation in the Universal Plan of LIFE and the ALL in ALL of the LIGHT.

So, one must be daring to seriously involve themselves with The Order of Thirteen. Yet the call is out to one and All in the search for our Ten and hopefully many will answer

The Call so that we may quickly fulfill part of it.

Now in addition to the several tasks of The Order given above there are other special tasks to be undertaken:

1. The completion of one's individuality by union with the True-Self.
2. The establishing of a higher standard of Purity suitable for All the planes of existence.
3. Training the individual senses to recognize the vibrations and activity of spirit.
4. Understanding the Esoteric meanings of the Message of I Paul. This esoteric interpretation will include The Book of Life and the Book of the Two Ways.

There are others, but I consider these to be the most important, at the moment.

One of the great objects of This Order is to so train its members that, through their own intuitions and Conscience, they may learn to Recognize and Respond to the influence of the Master teacher upon all the Planes, High and Low, and not be influenced by personality or "self" at any given moment.

So, there you have all I Paul intends to reveal at this time about the Ten plus Two plus One, i.e., The Order of



Thirteen. I will await your responses with great expectation.

Now since your water or call signals are to be attached to this Communication, I feel it appropriate to give you some background into the Numbers, their symbolic significance and so forth.

Mathematics is one of the oldest sciences known and it is probably the only true Exact science of all the recognized exact sciences. All these other so-called exact sciences are based on theories, assumptions, deductions, and “working hypotheses” which are more or less useful until something better comes along and disproves the current beliefs. It was only three centuries ago that the then “exact science” held to the so-called truth that the Earth was flat and that it was the center of the Universe. They burned many at the stake for speaking and thinking otherwise as did Giordano Bruno.

Words are symbols of ideas, while numbers are symbols of Realities, of the Natural Physical Laws then. Many attempts have been made to claim that they are also Divine Symbols of Realities of the Eternal Psychical Laws. No one can prove this beyond a shadow of a doubt any more than they can Prove Conclusively that God exists except to themselves. This can be done as a matter of Faith or by becoming your own Witness, which our water signals assist us in becoming - “Our own witness” via the “Prove All

Things” demand of the Message of I Paul.

As the Message has told us, we live in a World of symbols, engulfed in them actually, they are everywhere you look. So we will look at numbers as symbols and their convenience and uses in our Tasks. We need also caution against their misuse.

The Ancient Spiritual Mystics knew the danger in the misuse, perversion, debasement or reversal of any sacred symbol, hence would have kept mankind from all the degradation and ills that have resulted from the fraudulent manipulation of these symbols by man to require personal advance or power at the expense of his fellow man, for example, the acquiring of wealth at the expense of the Well-Being of the community and mankind in general. This is what the Master meant when he said “You cannot serve both God and mammon,” (or God and an illusionary satan). And speaking of Satan, in Revelation of the bible it is referred to as 666. It isn't Satan it actually refers to but to a real devil of a man Caesar Nero. Yet most ignorant Religionists believe it does refer to Satan and the leaders of the Christian Religionists allow this ignorance to continue for their own benefit and this is a very good example of how symbolic numbers can be misused to pervert the minds of millions. So-called gambling systems using numbers are

also another abuse and misuse but most gamblers end up losing or ruined so Justice prevails. I Paul has cautioned us not to abuse or misuse things in the Message for our own gain and I'm sure you all remember the admonition, "We shall play no games," meaning just that.

Now, since all things manifest according to the Psychical Laws and their Vibrations, everything can be made to respond to these Laws. These Vibrations are everywhere and those who can harmonize with them can master much. Great orators, great singers, great story tellers, great music and so on, are all good examples of this. ESP, Clairvoyance, telepathy, Automatic Writing and so forth are all products of these Vibrations and a person's ability to harmonize with them. Almost anyone can learn to get into tune with these vibrations and much of the Message's teaching and exercises were aimed at this Harmonizing. The secret after learning this harmonizing is the ability to control it and call upon it when needed for the Good, the Right, and the True. It should come as no surprise to anyone that this has been revealed in the Message of I Paul, so it is not really a secret at all - it has to do with Effort. It has always been a belief of man that numbers in the Right order or collation have vibrations of their own hence Number has been looked upon down through the Ages as having some sacred significance.

Whether there is anything to this or not, is not of our concern herein. We are going to be looking at Number for what they Symbolically signify, sacred or otherwise. One thing we do know is the truth that every religion, sect, cult, philosophy and so forth have within their sacred writings a great deal of Numerology. Religious Christianity for instance has a fondness for the numbers 1 - 3 - 7 - 12 - 40 - 70 and, of course, others, but these are the most used. The Great Temple, the Pyramid of Khufu is a veritable gold mine of numbers, geometry and so forth. In fact, it would be almost impossible to find anything from Ancient Ages that was not connected in some way or manner with Number and down through the Ages these Number and combination of numbers have always held a Psychological power over a great segment of Humanity.

The oldest known Symbol for God is the O or the 1. The ONE, The circle as the symbol of God is expressed in this way: God is a circle, the center of which is everywhere and the circumference NOWHERE.

Number wise, depending on which cult, sect, or religion you study, God is either 1-3-5-7-9 or zero, or a combination of some, even. Those who use 9 follow one esoteric formula and those who use ONE or 1, another. A zero can mean Ten in some systems, a + (plus) in others, a -

(minus) in others, an X (times) in others, and all of these when Numbers are used in their true Symbolic and Geometric meanings. Division,  $\div$  is common to all.

In the Message of I Paul we find some use of Number but little of their meaning or significance for us with a few exceptions, such as, water signals, LIFE as ONE, “The 13,” and so forth. We do know there are certain Numbers of Spheres, Earths, Planes, Levels, Seas, and so on, but we do not know why, nor if the Numbers are significant or not, or what they may hold Symbolically.

The Symbol of The Order of One, The Inverted, Interlaced Triangles symbolize many things and there is one Thing about it that is “so visible that it is invisible” and that is the O, the Circle that surrounds them. In fact, it is “The Circle” that surrounds Everything, individually and Collectively, except ITSELF, which is un-surroundable and Invisible.

So, the O is the 1st Symbol for us to consider as it is the ONE (1) that All others manifest and proceed. It is a symbol of Unmanifested Deity in the bible it is the darkness of Chaos from which the Cosmos emerges. It is the Night of Brahma in which all is latent a boundless darkness from which appears the first point of Light. It may seem paradoxical to equate LIFE with Darkness in this way but it is here that the

Neophyte needs to adjust his way of thinking to the Mystical and Esoteric. A fundamental truth of logic is that “extremes meet,” also that vibrations of Life and Light may be so intense that they cannot be perceived by man’s physical senses here – the solar spectrum above violet – hence are apparently darkness and non-existence. Such a boundless circle of pulsating, vibrant yet undifferentiated Life-Force proceeding from the Center of ALL Life Forms the “Waters of the Great Deep,” deep in that they are unfathomable and totally incomprehensible to undeveloped minds. Only when the Spirit of LIFE moves upon these waters and the LIGHT descends in Incarnation are the waves of this Great Deep stilled, i.e., the vibrations are slowed down so that that which we understand as Life begins to manifest.

The Circle, having neither beginning nor end, represents Boundless Space and Limitless Vertical Time in Eternity. It marks off the space where Creation takes place or the Circle formed by the outward and downward thrust of the Creative Force.

Our Earth is but one, or 1, small circle or digit within this Boundless, Timeless Space. The Circle is also called naught or no-thing because it is Silent, or The Silence of NO-Thing. (The “Keep Silent” or “Silence” of The Order of One was based on this and its waves of pulsating vibrations.)

All of these Creative Force Vibrations are the Forces of Energy and the “Pulsating” Vibrations are those of which we cite as Wisdom and available to us through our own Creative Thought power which is determined by the Levels of Consciousness we are individually capable of attaining to.

So, once again, we “see” that all of this is but a simple matter of mind. A Prepared mind is a Following mind and one which may Come and Go as it pleases to all places within the scope of the Physical Laws and to most places within the never-ending range of the Psychical Laws. And you carry everything with you that is worthy of carrying.

This Message of I Paul, has now covered all you Need to Know about the Circle, O, The ONE, 1, then, but now we Need to say some things about the Number 1, the number one, then.

Like the Circle, the Number 1 also Symbolizes LIFE, the Supreme Spirit, “The Spirit,” and God, and so forth.

The Book of Love and the Book of The Two Ways as held by The Order of One began on Page O, not page one, for obvious reasons. So, the Number Table for that Order was: O 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 to Infinity.

In their letters it was not unusual to find them writing like this: “O is Spirit and therefore. . .,” or like this: “1 is

Spirit and therefore. . .” Later they even used 9 in place of O or 1. In comparison a Christian religionist would write “3 is Spirit and therefore. . .” I’m sure you can understand this. Yes?

In the beginning there was a great Abyss (Chaos), neither day or night existed as we know them. This Abyss or a great yawning gulf simply was - no beginning and no-end. ALL Father, the Uncreated, The Unseen dwelt in the Great Abyss (Space) and Willed and what was Willed came into Being. Ireneus in writing of the number symbolism of the Marcosians says: “Before all Universes there is a source (or beginning) before the primal source, prior even to that state which is inconceivable, ineffable, unnameable, which I number as Naughtness.” (From “Fragments of a Faith Forgotten.”)

It may be easier to form a conception of the beginning of a mighty Universe if we apply the same laws and processes to the individual, for in our small way we are centers which send out invisible radiations of life-force in a circle, the size of the circle being limited by the forcefulness of the life within the center. Until its forces are made concrete and directed toward definite ends this circle is an invisible and unknown O of darkness, a chaos, yet vibrant with potentialities and potencies - our vague and unformed



desires, longings, Needs and ideals. The circle is our own sea corresponding to the Great Deep. On it we are rocking in our little boat locked into our personality and our “self.” The Light within is asleep and spiritual darkness is upon the face of the waters. We sail over the sea of life wholly engrossed on “self” and “wants” oblivious to our “True-Self” until a tempestuous and inharmonious condition arises and threatens to overwhelm us. When we have exhausted all our own ways and excuses, we cry out in desperation, “Lord save us - we perish” - we appeal to the LIGHT within - “Master, carest thou not that we Perish”? Then the LIGHT, the same sent forth from the Beginning, begins to quell the tempest and allows things to harmonize between you and You, “IF,” you utilize the Mind of Christ, and you should if you have learned your lesson once and for all. You see, when the spirit is aroused it is then capable, from then on, to calm the storms on our sea of Life by simply saying, “Peace, Be still.” “See”?

The Circle also represented the Garden of Eden which contained everything that the yet created First Man would ever Need. This First Man then is the Number 1 yet it is also the First Woman who is also Number 1 and not 2 simply because they were as “The ONE,” divine, then, but not “The ONE” or the “O.”

Their combination of 1 and 1 was obviously for the purpose of making 3 out of two (2) or the transfer of some Creative Force including Creative Thought and Creative Imagination. “See”?

So, for those of us who can “see,” the Table of Number begins with a circle or O or zero followed by 1 and so on to Infinity. This O or zero is not the same as the Circle or O which Symbolizes The Uncreated Creator.

But wait! There is much more to consider when we speak of 1 or ONE or one (1). In the Number One, often called the Monad, are other Nine Numbers hidden. 1 is indivisible, it is also incapable of multiplication, divide 1 by itself and it still remains one, thus it is a fitting representative for the Supreme Spirit, the Great Unchangeable. (You have been told all of this before in the Message of I Paul, only in a different context - remember?) Number 1 is also the Symbol of Unity, Indivisibility, Individuality. It is that which is born of Spirit and therefore Divine of divine.

Now, since 1 stands by itself and is indivisible, it is considered no number at all! But represents Perfection, Harmony, Order, Good and God. It is the only number that does not have 1 aspect above or pertaining to the Kingdom and 1 lower pertaining to the Earths (heavens). It also symbolizes the descent of the LIGHT when, at the beginning

of the cycle of this manifestation of our system, the first moment of Creation, LIFE said (Willed), “Let there be LIGHT,” and the LIGHT came forth and sent forth the Light to manifest in matter, for the LIGHT was Created as the Power and the Wisdom of LIFE, for other Life to Come, by, through, and for the LIGHT.

So with the advent of the LIGHT The O now becomes ☉ which symbolizes LIFE and LIGHT. To the Egyptians this ☉ Symbolized God in the Universe, God and Sun, Aten, Day, Midday, Noon, Ra, Horus.

Number 1 represents the principle of Unity which underlies all Numbers. By Multiplication it Creates all others, but multiplied by itself to infinity it always retains its Unity.

Since it is 1st Manifestation of the Unmanifested, 1 represents the Unity of all forms of Life in the 1 LIFE, or the brother and sisterhood of man-woman and Nature.

All Life comes from the ONE LIFE and normally should evolve back to the ONE LIFE in Perfect Purity and Harmony through the LIGHT and The ALL in ALL. Since all spirits are but differing expressions of the ONE LIFE, each must bring back into the ONE LIFE a special experience. Unity does not mean an everlasting recurrence of one experience for all,

but all experiences in the ONE. Just as each different part of the body has its own function, the experience of which is subject to and registered in the brain (the sum total of all the organs, tissues, blood, etc. necessary to complete a physical body), so are all lower and higher mind experiences subject to and Registered in the ONE MIND - The True Unity - which is Unity but not uniformity.

The Number 2 is the Symbol of Duality. It represents the Opposites, i.e., spirit-man, positive-negative - Upper and Lower Realms - the Lower mind - Higher mind, and so forth. The Unity of the 1 is broken up into its positive and negative aspects, the Higher being Spirit and the Lower matter.

Number 2 is also known as the Number of Contrasts and the "pairs of opposites" such as "good and evil," "Right and wrong," "true and untrue," and so forth. The Number 2 is also Understanding - one needs to know both sides of something in order to decide which is Real and which is illusionary. 2 is the Number of matter and all that is double. It also represents the Vertical Line that Spirit descends along and the Horizontal Line of matter.

The Number 3 is expressed as a Triangle, an Equilateral Triangle to be exact, representing Spirit and man United by mind. Inverted it Represents Spirit, Involution, Evolution.

When a Pair are inverted and interlaced, they form a compass for the Four Earths (as they now stand and the Secret of where they will relocate and gather). The Number 3 has down through many ages represented one trinity or another. Pagan and religious, and all of them concocted by its leaders or priests to settle internal conflicts of faith.

To those Cults that do not accept 1 as a Number, then the three (3) becomes the First odd Number and some contribute a great range of meaning to it - all the way from a trinity to evil and to sex even.

Obviously, to the Order of ONE it had a very special meaning for them in view of their Symbol, the Inverted, Interlaced Equilateral Triangles - now the Symbol of "The 13" also.

The only evil on this Earth comes from the minds of man-woman that are spiritually undeveloped and there is no single Number especially designated for such except in the Occult, Black magic societies, religions and the such. 3 also stands for the Trilogy of man-woman, Body, Mind, Spirit. 3 is also the Number of Time, Past, Present and Future. 3 is also the Number of Divine Love - God's Love for Spirit, man and woman.

Esoterically the Perfect word is Triad because it supposes an intelligent principle, a speaking principle, and

a principle spoken.

Mystically it stands for Fire, Water and Air. The Kingdom was made from Fire, the Earths from Water, and the Air from the Spirit acts as a reconciler between the Fire and the Water.

As for the 3 and sex let us explain it this way: 1, in 1 sense, is compared to man and to the heat of the Sun, its active principle - Number 2 to woman and the light of the Sun, its passive principle - while, Number 3 would stand for the Sun or that magnetism which exists between positive and negative, heat and light, man and woman, that the two may manifest as one. "See"?

Esoteric mathematics is based mainly on Addition and Reduction. Thus using a scale of 1 to 10 for example, and the Number 4 as our subject, by adding  $1+2+3+4 = 10$ . So, 4 has the potency of 10. Following this 7 also equals 10 and has the same potency as 4,  $1+2+3+4+5+6+7 = 28 = 10$ . "See"? Other forms of math are also used esoterically but only when certain numbers are present, such forms as division, multiplication and higher math. These forms will be fully explained to The Order of Thirteen for teaching and Understanding purposes.

4 is the Number of the Physical Planes, the 4th Pillar is Truth and the 4th Law is Freedom and the 4th Earth is

Righteous. 4 Symbolizes the Cross, represents the 4 Earths, the 4 Winds, the 4 Suns, the 4 primary points of the Compass.

It is a great error to believe that the Cross was first brought into notice during the Christian era. The Cross is older than the History of man on this Earth, W-303. The Cross of Jesus was not identified with the crucifixion of Jesus until about 6 centuries later for no figure appears upon the Cross until the one given to Queen Theodolinde of Lombardy by Pope Gregory and no image of the Crucified appears in the Rome Catacombs until the Eighth Century.

The Cross, in one form or another, is Universally used to symbolize the out-pouring of the divine. Creative Life-essence - the Cosmic Christs or the LIGHT, that it may manifest in the worlds of Creation as the Creative Christ force or that Power and Wisdom that is the Urge back of, and the Cause of all Involution-Evolution, whether or not the blood (the Life force poured out) of a man (or woman) crucified is the picture used for symbolic purposes. The Cross does not symbolize or represent a man (or woman) but a Spirit, The Cosmic LIGHT and the First Symbol of The LIGHT was the Cross within a Circle which symbolized LIFE =  $\oplus$ . This is still the Symbol in use by E-303.

The Egyptian Cross (T) or tau had this same

significance, in fact it was worn, not as a symbol of death or sacrifice but as a protective talisman which focused a Power that would assist the wearer in attaining to his or her God-Like Potentials. It is not by accident that the Egyptian Astronomical Cross is identical to the Symbol of E-303.

This so-called “Accident” of Symbols, alike in Egypt and also found in some ruins in Mexico, is just another example of things that scream-out to tell us something, are so Visible that they have become Invisible to the undeveloped minds of men and women here. The “building of” and the “reason for” the Great Temple of Khufu is another prime example of the visible-invisible syndrome. When man-woman, once again, learn to think constantly Positive, then, and only then, will they be able to “see” all things as they truly ARE. Now they settle for seeing through a glass darkly and are satisfied with matters that simply do not matter and those that will not give up matters that do not matter will never qualify as an Adept in The Order of Thirteen.

Which is, by The Way, in Reduction, Four (4), and Symbolizes the 4th Dimension.

Another interesting fact about the Egyptian “Tau” was that they laid it upon the chest of a Neophyte in their mystical order just before they entered into a Trance state



and their bodies were placed in a crypt or tomb for three days and three nights. This was referred to as the mystical sleep that transformed a Neophyte into an Adept. Perhaps you can “see” all the implications in this.

There are 4 qualities that the whole man or woman must obtain and retain without which True Wisdom cannot be attained, namely “an Intelligence illuminated by study (To Know) an Intrepidity which nothing can check (To Dare), a Curiosity without bounds (To Prove), a tenacity that nothing can break (To Do).” These give such holders and practitioners of these 4 Qualities the Ability of Discretion to Keep Silent and Come!

Now we all know that a Square has 4 sides but not too many know how the silly idea that the Earth - W-303 was flat and Square. The Ancient Mystics and Philosophers have been much derided for teaching that this Earth was Square. But in teaching of “The Four Corners of the Earth” the original teaching was not that the Earth was square, literally, although later on this became the belief of the uneducated masses due to the Ignorance of the religious leaders. The Ancients used this symbolic expression to indicate the balancing and squaring of earth conditions which were brought about by the keepers of the 4 Winds. For only as “this Earth is squared,” i.e., Earthly Conditions are

Squared,” can this earth become the Cube or “the Footstool of LIFE.”

The expression of the Square in matter is the Cube,  $\square = \text{cube}$ , and the Cube is the Key to the ALL in ALL.

According to the Book of the Two Ways, the Four Winds were of the East, the North, the South and the West. The Wind like the breath of the physical body, is a manifestation of the Spirit, which comes from we know not whence and goeth we know not wither.

In the bible we can read in many places that if anything is taken unjustly it must be repaid 4-fold. This is not meant to be taken literally, for it simply symbolizes that the matter must be squared so that the 4 Levels of Karma are square on the earth. These Levels are physical, psychical, mental and spiritual.

The Square, then, with its 4 sides is known as the Foundation Stone of Truth on the 4 Earths corresponding to the 4 Winds, the East, the North, the South, and the West. All who choose to stand upon this Foundation Stone begin to develop cooperative efforts for the best good of All-Nature, mankinds, Spirit - All the while giving full scope to one's Whole individuality within the Unity of the Whole of the ALL in ALL. Thus begins the journey of the Neophyte to

attain to the status of Adept. As such co-operation requires greater individual Responsibility and still greater Unselfishness on the part of the individual, in this stage Unselfishness needs reach its highest expression - "Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends." In this Preparatory stage one's developing Consciousness and Spiritual unfoldment shows them that this world is but an imperfect materialization of that which is immaterial, hence one's ideal of the Divine is an all-pervading and life-giving Spirit whose Urge to manifest the Ideal is the cause of all Manifestation and Involution and Evolution, that the Manifestation and the Ideal may become 1 or complete its cycle by returning to the Source at The "Happening" of The ALL in ALL.

Therefore, let Number 4 remind you Always and in All Ways to be Honest, Responsible, Thoughtful, Concerned, Faithful and Lovingly "square" with your brothers and sisters, your neighbors, then, with yourself and your loved ones, with the Message of I Paul and with LIFE and LIGHT. Determined that you will give All in All a square deal, that you will face and square up to all faults, mistakes and failings, thus laying your Foundation Stone that your Future Life in the Now is founded on Love and Truth and be stable and productive - that even though you find this world a wilderness and religious teachings but a stone, and the voice

of “self” in the ears of others, you and You bring firmly attached to your Foundation Stone of Truth know that you and You have the Way to “the Way” and the power and energy of the LIGHT and the Mind of Christ to conquer and make Square All conditions and “Come.”

Before going on to Number 5 let me leave you with one more 4. A Cardinal discipline of an Adept is to “leave matters that do not matter alone – Now and Forever more.” “See”?

In the Book of The Two Ways the number 5 within The Scale of 1 to 10 represents mankind. 5 symbolizes man-woman at the Apex of Involution and the beginning of Spiritual Evolution, the crowning point of the Lower Realms and as a 5 midway between 1 and 10. Since man-woman are spirits inhabiting a physical-material body, this cannot be otherwise.

As long as I am a 5, I cannot transcend any higher than the 5th Pillar- Wisdom. The Number 5 on the lower realm is also Knowledge and Understanding in general (see Addendum #21 to CPM #29).

Number 5 represents the Great Physical Temples of the Universe – Man – Woman – everywhere. 5 also represents the Great Material – Matter Temples of the Universe (only 4 have been erected up to this time\* (\*Time is vessel man “Invention” – see Message) as we calculate it).

And we, the great physical Temples are the only miracles - the great inscrutable mystery of LIFE.

Number 5 is composed of 4 and 1 or The Foundation of Nature and the divine 1 LIFE manifesting through it. This points to mankind's true constitution, for they contain within them, in their physical bodies, all the principles and Forces to be found in manifested Nature, and during the intra-uterine life passes through stages analogous to the various kingdoms of Nature - vegetable, fish, animal, mineral - up to the human. Hence man-woman here is a synthesis of the macrocosm, the squaring of all of the forces or 4. But he is also the direct intelligent agent of the 1, or LIFE's Representative on Earth - W-303 (the last is First).

Thus Number 5 means man-woman, but man-woman standing upon and dominating the lower, the physical, the Human and reaching up into the higher realms, The Divine.

The 5 represents the 5 Physical Senses and the 5 Receptor Senses of Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence, and Love. The 5 lower senses pair with the 5 higher in this Order - Hearing, Feeling, Seeing, Smelling and Tasting.

Today the True uses of the senses are as if covered with a veil, so that only in exceptional cases is one able, now and then, to extend the functioning of their senses to their

## Higher Purposes.

Clairvoyance, incorrectly called a 6th sense is but the extension of “Sight.” Thought Transference or clairaudience is but the extension of “Hearing,” Psychokinesis is but the extension of Touch or “Feeling” and so on.

I Paul could go on and on about Number 5 but much of it needs be learned by “The 13” for them to Share it with you and many, many others. So, I will end 5 with this:

The 5th Order of the Order of Orders was a very mysterious one as it was connected with what we call Atlantis and with the building of the Great Temple. Their task in this construction was to inform mankind on this Earth of their “empty religious worship” and to Transform the masses into Rational Spirituals who would follow the LIGHT to LIFE. That this task has, as yet, to be fulfilled is only due to the fact that the Message of the Great Temple has as yet to be properly interpreted. The Patience of Spirit is, of course, Unfathomable.

Someday, the masses will cease acting as dumb driven animals, whose hearts like muffled drums are beating religious funeral marches to the darkness of the graves.

The Number 6 is primarily The Christ Force in Nature,

hence it's Representing both Goodness and Unity.

The Christ Force is The Divine Creative Power and its Wisdom, the Essence that manifests on all planes in All Realms as the Animating Principle of the ONE LIFE.

The 6 is a 1 attached to a 0 and this represents the ALL in ALL as the Christ or the LIGHT task. A Sacred Assignment and Trust of The Christ to Deliver ALL to the ALL-LIFE. These Sacred Assigned Tasks which are Sacred Trusts descend from the Christ of Vertical Time to those Spirit Called in the Horizontal Zones. As they are completed on the Horizontal Level the nearer to completion is the Christ Task and the closer mankind's move towards the New Worlds and The Happening of the ALL in ALL. All, then, must do their part both Individually and then Collectively.

Much of what Number 6 represents is already contained and explained in the Message of I Paul, beginning with Communication 1 and many others, especially Communications such as CPM 26 and 29. The 6 can also be written VI or 6-three 1 then or a C and O.

Before going on to the next Number let me tell you that there are three different tables of Numbers used in Symbolism. Herein we are simply giving some of the highlights of the 1 through 10 table or Scale. There are also the 1 through 9, and the 1 through 7, which brings us to our

next Number - The 7.

In all three Tables cited above the 7 is the most Sacred Number because it Represents Perfection. 7 also stands for Peace, the Seven Pillars and the Seven Laws.

LIFE, the Ultimate of Perfection - LIGHT, The Absolute of Perfection. Together, Ultimate + Absolute are 16 which is 7. See? LIFE and LIGHT are 9. Perfection is a 10 or 1. See?

One Hebrew mystical teaching has this to say about the Number Seven: “. . . By these seven letters were also made seven worlds, seven heavens, seven earths, seven seas, seven rivers, seven deserts, 7 days, 7 days from Passover to Pentecost, and every seven years a Jubilee.” Many other mystic and secret writings have similar chains of seven including the bible.

All the Ancient mystery teachings agree that the Divine brought forth the manifested Universe through a Deity having a 7-fold aspect, called in the Christian scripture the 7 Elohim, the “Sons of God” spoken of by Job (1:6). Many claim it was these seven Elohim or “Sons of God” that were implied when God says “Let us make man in our image. . .,” or, “Behold, the man has become as one of us. . .,” etc. We know differently. The “Let there be Light” in scripture means more than “Daylight.”



The “Messiah” is a 7. It is also spelled “Máshiah” and “Chrician” = 7s. Having been Created Pure - Free - Complete - they remain a 7. See?

The Elohim or “Sons of God” symbolized the Seven Powers of the LIGHT created in the image of LIFE perfectly as Spirit, Love, Truth, Just, Peace, Wisdom, and Power. Number 7 also represents The Center of the 13 Steps of “The 13” which denotes Spiritualism. True Spiritualism and the perpetual Practice of same in word, Act and Deed.

Then we have the 7 virtues and the 7 “mistakes” which are their opposites:

1. Faith which degenerates into Pride for so many.
2. Hope which turns into Avarice.
3. Charity that collapses into Luxury.
4. Strength abused becomes Wrath.
5. Prudence sours into Idleness.
6. Temperance abandoned for Gluttony.
7. Justice turns green with Envy.

Those who follow the Way to “The Way,” who Exert the Honest and the Sincere Effort have no need to be Concerned with “mistakes” and for those who do not, the Law (Ordinance) of Formative Causation is always available to, and for them. It still remains a very simple matter of the minds.

The Number 8 is Involution-Evolution or the ALL in ALL. The Going Out and the Coming Back. The Way Out is The Way In and The Way In is The Way Out. The Message of I Paul has covered all of these subjects quite extensively.

Therefore, my contribution will be less than weighty. 8 symbolizes Humility and The Master was the Humblest of All. The Master tells us that “busy people have time for everything” and such as these never have to practice being humble – it comes Natural. Two Things are certain about humble people – they are never humbled and always out of “self.”

Number 8 is also the Symbol of Balance – Two Circles one atop another.

Number 8 also represents the Voice of the Silence – I Paul had this Voice in mind when he penned verses 9 and 10 of I Corinthians 13.

The Number 8 also symbolizes the Rule of Good, a part of which was given in “The Discernment” and came to us from the East – “the Wheel of the Good Rule moves slowly and steadily on. It grinds by day and it grinds by night. The worthless husks it drives from out the golden grain, the refuse from the flour, like The Wind that blows away the useless, rain-less clouds. The hand of karma is upon the wheel, the revolutions mark the beatings of the human

heart. . .” I’m sure you can make the connection.

The effect of Number 8 may be compared to that of a Balance in which the True-Self must be weighed. This Balance was an important symbol to the Ancients. In the Egyptian Book of the Dead, for example, Chapter 30 represents the deceased sitting in one pan of the scales and being weighed against his heart which was placed in the other pan of the Balance. In another “picture” we see the heart in the pan being weighed against a feather which symbolizes the Good, the Right, and the True in the other pan. What are the possibilities of Balancing your heart against “the Feather”? In Ancient Days a Scale or Balance very much represented an 8 thusly  $\infty$ . The Point of the Balance, the heart (mind), the Feather was, “many are called but few are Chosen.” “The street to the Light is straight, the Gate is narrow” and few are they who walk it and enter in. The Balance, then, reveals just how weighty the “self” truly is when weighed against the Good, the Right, and the True.

When we arrive at the Well and give our Water Signal for entrance into the Light, which symbolizes one’s “attainments” and their Right to lay claim to Admittance, the Scales test the validity of our claim – our own Judgment (under the Justice of LIFE) of our “Doing” to see if we may

claim, honestly, our “Being” as a Dweller in the Light - Temporarily, as a Transient Transcender, or Permanently. So, Number 8 Symbolizes, as we can see, both the Water that Creates and the Fire that Destroys. Dreams fold or unfold under one or the other.

Much of this is connected with the Number 9 which is primarily the Number of Initiation into the Outer Circle of Truth, Grace, and the First High Step towards the “Seeing” of the SOUL.

On the Evolution Side the Keepers of The Well are Nines. All Angels, in fact, are Nines. And The Well is where the Balance IS. On the Involution Side the Keepers of the Well were Cosmos Man - the Lumerians, who came to us from the South. These Cosmos Man are Nines. Angelical Lumerians are 9's. Like the current Pope recently said, Angels are highly misunderstood but they do exist. What he didn't say and couldn't say for obvious reasons is the Truth that there are no evil ones. Angels do not Create nor Destroy, only The Truth can do that, so Angels are all “Beings of the Light,” period. All evil wears a human face not an Angelical one.

If one will but approach the Well in Love and Truth, they will always get safely across to the Light. On the other hand, those who spend day in and day out of their physical

life concerned with matters that do not matter, never get across. This is the reason we stress this point so much. It is very, very important to one and all and it must be made clear enough, long enough, to Command your full Attention and the Proper, Responsible Action!

Every member of “The 13” need to become Nines to qualify as Adepts of The Order.

Number 9 is the square of the first odd Number 3 which represents a Number of true trinities. 9 represents spirits descending into humanity as the True-Self of man-woman until they are squared, or until through Initiation man-woman has manifested the Way to “The Way.” Number 9 symbolizes the Trinity of LIFE - Life and life; of MIND, Mind and mind; of God, Man, Nature; of Body, Mind, Spirit and the link between them all - Love, Truth and Understanding. And just think, it’s all a very simple matter of The Minds.

Number 9 also symbolizes the Great Trinity, Change-Changing-Changed, which, “The 13” will be most involved in, most concerned with, and hopefully Transformed by. This Great Trinity is the Final Answer to the Question, “How”? Come! is the Answer.

Not only are those matters that matter very highly but they are also Very High Matters of the Minds. Highly Simple, if you choose to Follow the Way to “The Way” All The Way.

With our hands on the Plow and never looking backwards each furrow we plow Upward from one number to the next is a minor initiation, but after 3 such minor furrows a Major Initiation takes place which when passed admits us into a new cycle (10) and a new and higher level of Consciousness. At each minor initiation we must face ourselves and Judge our own worthiness. At each Major Initiation we face our True-Self and be Judged according to all our words, Acts and Deeds.

These 3 major Initiations, which complete the Great Initiation of 9, are represented Esoterically and mathematically thus:

Mathematics

$$0+1+2+3+4=10$$

$$(10)+5+6+7=28=10$$

$$(28)+8+9+10=55=10$$

Esoteric Cycle - Symbol

The Cycle of Nature - Change

The Cycle of The Christ-Force - Changing

The Cycle of True-Self - Changed

The first cycle, the Cycle of Nature is the Narrow Way of man-woman and the physical conditions of The Way. It is here that one needs slay "self."

The Second cycle, the Cycle of The Christ-Force is the Straight Way and few walk it perfectly. It is here that one Needs walk with the Spirit.

The third cycle, the Cycle of True-Self is the Following

of the Mind of Christ. It is here that the Opposites are All United. Change is so obvious in the Neophyte who is Following the directions to The Way exactly as given, that it escapes no one and becomes a reward within itself. This obvious and startling change from Neophyte to Adept is the safe-guard against false-lights entering into the Realm of The LIGHT. Likeness to this world is not “Likeness” to The LIGHT, a light which no one can hide.

Number 9 has also been long considered The Number of Mystery. It is said to embody the Power of Silence.

The contemporary of Jesus, one Apollonius of Tyana, the Greek Philosopher and mystic, was an Initiate who laid great stress upon this Number. He instructed his disciples concerning it quite specifically. He required strict observance of the 9th hour as a time for Silence and meditation. He also forbade his followers from ever mentioning the Number 9 aloud. This Number, said Apollonius, must be passed over in Silence, because it contains the great secrets of the initiate, the powers that fructifies The Earths, the great secrets of the Fire, the Universal keys to Communication, and the second sight from which evil-doers and Pretenders cannot remain concealed from.

There is, as the Message says, always someone among

you, who will Know. The Source of this “Knowing” is obvious and, therefore, the initiation of a Neophyte to the status of Adept in The Order of Thirteen will produce Real Balance, give true power, and manifest constant spiritual progress in one’s daily life that will mark them as the “salt of this earth” and cause them to stand-out like a “lighted lamp on a candle stick” in the dark.

Before I go to Number 10 let me inform you what I have been doing in the process of recording this Communication.

I have been putting everything to “The Test” contained herein under the “Prove All Things” command of the Message of I Paul. For example, I have just completed a 54-hour abstention from solid food and during that period I have worked at the Message 34 percent of each of those 54 hours and used the remainder 66 percent for Rest, Sleep, Meditation, Cogitation, Trance and out of body periods. I “slept” and rested and “ate” in the Trance States. It works wonders in, and out, for one’s Well-Being. The whole purpose of the 54-hour period was for a recycling the physical body’s “time-clock” and the synchronization of the minds – per Jesse. The results are that I am not tired nor hungry, yet I will remain on a 2-a-day meal schedule with 7 hours set aside for Rest, Sleep, Trance, Meditation, Cogitation, Reflection and other Personal Needs. All of this



comes under step 5 of The Order of Thirteen which is Self-Discipline. The key is to work part of the time in a concentrated low trance state wherein one does not tire as readily as they normally would.

Now the Number 10, which we omitted from Addendum #21 to CPM #29, is primarily the Number that symbolizes Completion. On the Esoteric Scale of ten it has 3 separate and distinct meanings - 0 - 1 - 10. In some "circles" it also represents same, a Circle, O.

As zero (0) it represents Psychical Law Phenomena - Good. It also represents Physical Law Phenomena - Bad, and Man-Woman Phenomena - Indifferent. The Message has covered all three of these kinds of phenomena quite extensively.

The "1" of 10 represents Deity, the Supreme Spirit, God, SOUL, LIFE, then. The "O" of 10 represents as the cipher an endless list of meanings beginning with zero and ending as Circle. Some mystical, some Esoteric, some "secret" and some not so secret, yet zero plus zero is still zero.

Number 10 contains all the digits and returns them to Unity thusly:  $1+2+3+4+5+6+7+8+9+10=55=10=1$ . Thus the 10 and the 1 symbolize "the" ALL in the ALL in ALL. These are the reasons that some claim that the Number 10 cannot be surpassed. In All Reality it is only LIFE that cannot be

surpassed.

Number 10 also symbolizes Eternity which neither beginning nor end is usually shown as the Circle alone. It was also called the Sun, for just as the Sun rises on a new day after a night of darkness, the new day bringing with it all the experiences and continuing the work of the previous day, so does the Number 10 begin for us a new out-pouring of divine Light, Love and Energy with which to accomplish things in the new cycle.

The Number 10 is also called the Cosmos as well as many other things. As Aristotle said, "Some philosophers hold that ideas and Numbers are of the same nature and amount to 10 in all."

In Truth, before the Beginning, LIFE created the Universe and the Earths and from ONE came ALL Things and ALL Things will return to the ONE for all Things are One.

"So teach us to number our days, that we may apply our hearts unto Wisdom" (Psalms 90:20).

Now, as we said earlier on, "Words are symbols of ideas" and so we shall give you some of the Symbolism of Words herein.

In the Message of I Paul the Ancient Doctrines of Spirit Receivings are Restored to their proper pristine position in

the study and Practice of True LIGHT Spiritualism. It is obvious that no transcendental message could be present in writing if the words of symbolism were not given freely by the Wisdom within and set down unaltered by the Receiver of those transmissions. It has always been so. And it has always been so that the Receiver often feels he is the only one who really takes his Receivings Seriously.

Spiritual immaturity, procrastination, laziness and outright pretensions greatly interfere with The Purpose of the Message and its broadcasting by the very individuals that most Need what the Message has to offer. Spiritual inspiration, desire and honesty are Requisites necessary to make the Message work properly in, and for, one's Well-Being. It's always been so that we Reap what we Sow.

Many of the Truths of this Universe are beyond the scope of Human observation alone, so The Message in expressing these Truths to mankind on this Earth has also given to mankind The Necessary Way and means to become Spiritualized Observers in order to become their own witness.

Those who fail in their endeavors to observe are the very ones who do not exert the effort called for in The Message - The Procrastinators, the dis-honest, the lazy and the Pretenders - the ones with the "I" and "Me" problems,

the ones always in “self” and always looking for an Easy Road where none was Promised.

Long hours of study and Practice is The Way to “The Way.” It requires Desire, Self-Discipline, honesty, hard work, diligence to follow The Way to “The Way,” to the Light and to the Soul. Only you can do it and you can only do this by Doing.

Personally, I know of no one who is growing younger as the NOW moves swiftly on. Those who do not make the Honest and Sincere Effort to keep pace with it are going to be left behind by it to join all the others in the darkness of their own making.

This Communication is the Last Call to Prepare, Follow, Come. The Choice is yours – use it wisely or remain forever the victim of your own punishment for that is the Justice of Life and LIFE.

Now in our Esoterica on Words we will begin with “Water” for obvious reasons. Remember – all words have more than 1 meaning.

Water – Higher and Lower aspects

Most important to us is that Water means Unity. It is also a sign of birth. Even in Genesis the worlds were created after the Higher and Lower Waters. The fetus is surrounded

by water before birth. Spiritual Waters were necessary to bring forth the LIGHT.

Water is also the symbol of Truth or the eternal Reality, the source of all manifestation. Therefore the Way is a Water or Well sign of “The Way.” Water, in some circles symbolizes existence.

We all drink water but few partake of the Pure Spiritual Variety.

While there is no such thing as Holy Water on this Earth, there does exist here Deadly Waters, i.e., Religions, cults, sects, etc.

In the Book of The Two Ways it says that Water and Wisdom are kinsmen since they both seek their own levels. We go to “the Well” in search of our own level and the acceptance of our Water Signal indicates our Unity with Spirit.

Dark Waters, esoterically, means “secret teaching.”

Sweet Water, esoterically, means “Understanding.”

Calm or Peaceful Waters, esoterically, means At-One-Ment.

In the most Ancient of Times women were the Keepers of the Wells and The Water Bearers. It is not by coincidence

then, that some of Jesus' best men were women.

The words of a True Christian Spiritualist's mouth are as deep waters and his spiritual Knowledge is as a flowing brook.

Two very good examples of "Deep Water" are The Message of I Paul and The Order of Thirteen.

The ability to teach from Deep Water is the mark of a Teacher of Teachers, one humble enough to wash the feet of his own followers.

The doctrine of "Living Water" in the Egyptian Book of Theology was symbolical of eternal life for all who partook of it, or Received it, along with the Fruit of the True Life which grew in the garden of Paradise of their god, Osiris. Much of the contents of this Egyptian Book later showed up in both the Old Testament (Genesis) and the gospel of John in the New Testament (one example of this is in John 13:12-17).

"Living Waters" esoterically means spirits - the True-Self or the Immortal Self.

"Water and Wine" esoterically denotes the Lower and Higher minds.

Jesus did not turn water into wine any more than the

Alchemists turned iron into gold. What the Christian Religionists did, was to take a simple spiritual teaching of Jesus, decades after the fact, and turned it into a supposed miracle to support their claims. All Jesus did was to teach about the transmutation of the Lower and the Higher minds of man and spirit.

Our next word is “Well” and by now you should “see” that there is something more in “Well-Being” than just your health and your belly and your pocketbook. At the top of the list of the Truly Well-Being ones are those who strictly Follow the Way to “The Way” and leave matters that DO NOT MATTER, Alone! In the Doing of this you never become the victim of your own punishment – physically or spiritually. These are the One’s, then, who know where the Well IS and Partake of Its Living Waters that support Eternal Life. “See”? This is why, here, “Doing” is much more important than “Being” – here. Well?

A “Well of Water” is a symbol for the Divine fount of Truth. To go to the Well, then, esoterically means to go to the Source of Truth – Spirit, not man. When I Need to know something that I cannot possibly learn here, I go In and Out and to the Well for that I Paul Needs. This is the benefit of exerting the effort and following the directions exactly as given. Sincere and Honest Effort is my concern, not Result.

Getting to the Well is easy, even for a blind one, you simply Follow the Mind of Christ. It never fails.

“Well” is also used as a symbol for Circle, O. And all the Ancient Wells were constructed in that shape. Coincidence? It is no coincidence either that “Being,” esoterically, means “Water.”

“He who giveth one of these even a cup of water do it also unto me. And whosoever drinketh of the water that I drink of shall never thirst; but the water I shall give shall become in them a well of water springing up to eternal life.”  
- the Master, on “Well-Being” - yours and mine.

“A moment’s halt - a momentary taste  
of Being from the Well amid the waste.  
And Lo! The Caravan has reached  
the Nothing it set out from  
Oh! Make haste.” - Omar Khayyam

To understand this one needs to know the symbolism involved.

“Waste” has the same significance as wilderness, namely the arena of human life. “Being” here means Truth (Water). The “caravan” stands for the “True-Self” and its qualities. The “Nothing” is NO THING, the Supreme Spirit.



The first three words? The swiftness of all Life here. “See”?

“Well-Being” when turned around to “Being-Well” means “Doing Good” as in the Good, the Right and the True – Good Works, then.

And I Paul, believes that will do well enough for the symbolism of the word “Well.”

Everybody knows who Adam is but few know the Esoteric meanings of the word Adam and the Symbolism behind it.

Primarily “Adam” means the lower mind – the mind of man-woman – the Intellect, then.

Secondly it means “red earth” or “dust” in its Old Testament use, and in the Old Testament there is only one “Adam.” In the New Testament there are two “Adams.”

The word “Lower” in “lower mind” means “fallen” or “fallen mind,” then. Yes, my dear sisters and brothers, Evil does wear a human face and not an Angel’s. “See”?

The Real disgrace of a “fallen mind” is the Truth that such are Spiritual Cowards and “self” heroes. As I Paul said, God takes care of those who glory in themselves. He also advised us what was proper to glory in if you just couldn’t help yourself from glorying. (Those of you who are familiar

with Paul's Letters will understand this. Also, if you would like a fairly good description of just what a Spiritual Coward is, then read II Timothy 3:1-7.)

Let me give you a secret. When you cease Being for "self" and begin "Doing" for others (which includes "other") you will Begin to see the Results the Message of I Paul speaks about. We can fall, and we all have, but this time around "WE" cannot fail, "IF"! And that "IF" can be totally eradicated by the implementation of two little words - Self-Discipline. "See"?

As I Paul, said, in Genesis 1 and 2 there are 2 Creation Stories involving one Adam and one Eve. In the New Testament there are two Adams. Actually, there are 5 "Adams" which The Order of Thirteen will study about; learn; and Teach when The "13" are "seated."

And since they will, must be "Adept" we will explain this word esoterically. The word "Adept" symbolizes the higher mind as an active agent in the instruction of the lower mind. An Adept, then, is one who truly "Knows" his or her True-Self perfectly and Walks with the spirit.

The next word is "Adultery" - we know it as "self" or "want" (the lower senses' ego). Esoterically it is a symbol of the "self's" denial of the "True-Self" and the forsaking of the higher mind and Life for the Lower. The turning away

then from Wisdom's teaching and the Mind of Christ to effect union with desire and the sense activities. When one embraces the carnal "self" as their intimate personal life-style they commit spiritual Adultery and follow the way of darkness. In this sense, Adam and Eve are symbolic of the First Adulterers - The First to Follow "self" and forsake "The Spirit."

Our next word is "Heart." The human heart symbolizes the Love principle and the higher affections. The heart is also said to be the mind of the emotions. Perhaps that's the reason so many people are emotional wrecks.

The heart has always been associated with both Good and Evil. Scripture is full of such examples and for one of the many see Matthew 15:19.

In religions the soul is often called the heart of man, or that, in and by which things to either good or evil, have their rise - thus desires are of the heart or soul as are the first conceptions of good or evil. The heart understands, wills, affects, reasons, judges - all things that belong to the mind normally.

The "Heart" is the monad of the physical body directing the life essence (blood) which energizes the body and its desires. When the essence ceases to flow the life ceases to be.

Our next word is “Air” - the Atmosphere. This symbolizes the mental planes - the plane midway between the Lower and the Higher Realms. Air (mind) is that element in which “animals” (desires and emotions) and “plants” (instincts, feelings, etc.) live and move.

Air Power was an esoteric term long before man ever thought of flying.

Involution and Evolution are the processes, masculine and feminine, by which the True-Self is Air-borne, tended, and brought Up, and through which the lower nature is filled with activity.

When a novel opinion begins to be widely accepted it is said to be “in the Air,” in the general atmosphere of human thought, then.

This very common symbol “air,” often sacred, as signifying mind, is generally accepted or recognized by people but is seldom taken into account when interpreting Ancient manuscripts or scriptures.

Air and Ether also symbolize matter and spirit.

At the beginning of the Universe, that is, prior to Involution, the parts of being were contained within the whole, and the parts themselves were not what they were destined to appear, since within them also was that infinite

possibility which was The Reflection of That whose image they bore. And in homogeneity, no part was distinguishable from the whole. Spirit and matter, mind and form were The Root of all existing Things. All Things comprise them, and those elementals are the sum total of existence and are eternal and eternally change under The Law of NO-THING.

Then we have “the Evil mind.” This is a symbol of the lower mind corrupted by matter and excessive desire, the obverse of the higher mind. Esoterically manifestation implies duality of consciousnesses and the two selves are aspects of that which appears to be continually striving together in itself. There is apparent confliction and recognition of contraries. It is, however, as the contraries are perceived to be not in reality opposite to, but mutually helpful of the other, that the LIGHT’s reign may begin. I Paul wrote, “And we know to them that love LIFE all things work together for good, even to them that are called according to his purpose.”

“Alpha and Omega” – This symbolizes the manifesting Spirit from the Supreme as the Outgoing and Incoming of all divine life – the present, the past, the future in the Eternal NOW.

What is it that is the beginning and the end of existence? It is the LIGHT. The LIGHT is that of LIFE which

produced man-woman and seeks full manifestation in them.

The Book of the Two Ways says that the eternal relates the past as much as to the future, and abolishes both. In the eternal, both past and future are one. If your eternity lies in the Future, it lies also in the Past – you belong to one as much as to the other. From the standpoint of eternity there is no question of “I shall be,” or “I have been,” but “God IS – I AM.”

Next is “Fasting” and this symbolizes abstention from “wants” and the shunning of all external aid in their pursuits, opting instead, for internal aid in fulfilling “all needs.” As the Master said, “Unless ye fast to the world, ye shall in no way find the Kingdom of God.” No Thing could be said any plainer or simpler about “Fasting” than this. It’s both a simple condemnation of matters that do not matter and a simple matter of The Minds. After all the SOUL is a matter of mind and the ONE matter that matters Above All Matters.

Next on the List is “Circle,” the oldest known Symbol to All of mankind. The “Kilroy” of Esoterica, for wherever man-woman have been or gone, the Circle has always preceded them.

The Circle is a Symbol of the All Embracing Principle of

Divine Manifestation, Perfect and Entire, including Everything and Needing Nothing, without Beginning or End, neither First nor Last, Time-Less, Sex-less, Absolute. The Circle also represents the Higher Realms and the Square the Lower Realms.

The Interior of the Circle is the Domain of the LIGHT and “we” are Free to “see” the All in ALL its contents. Only ONE can see its Exterior.

The Circle represents the Universe of both known and unknown “existences” in most of the Ancient Societies. It also is used to denote the Sun and the Sons of God.

Esoterically, the Circle of Existence is the Symbol of the passage of spiritual minds, or monads of life through the Cycle of Manifestation - when LIFE established the Universe, I was there. When LIFE drew The Circle upon The Waters, I was there. When LIFE said Let there be LIGHT, I was there. And when LIFE said Let us make man in our image, I was there for LIFE IS - I AM.

“Noise” symbolizes the renting of The Veil of Peace. Esoterically, “Noise” is the profane renting of The Veil of “the Silence” - the words of a Neophyte. The speech of those in “self.” “Disturbing is the Noise (speech) of the Spiritually Ignorant, the followers of the Darkness.” (The Book of Life.)

“Noise” also symbolizes Gossip and Back-biting, rantings and ravings, the gnashing of teeth and the renting of clothing. Angry tantrums, obscenities and oaths are all classified as “Noise.”

Noise (Sound) is also the symbol for Atomic vibrations from higher or lower planes affecting the personality. There is a passage in JOB that expresses this “Hearken ye unto the noise of his voice, and the sound that goeth out of his mouth” (37:2).

I have been told that the Loudest sound in the Universe is the Voice of Silence.

Next is “Devotion.” This symbolizes a reliance on the higher mind in pressing Upward towards a high ideal of Good, Right and True. This implies the relinquishment of all “wants” and “selfishness” - a necessity to hear the sound of the inner-voice.

“Aspiration” is a symbol of the expression or reflection of The Divine life on the lower planes. It is the yearning of the lower mind for communion with the higher mind for the purpose of union. It implies dissatisfaction and discontent with present states and conditions and means the setting up of ideals of what is better and worthier and demonstration of same. Honest and sincere Aspiration must by Divine Law be met by bestowal of higher qualities and faculties on the



mind which turns from the Physical World to the Psychical Realm of LIFE and LIGHT.

Our next word is “Inspiration.” Divine or Spiritual Inspiration means the “breathing of the Spirit” or “the Speaking of Wisdom” into the mind of man-woman. This wisdom is the Divine expression of Truth from above, made possible of Reception by the mind, when union with the higher mind is attained.

Inspiration is a Gift, and is given whenever there is receptiveness and “Recognition” towards the eternal theme of Love, Truth, Wisdom, Unity and Peace.

Next on my list is “The Intellect” - “Intelligence” - “Reason” - “The Lower Mind,” then. The mental principle involves choice in uniting with, or rejecting, concepts of different kinds which are presented to it - and this choosing faculty introduces will which makes man-woman (Individuality) as LIFE. It is the function of the Lower Mind to disclose differences and perceive similarities, but unaided by intuition it can never show the perfect truth. Intellect, having this capacity for uniting with that which it perceives becomes the formative factor in us, and as such, it tends to contract and limit that which it operates upon. It, therefore, requires an expanding influence, and this it finds in uniting with emotion which strives against its

limitations. Originally, intellect and emotion were not in conflict, for they acted in accordance with the Psychical Laws before the mind had come under the influence of the lower desires and wants. Intellect beholding the good and true and Right of Reason instinctively is drawn towards the ideal, and thus it causes the lower mind to evolve and finally unite with the higher mind and attain upwards to perfection. It is a regulating factor which must dominate the love-principle and emotion nature until truth becomes the rule and ruler of the lower mind. It cannot of itself inherit the Things of The Spirit, but when united with the higher mind they are free to pursue Perfect Love and Perfect Truth.

The lower mind, at first, is unaware of a higher source of Truth because of its fallen nature. It cannot conceive of That which is self-derived, and it falsely imagines that knowledge is only acquired through study of nature and history, and so borrowed from the senses without. Afterwards and slowly, those who find The Way begin to perceive that the lower nature is being misled by “wants” and “misleading desires,” that all of their ideals are illusory and rooted in ego-ism, the “self,” then, that thrives on separateness. Once This Awareness sets in, the lower mind and all of its faculties is guided to find out how the higher mind qualities can uplift and Transform the lower self into the True-Self.

Christian Spiritualism alone reveals to us the connection of the Lower Mind to the ONE Mind and the True Meaning of Predestination. You see, the human brain, unlike the Lower Mind, has no moving parts and therefore it goes nowhere – it was formed here and it stays here.

Our next word is “Key.” This signifies the Power of Opening, the Act of Opening, and being Open. The Key or the Keys of the Kingdom symbolizes the True-Self which occupies the Central Position between the Higher and the Lower Kingdoms or the Kingdom of LIFE and the Kingdom of Heaven (the Earths) is the Key to both.

The story about Jesus giving the Keys to the Kingdom simply doesn't fit into the scriptures at all, not even Symbolically, Sacred or otherwise. “Peter” being a Symbol of the Lower Mind could not possibly have control over the higher mind of The Spirit! His authentic three denials of Jesus thrice condemn this fabricated story in the Christian gospel. The Truth is that the story was intentionally and ignorantly inserted – interpolated into the scripture by some eager ecclesiastics early in the third century, who inserted it for the sake of the Church in order that it should get apparent authority and sanction from the Scripture. The True Key to the Kingdom is within and it is not “self” nor the lower mind. “See”?

Our next term “Anger of God” is symbolic of a relative and false conception which arises from the fear and hate embedded in the lower mind by “self” which keeps the lower mind from understanding the Higher Nature of Spirit. It is the feeling engendered in the Lower Mind by “self” that Spirit is the enemy. The Spirit wears a forbidding aspect to the self-seeking of the human personality. This is reflected in the semblance of Divine Wrath. Most of this is Psychological and stems from preconceived ideas early on involving a devil, evil spirits, religious teachings on the Wrath of God and the teachings that command Fear of God, or, in other words teach the ignorant and gullible to Fear Love and Truth.

In connection with the Anger of God we have the term “Wrath of God.” This is a symbol of the Supreme Spirit’s aspect towards evil. Insofar as the human consciousness identifies itself with and perpetuates evil, the Divine within wears a forbidding aspect indicative of opposition to All misdeeds. But the wrath exists only in the lower nature and the “self,” for the Nature of God towards man-woman is Always Love and Compassion for our Well-Being. We are, after all, what we think - Good - Bad, or Indifferent. Yes, the “Wrath of God” as we humans are want to call it, is in us, but “We” know it by its True term which is the “Justice of God” or LIFE, then. Being, or not being, the victim of our

own punishment has very little to do with the Spirit. We need to keep in mind always, and in All Ways, that the Truth both creates and destroys. The more the Truth Outs the more of Untruth, Preconceived ideas, wild imaginings, silly fears and doubts and false teachings are Destroyed.

As the Master said, “Sufficient is the evil for the day” and that brings us to our next word, “Evil.” Since the evil for the day is sufficient we have no Need and no cause to contribute to it. Evil is a human manifestation and not a Spirit one.

Evil is a condition of man-woman resulting from the Fallen Mind. When mankind chose all the quantities of “self” over All the Qualities and Attributes and Principles of God, Evil came into existence and the Precious mind of man-woman was lowered to the status of the beasts.

Evil is a state of emptiness in its degree, and not of fullness - and as emptiness is no Real Thing, but the Absence of The Real, so an evil state of mind (one’s life) has no Reality in itself, but Needs the Presence of the Good, the Right and the True which are Realities and endure forever. The evil state is, therefore, relative, negative, and transitory and implies the Absence of Mental Completeness and the presence of “self” and the Absence of the Active Presence of God. No Freedom - No Spirit.

You see, the nature of All evil is Negative, if evil as evil positively existed, it would be evil to itself and, therefore, destroy itself. Only we can destroy it by slaying “self.” What are you waiting for? What are you afraid of? Why can you not “See”? The Truth is that you are caught up in hundreds of matters that do not matter and the list of such things, if there was a list, would be endless. Suffice it to say, that at least ninety percent of your mental capacity is engrossed in such matters that do not matter every single day of your life. That’s the average and from it you should be fully capable of compiling your own list. To those of you who have any spark of memory still active in that sea of matters that do not matter, you will recall that such a listing was called for some time ago. “See”?

And since none of you have fully complied with that directive of the Message of I Paul, here is an appropriate place for our next word “Procrastination.” This symbolizes a Silent Excuse, and like evil, is a negative and a waste of The Gifts of The Spirit.

Esoterically, Procrastinators are busy people who have time for nothing. They are also called “hypocrites” (as Jesus labeled the Pharisees) because they are powerful talkers but poor and negative performers. Hence, they are also cited as the Anti-Christ. The “silent-excuse” ploy of such ones is

that they always find something useless to do in order to avoid doing anything useful and This is the height of folly and stupidity of the “self” led and “self” controlled. To Jesus, they symbolized the blind leading the blind.

To Paul, procrastinators are those who are unable to make up their carnal mind over which matter, of the matters that do not matter, to matter with next.

Paul’s “cutting” remark, from an edge of the Sword of Truth, about “babes” and their inability to receive anything stronger than milk, was a reference to a baby’s first “steps” which are “Sight” and “Sound” and not “walking” or “talking,” which his “babes” in the Family had not mastered as yet and the reason was their procrastinations over matters that did matter – Spiritual Matters then, not selfish physical matters or the conforming to matters of this world over/above one’s Needs and Responsibilities.

Our next word is “Chaff” (as in wheat). This symbolizes the physical vessels which are gradually “blown away by the wind,” “discarded” or “cast off” by the lower and higher minds united by the death of the human body or the “vessel of waste.” The “blown away by the wind” means cast out by mind (air) energized by spirit (wind). Chaff is the husk of that food, wheat, which has evolved as the “Fruit of the Spirit.” When the lower qualities (physical bodies) have

served their purpose in life, they dry up, as it were, like chaff and pass away. See Psalms 1:4-5 for a touch of this.

Next is “Suffering.” Esoterically, suffering is the very Ancient Law of Love. There is no quest without pain and every lover is seen as a martyr. Hence it is inevitable that he who would love so high a Thing as Wisdom should sometimes suffer hindrances and grief. The Book of Life states that the worst suffering falls upon the Spiritually Ignorant, and the highest upon those who are not, but pretend to be so – the most evil ones, then.

“Creation” – Emanation of the Spiritual and Material Universes.

This is symbolic of the Potential and Unmanifest becoming the Actual and Manifest in a scheme of being in which the Spiritual and the Mental precedes the Astral and the Physical.

“Meat” – Strong; Holy; Sacred; etc.

This symbolizes Spiritual Knowledge, the food necessary for The Attainment of Wisdom. Esoterically, “Strong Meat” is a symbol of intellectual food. Spiritual Science and Philosophy for the Lower Mind development and the Uniting of the Opposites.

“Ocean-Sea.” These symbolize either the Reality Above



or the Illusion below.

“Truth” – Seekers of. This signifies those who are fully committed to the Universal Plan of LIFE and Followers of the Mind of Christ. Those beings, then, who are Totally Committed to the Spiritual Way of Life and, who, in their Physical-Mental existence manifest the three lower cycles of mans’ evolution: Walking After The Spirit – Walking With The Spirit – Walking in The Spirit.” “Many are The Called but few Come”! The Book of The Two Ways warns against seeking things one is unprepared to find. Since all This “Walking” is truly a simple matter of The Minds, they are, most assuredly, matters that “DO” Matter.

“Ocean, or Sea” (Feminine). Esoterically this symbolizes primordial Truth on the Matter side of being, which brings forth all qualities and forms proceeding from The Absolute.

The highest condition on the matter side of Manifestation is Truth – Reality (ocean) in its receptive aspect (feminine) towards Spirit. This primordial condition of things fructified by the Supreme Spirit is called the “Great Mother” bearing Truth on the Earth Planes and the Prototypes of All forms and structures for the Manifestation of the Divine Life in the Lower planes.

In Christian religious mysticism The “Great Mother” is

the “Holy Spirit” and “Wisdom” is also cited as the Feminine aspect of The Kingdom of God.

Our next word is “Disciple.” First, the “Calling of Disciples.” Disciples are called for by the Spirit of The Message and are chosen from the Family Membership. The Freedom to accept or decline such a calling is a safeguard of the Message proper and is always treated with Respect. These called to be disciples are those with discipleship Potential - The word Disciple is a Symbol of a developing spiritual quality of the minds which through Self-Discipline, and the Following of the Message, a harmonious relationship can be established with one and All, the Goal of the Message, its tasks, and the teaching of same to raise the quality of knowledge and understanding of Christian Spiritualism everywhere.

“Disciple,” Esoterically, is a Symbol of a quality which has been so far disciplined as to be capable of attachment to an Ideal with which the disciple strives diligently to be in harmony with, and from which it may receive inspiration and guidance.

Next on our list is “Ambassador.” True Ambassadors are the personification of, “Busy people have time for everything.” An Ambassador signifies those called to gather-in The All in All. The key word for Ambassadors,

then, is Inclusiveness - The Goal of the ALL in ALL. It signifies the carrying of the Message of I Paul eternally in One's Heart, incessantly by one's tongue and forever from one's mind.

Next is "Apostle." An Apostle symbolizes one who does exert the Effort called for in the Message of I Paul to Attain to The Six Attributes of The Mind of Christ and The Six Attributes of the Body of Christ, which when manifested, they join others of an established group nearest to the indwelling Christ. Thus the "Apostles" are "disciples" raised (changed) to a state of companionship with the LIGHT through the True-Self and its leadings.

An Apostle, then, is one who is Self-Disciplined, who practices the highest principles, sets the highest examples and continuously stimulates the mind to free itself from any and all causes of bondage in matter. In True Christian Spiritualism a true Apostle is the one who is always Present and always Assisting those who are less advanced to rise and join them in a service to LIFE and LIGHT.

And this, of course, brings us to "Servant." A "Servant" signifies one who is an Apostle-Ambassador-Disciple, and more. The Servant is out of "self" and in The "Mind of Christ."

Our next is "Spirit Guide." This signifies a Servant-

Adept - whether in the Body or Out of the Body, It Matters Not.

I believe it to be appropriate to include here, that All Members of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of The ALL in ALL have one primary assigned task and that is to become a Spirit-Guide, and one Goal - Soul. A close perusal of the Message of I Paul will produce the proof of This Truth.

Our next word is Sacrifice, Altar of. This is a symbol of the structure of the Religious consciousness in the lower mind and nature of men-women, on which the lower desires and aims are offered up to Spirits believed to be both Good and Evil. This belief in two Powers, one good and one bad is the fallacy of religion as well as its excuses. All these religions and the religionists Need to learn that the Only "Satan," "Devil," and Evil exists only in the Fallen Minds of Men and Women, and its true name is "self."

And this brings us to "Satan." This is a symbol of darkness, limitation, and ignorance. Esoterically it has nothing to do with a devil or a hell as in religion. Ignorance is evil and darkness. "Sufficient is the ignorance for the day."

We need to go to "Peter" to find our Evil one. "Peter" is an esoteric term for the lower mind and the Carnal, Natural Man-Woman with sense of separateness.

It was no accident that Jesus changed Simon's name to Peter. And, Peter, being of the lowest level of mind, consciousness, then, for a human being, very quickly acted the role: "And Peter took him and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, lord; this shall never be unto thee. But he turned and said unto Peter, Get Thee behind me Satan; thou art a stumbling block unto me; for thou mindest not the Things of God, but the things of men." This signifies the incapacity of the lower mind to understand the heights to which The Spiritual Adept's mind can and shall rise. It also represents the lower mind's revolt against the suggestions a higher mind can give, which suggestions, often of a purifying nature, however, are strangely distorted as they come as reflections to the lower mind, and which, therefore are not understood. This attitude of mind is rebuked by the higher mind. The "rebuke" must be taken as signifying the casting forth from the mind of doubt and error which obstruct truth and right.

What then is designated by the "air" but the minds of worldly men and women, which given up to the countless wants and desires of this life, are, being fluid, scattered hither and thither like the air. But the "air" is collected into "clouds," when unstable minds are, by the grace of the Divine Regard, strengthened with the solidity of virtue, in order that, by Thinking of what is Right, they may gather

themselves within the bosom of their hearts, and may not melt away in empty thoughts. Peter had been “air” when the occupation of fishing for the life of the flesh satisfied him and used, as a transient breeze, to agitate him, distracted still with earthly wants and desires – evils, then. Jesus made it quite clear that the lower, fallen mind, was the cause of all the evil of the world, beholden, as they are, in the ignorance and darkness of the “self.”

Our next term is “Above the Earth” (A place Peter’s mind definitely was not). This is symbolic of the levels of Consciousness above the Lower mind or Carnal level of consciousness. “Heaven” in its widest sense comprises these higher levels of Consciousness available to the Lower Mind where the Effort for development is visible to the Higher Consciousness. “Effort” is the key here for it is valued over knowledge and intelligence by the Higher-Level Minds. This, then, is the Message’s “You exert the effort and the “results” will take care of themselves.”

Our next word is “Hades.” In Greek Mythology this was the home of the dead or the Underworld. Esoterically it is a symbol of the Lower Planes of Life. More emphatically it represents a state of mind filled with fear, doubt, selfishness, suffering and sorrow caused by a want and desire mental condition. This is, then, the “dis-ease”

condition wherein the lower mind is in Hades until the effort is manifested to raise the Consciousness out of this, the lowest level of human consciousness possible. Its parallel on the Upper Planes of existence is the Earthbound Plane. The cause for any and all existence at these two extremes is always “self.” Be not conformed of this world but transformed by the Renewal of your mind. It’s truly amazing what a simple change of mind can do for our Well-Being, but most people are too lazy or too simple to conform to the directions given for The Transforming.

I once gave you an interpretation of the story in Luke 16 about the Dives (Rich man) and Lazarus. Now I Paul will give you another from the view that the Rich man is Earthbound. I will stay mostly with 16, Verses 23-24 - this one story above All the others in the gospels proves that Jesus knew All about “self,” The Darkness and Earth-boundedness of the “True-Self.” “And in Hades he (Dives) lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am in anguish in this flame.”

The “Rich man” is the lower mind under the control of “self” (a dead “Peter”) which was (is) satisfied with the

Things of the world and the senses (pleasure of). But by a change of state he (the mind and “self”) is now cut off from those Things in which he delighted. And in the midst of his suffering (being the victim of his own punishment) when he has no means of satisfying those pleasures to which is Whole Life has (was) been given, – he has been led at last to cast his eyes Upward and to aspire to something towards which had not yet been able to look. And then he asks that mercy may be extended to him, and that the True-Self (like Lazarus) may be aroused in him, so that he may perceive Truth (water) – to receive which, however, his condition is not yet ripe, and he must undergo further purification. “See?” How this story got in, or got left in the gospel is unknown – it’s very Spiritual and it has Nothing to do with Hell or Purgatory, two concepts that were not in Jesus’ mind but apparently was in the minds of the Church Scribes.

Right here is a good place to examine the meaning of “Abraham” (Abram) – This is a symbol of a phase of the Divine Nature in the Minds and Spirits. “Abram” signifies an early phase of a Christ (like Melchizedek – “After the order of”). It stands for the Supreme Spirits, esoterically, in the story of Dives and Lazarus. “And if ye are Christ’s, then are ye Abraham’s seed, heirs according to promise.” (Galatians 3:29) If these qualities are in harmony with the Highest Ideal, then are they of spiritual descent so begotten



of the Power of the Divine - inheritors of “The Fruits of the Spirit” according to the Divine Universal Plan. “The Power” (and Wisdom) of the Divine is LIGHT and the First Fruit of “The Spirit,” and the “First Fruits” are “After the order of,” i.e., Melchizedek, Abraham, Jesus, etc. The “seed” or “fruit” of “The Supreme Spirit” are called Supreme Spirits in the Book of the Two Ways, indicating Men and Women who have been “Christed” or “Christined.” They are also cited as “The Lights of the Heavens” (Earths).

Our next symbol is one used often in the Message - “Concentration.” This signifies fixity of Aim and Purpose brought about through the studying of the mind when stilled from the surging’s of sensations, desires and passion.

We All are fairly acquainted with the lower-level meanings of “Conception” but not its higher-level meaning. Spiritually, “Conception” is symbolic of the energizing and emergence of the True-Self from within when the Righteous Nature is manifested in the physical body and the lower mind. “The Good Person brings forth what is Good” - God is no respecter of Persons but LIFE certainly knows good fruit when he sees it and our task is to bring forth Good Fruit. “See?”

So, we need to become “Conquerors.” This word

symbolizes the True-Self triumphant over the false-self, the higher nature over the carnal nature, the individual Pentecost, the day of harvest, the bringing forth of, the bearing of Good Fruit, the day the Spirit of Truth destroys the old you and brings Forth, Creates, the New You, the day you speak in a new tongue, A Spiritualized tongue - "Behold! I make All Things New." The day the Spirit of Truth awakens us to Conquer, to deliver The death blow to illusion and ignorance. The day we become what we should be, NOW and Future, the day we become not only Fully Human, but Fully Spiritual.

Now Light can only be got by a fight against Darkness. And to fight this fight one Needs courage, fearless courage and a mind free of All doubt, All negatives. You cannot be revolutionized except through battle. The elements for a new life cannot be assimilated except through resistance. Otherwise, they would not be your own. They are woven with the fibers of your whole life by daily struggle. Without struggle They would be mere surface things which a breath of temptation would blow away. The darkness does not vanish all at once, nor does the light flash upon us. But when in our contest with the gloom, and in our Patient Feeling after Spirit, there comes a faint glimmer of the Truth which we must possess, must have, to the point of giving up All for the All of it, with no fear of having nothing, we rejoice in

making it our own and go on in strength - sans “self” - and that is our great Sacrifice, the one that makes us Conquerors and a True Revolutionary of the All in All, then, free once and for all of illusion and ignorance. Once having plowed the furrow we go upward always and never looking back we know that victory is in our grasp. Now you have fought the Good battle, now you have the Right to be proud, now you have the True Pride, Spiritual Pride, because you NOW have “Recognition.” Now can you “see”? Now you get Respect, not as a person, but as a Fully Human - Fully Spiritual Doer. See? Well, whether you do or not, I Paul does see and “see,” and I hear and “hear” well also, and this is what I “Know”:

The Way in is The Way Out and The Way Out is The Way in, and you’re either in or out. You’re either for The Family of LIFE and The Kingdom thereof or you’re against it. You’re also either for The Family of LIGHT and its Kingdom, the heavens on the earths of The All in All.

You just cannot have it any other Way but This Way, The Way to “The Way.” You see, the Kingdom of Christ, the LIGHT, then, advances by warfare as well as by growth. And it is The Family that has to grow - not only in individual stature but in its Collective size - both physically and Spiritually.

Every step of The Way you have to cut your way through

opposing foes and barriers. Every step of The Way has to be won by a struggle and strife. No one promised you an easy road and there is no Spiritual life without dying and putting off the old you and its affections and blemishes, and no Spiritual life at all until you slay “self” and claim your victory over it by dying to and being recreated daily in the LIGHT. The hands and feet cannot move freely until the bonds are broken. The mind cannot function disoriented by illusion. You cannot do battle clothed in Fear and Doubt. If you fancy that you are going to get fully human and fully spiritual by continuous growth without some pain, some giving-up, some disappointment, and without the courage to persevere, then you know nothing about it.

For every step up in knowledge and growth there has always been some defeats and the giving-up of our own indolences, of our vain pride, of our blindness and deafness, of our selfishnesses and our foolish tongues, of our own perverseness of stubbornness and self-will run amok. For every step upwards in strenuous work for LIFE and LIGHT, there has always been a slaying of “self” and selfishness which urges us to work in our strength and for our own sakes only. What you do “only for yourself” is a step backwards towards the Darkness but what you do for yourself and your Well-Being that enhances the Well-Being of others, is another victory and another step Upward

Towards the Light. So be “Conquerors,” giving no offence in anything so that the Family be not blamed: But in All Things approving ourselves as the servants of LIFE, in much patience, in our efforts and our Needs, even in distresses that may happen upon us. Be knowledgeable and Righteous and keep the Faith and live by the Spirit Truth, Good, Right, and True in everything you do.

Our next subject is a tall one but I’ll keep it short – the Tower of Babel. This symbolizes the false conception that the highest truth may be reached through the exercise of the lower mind faculties alone.

“Darkness.” This is symbolic of All ignorance. Spiritually it symbolizes All Ignorance and All Planes wherever the condition exists of an Absence of The Light of Truth. The Spirit of LIFE IS Everywhere there is Life, but the Spirit of Truth, since it both Creates and Destroys, Absents Itself where there is No Freedom and “Self-Imposed Ignorance” is slavery. Esoterically, Darkness is simply by the Absence of All Light and the LIGHT. To Know The Way and continue to talk it, while refusing to Walk it, is a self-imposed sentence of Darkness. (We are both Judge and Victim.)

Next is “Ear” or “Hearing.” The Ear is a symbol of the mental faculty in its passive aspect, receptive of ideas. It

stands for trust in authority, respect for truth and reliance on external guidance. Or, in a higher sense, the ear signifies Receptivity to inward guidance, to the admonitions of the “voice” of conscience as The Way to The Good, Right, and True and paying more than “lip service” to your Spirit Guide. “If you live long enough you may hear all there is to be heard and yet really Know nothing of importance or use if you do not “hear” it also.” (I Paul) “He will open their ear also, to correct them, and he will speak to them so that they will return from iniquity” (Job 36:10). To “Open the ear from iniquity,” is to lay open the understanding of knowledge, but a person is reprov'd, and their ear opened, when they feel within themselves a desire for eternal goods and acknowledges the errors they have outwardly committed.

Faith begins by hearing the Truth and becomes Full by “Seeing It.” “See”?

So “Eye” and “Seeing” are our next subjects. The eye is a symbol of mental perception. To “see” is to Understand. “Seeing” is the mental perception of All the aspects of a thing seen. It is claimed that seeing is believing and that’s so at one level, but “Seeing” goes much further, for it implies full knowledge of that one “Sees,” including both the visible, and the invisible or “hidden” aspects of All

Things “Seen.” There is an eye of the body and an eye of the mind called intellect. Self-Consciousness is the Eye of the True-Self.

“See” and “Seeing” Spiritually, then, signifies the ability to pierce the veil of ignorance and perceive- Understand the Higher Levels of Things seen and read and heard. To “See” is to Understand Things through spiritual discernment. “Seeing” is the Highest Level of Faith, Knowing and Obeying as opposed to simply believing and foregoing the opportunities to become one’s own best witness. “Seeing” is to know the difference between matters That Do matter and those that do not and the ability to shun them in every way possible. “Seeing” is fearless, doubtless, Courageous, Patient, Kind, Loving, Tenacious and so forth. “Seeing” is the mark of an Adept and a True Christian Spiritualist.

Spiritually, the EYE OF GOD is symbolic of the three Omni’s.

The “third eye” of man-woman is the Psychic faculty of the Lower Mind. It’s the eye involved in “seeing” the Invisible. It is also known as the clairvoyant eye. This third eye is also the eye that “hears” as well as “sees” and is also called the Eye of The Memory.

Now since we have spoken of “Parable” in the Message

of I Paul we need to explain its meaning and uses a bit more herein. “Parable” is a symbolic narrative of comparison, to illustrate the laws of the inner world with the laws of the outer.

“I will open my mouth in a parable; I will utter dark sayings of old:” Psalms 78:2. (“dark” herein = Secret-hidden.)

The expression of the inner nature shall appear in the outer, and through Spiritual narratives there shall be revealed the Secret Wisdom of The Spirits.

Jesus was a Master Adept in the use of the Parable (Parabole in Greek) and, of course, the most publicized, but not the only one. The Parable usage to express Spiritual Truths in a hidden or Secret Way is very Ancient. Many Teachers in Ancient Greece, Egypt, Sumeria, and other places, were also Masters in the Art of the Parable for such purposes. All such parables had more than one meaning for that was their purpose. One to instruct the Prepared and the other to assist the unprepared in their preparation. One literal, then, and the other Spiritual - secret or hidden (“dark,” then) - therefore the most innocent sounding Parable could contain profound meanings and instructions for those “in the know” - True Adepts, then. Parables were, then, both “milk” and “strong meat.”



The Message of I Paul is, in itself, a Parabolic Message of both Literal and Spiritual importance and levels of meanings. The Message not only makes this clear but it also teaches us how to discern its Spirit Levels of Consciousness and their hidden message. If one studies and follows the Message as it should be, and not regard it (as too many do regard it) merely as a literal recital of facts, but as also a very serious representation of Spiritual Truths, then that one, at least would “see” that the Message is a divine Parable.

Jesus said “Unto you is given to know the Mystery of God’s Kingdom; but unto them that are without, all these Things are done in parables.”

In other words, those who could spiritually discern matters concerning the Kingdom of God, the True Adepts, then, were the ones Jesus was actually speaking to who understood that all material things are symbols, statements, of eternal and spiritual facts (it is a shame upon the human race that the identification of the Laws of the Spiritual Realm with the Laws of the Natural Realms should so long have escaped Recognition), and what needs to be done with human beings is to Awaken them to an immediate knowledge of these facts (a task of “The 13”).

The visible world is so real to people that the invisible does not have a great appeal (People are just too busy

attending to matters that do not matter to do anything effective and rewarding with the matters that do matter); they cannot see in the one a parable of the other, a material representation of a spiritual reality, a “mystery,” a “secret” which cannot be fully revealed to such people, but could be fully revealed and immediately known to those who would follow the directions exactly as given. To those of us who do follow The Way to “The Way” exactly as given, who labor constantly at their assigned task which are Sacred Trusts, the real matters that do matter to us are just the things we cannot rationalize nor be rationalized nor intellectualized. They are felt and known but not always immediately explained, so to such as us they are a mystery. But when we are most aware of our task and at our very best in the doing of it – the times, then, when our thoughts and feelings are most elevated and content, when desire and motivation are both thrown on the side of what we “see” as the Most High and Sacred, then it is that the Supernatural takes over and we listen in Obedience and All Love. “We” Realize that we too, are a Parable of sorts. LIFE IS – I AM – I have a choice.

You see, the origin of Everything Here had its beginning Elsewhere and that’s the foundation of All Parables. “See”?

Our next subject is “Elias” or “Elijah.” Elijah is a symbol of the higher mind – emotion nature which brings

forth the dawn of the higher levels of Consciousness and the Recognition of Truth - Reality in the lower mind - emotion nature.

“Behold, I will send you Elijah the Prophet, before the great and terrible day of the Lord come.” Malachi 4:5.

“Elijah,” then, symbolizes a “messenger of God,” that is, the Awakening of The Consciousness which brings a Recognition of a higher order, but which does not of itself do more than extend the spiritual boundary, as it were. This stage of a higher consciousness is the forerunner of the Christ Consciousness and therefore announces to the lower mind and nature to be attentive, aware, vibrant and watchful and strive diligently to Activate the Mind of Christ through their every Word, Act and Deed.

The “Terrible day of the Lord” has become to mean just about everything the religionists’ wildest imaginings could conjure up to instill fear into the ignorant masses and hold them in slavery and its Spiritual Meaning became lost among all the falsehoods so perpetrated. The “Terrible day of the Lord” is the period or moment the lower personality (human being or human body) must be extinguished - and if it be all cast away (the “All” meaning or representing the “Whole” - body-mind-spirit) into the Darkness as Total Waste because it was totally wasted, then it is the terrible

day of the lord - The lord of "The House" - "self"! "See"? This is the apex of what it means to be the victim of your own Punishment - you are the Judge and you do have Choice. So make up your mind, "Now"!

In Matthew 17:11, 12, Jesus is quoted as saying "Elias (Elijah) truly shall first come, and restore all things. But I say unto you that Elias is come already, and they know him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise, shall also the Son of Man suffer of them." Verse 11 makes no real sense here in view of what Jesus supposedly said in Verse 12. This whole chapter of Matthew is suspect but there is, esoterically, a meaning to "Elijah as The Restorer," so I'll give it to you. It's a symbol of the spiritualized lower nature which on the form side of being, gathers and collects the experience necessary to the development and restoration of the lower mind to its proper Unity. Perhaps Jesus did mention Elijah as The Restorer and the result was the mess in Chapter Seventeen of Matthew which was, of course, following a church line to establish its position and authority in the vast arena and scheme of the established religions of the times.

Next is "Ascension" which in its Reality has nothing to do with the ascension of religion which is a false conception - an untruth composed by church fathers and their scribes

for their own false theology. Ascension is a Symbol of the Christ spark in the human personality with the Christ Spirit, that is, the Lower Mind qualities having been perfected on the lower planes and united to the Higher Mind qualities, become compounded as the Higher True-Self on the Spiritual Planes of The LIGHT. How any human being can see this “happening” in, or to, someone else is beyond my ken.

The “Ascension” with which the drama of this life terminates is that of the Whole Lower Mind Qualities United with The Higher Mind-Spirit which Now Totally represents the Whole Man-Woman - The True-Self, then, ready for its departure from The Earth Planes on its Upward Evolutionary Journey to its Goal - “Soul.” Hence, this is not an ending but a Regeneration.

“I Come Again” said Jesus, “and receive you unto myself that where I am there ye shall be also.” Interpret that promise as being in “the Now.” Interpret it spiritually, then, and you have what it means to impart - (when you drink This Think of me - when you eat This Remember me). “Jesus” is always “Coming” in like manner as we “saw” him go. The Way in is The Way Out and The Way Out is The Way in - A very simple matter of The Minds, as is Think and Remember. “See”?

Only the cloud of your own ignorance has veiled his goings and comings - you just don't "see" well. You must Think higher.

He has not really gone - he has but called you upward, bidden you aspire through those very conditions of your own choice and making to the Prepared Place for Prepared People in the ever-lasting Kingdom of LIFE. And "he" will Come to greet You with a greater fullness of Life and Power when you can Receive "him" with the heart of a child and the Mind of True Son or Daughter of The Father. Now can you "see."

I sincerely hope that we have put to rest the fallacy of "The Second Coming" of the religionists in your minds, at least. If there is going to be any "second comings" You will be a part of it.

Our next subject is "Person." An explanation of one meaning of this term has been given in the Message as it relates to God, or LIFE, then. Here, we give you the spiritual meaning of "Person" as it is used in the statement "God is no respecter of persons." Person, then, symbolizes a fleeting outer appearance of an inner mental condition which is temporary and changing as it develops and transfers its learned and Changing qualities to The Spirit for its fulfillment. God, then, respects its images, not its vessel.

Flesh and blood simply cannot enter the Kingdom of God. Sooner or later, You have to throw-off the old man or woman and put on the New - "behold, I make all Things New." The trouble with most people, Persons, then, is that they do not know, or "know," themselves - they simply do not know who and what they are, their True-Identity, then. And out of the small percentage that do, Do Nothing About It. "Knowing" Yourself and Doing All Things with Yourself for Yourself and Others is the most rewarding Thing One can Do! "See"?

A "Person," Spiritually, symbolizes and stands as Life, as the Expression of LIFE.

Unless LIFE was First we - the Whole of Humanity in general and each of us in particular - never would have been at all. We are what we are because LIFE is what Life is. Everything which we do LIFE has first made it possible for us to do. Every act of ours, as soon as it is done is grasped into a great world of activity which comes from LIFE, and there the influence and effect of our action is determined. Everything that we know, is true already before our knowledge of it. Our knowing it is only the opening of our mind to receive what is and always has been a part of LIFE's Being - The Universal Truth. Every word, act, deed or temper or life is good or bad as it is in harmony or out of

harmony with LIFE.

A Real Person, then, is the one in harmony with LIFE and Life - The ones who dance the only dance there is and sing the only song there is and know the only Truth there is. All the rest are just people.

Our next term is “Arena of Life” a term in use in the Book of the Two Ways. This symbolizes the Quaternaries - the Four Earths of the Universe or the Four Lower Heavens of the Universe. In the proper order They are the East (etheric), the North (astral), the South (planetary), the West (physical). These quaternaries being the abodes of both physical-spirit Life are both earths and heavens. On These Four, the Mind of Christ, and its Power and Wisdom, hold sway. It is therefore the Task of Mankinds to Activate the Mind of Christ and receive its accompanying power and wisdom to Unite the Opposites thereby fulfilling the Lower Tasks of Prepare, Follow, Come. It is in This “Arena of Life” that the Opposites are engaged in a Life (Light) and Death (darkness) struggle. And it is from this “Arena of Life” that the New Worlds will be made manifest. About these New Worlds, it is the people who will ask, How? And it is the “Real Person” who will supply the answer.

Next on my list is “Calamities.” Here we are addressing phenomena such as occur under the Psychical Laws and the



Physical Laws. These being such as Earthquakes, Hurricanes, Pain, dis-ease, suffering and so forth. “Calamities,” then, is symbolic of the breaking up of forms and releasing the contained life for wider Action in fresh forms. This, then, is The “Now” Flow of Energy everywhere within the Universe of form and structure for the express Purpose of “Action.”

In Matthew 24:6, 7, a chapter of the gospel added by the church fathers and scribes for purposes already given in much detail in the Message of I Paul, Jesus is made to say “And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: See that ye be not troubled: For all these Things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.” The next verse says simply “All these are the beginning of sorrows.” Anybody could have spoken these words – then, before then, and even now – for it has always been so, since the original Creation of Things in East-303.

This “quote” contributed to Jesus simply emphasizes that the human evil of wars and the phenomena of earthquakes in Nature (natural calamities) with all the sufferings involved are but, in truth, means to an end, and are not to distress the “Obedient Faith-full.” Such

“happenings” are neither final nor do they affect the True-Self, the spirit. We are to recognize in these troubles certain processes whereby the progress of The Good, The Right, and The True are finally accomplished.

No one Faith-full can suffer anything except LIFE be with them. No calamity, no disease or dis-ease, no pain is or can ever be the mark of displeasure of Spirit - on the contrary it is just the opposite - It is the summons to come up higher. There is no strength in sorrow. And it takes strength to “come up higher” and that’s why Paul could glory in his infirmities and why, when weak, he was strong.

Our next subject is “Song and Dance,” and no my dear brothers and sisters I Paul am not here referring to a Vaudeville Act.

Song and Dance symbolizes a Mind and Heart synchronization of Activities harmoniously aligned with the Universal Plan of LIFE for Life.

Make the dispelling of worldly love your true and perfect tune, and set your heart and mind a dancing to the Truth, for these are the only song and dance there is.

Next is “Daughters of Men.” In Genesis it says “the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of All that they choose.” This was

written at a time of male supremacy otherwise it would and should have read, “the Sons and Daughters of God” and “The sons and daughters of Men.”

This term, then, symbolizes the descent of the Lower Minds into the Human Bodies of Men and Women. It also symbolizes the lower emotions and desires and affections which proceeded from the Fallen-Minds embracing of Physical-Material Desires over Obedience to LIFE.

The Cost of all this was staggering for it resulted in the loss of Immortality, and the Command to “Go and Multiply” was a curse upon Woman and Man alike – The more of us the more evil we create for, and by, ourselves and, hence, it has always since been so. We started out here as the Victims of our own Punishment and we keep right on continuing to do so. We keep right on day in and day out, messing with matters that Do Not Matter and we hardly pay any Attention at all to the ones that Do Matter. We are, collectively, really not as intelligent as we think we are. Individually, we really do not “know” what we Think we know. “See”?

Our next subject is “Entombment.” This symbolizes the cessation of Physical Existence and does not necessarily mean Burial of the Physical-Material corpse. It symbolizes a detention of the spirit with the wasted physical vessel for a period of Determination prior to the spirit evolution into

the higher planes. It indicates the Place where the Light and the Darkness Meet – the Place of the Spirit of Death.

“Entombment” Also indicates a Time for Rejoicing or a Time for Sorrow. The Righteous (Strong) Rejoice for the Righteous Ones (Obedient Faithful) while the Unrighteous (weak) mourn for the Unrighteous (The Disobedient and Faithless) for these are but the Dead burying the Dead.

You see, it is the Faithless, the Disobedient, the Unrighteous, the Uncaring, the Unsharing, the Unloving, the “dead,” then, who bury themselves in “self” and Entomb themselves. So, regardless of whether here and now or there and Future, it is always the Dead who bury the Dead and complete the Entombment of the True-Self in the Darkness. “Come, follow me, and let the dead bury the dead.” Very good advice, as is, “There is no Strength in Sorrow.”

Next is the “Face of God.” This is a symbol of the Highest Consciousness of The Real. The Truth of The One Mind revealed to The Multiplicity of Minds.

“Turn us again, O Lord; and cause Thy Face to shine, and we shall be saved” Psalms 80:3.

The Lower Minds aspire, turning from the Lower Nature to the Ideal within, confident that in the Knowledge

of The Real lies Freedom from error, “mistake,” and illusion of the Lower Mind “stuck in” the “self.” To “see” the Face of God means to Fully Activate The Mind of Christ and “See” the LIGHT.

And while we are on the subject, we will explain “The Faces of Man-Woman.” This is a symbol of the Lower Mind and the undeveloped mental qualities possible and necessary to Unite, in harmony, with The Higher Mind of the True-Self.

“We all, with unveiled face reflecting as a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory” (II Corinthians 3:18).

To the Spiritually Adept this means that when the qualities are Freed in their mental aspects from the illusion of “Separateness” and “self” then they reflect the Unity and Harmony of The One Higher Self and become transmuted on to higher planes of Consciousness.

Next is “Gate” (Narrow). The “gate” of The Way is straight and The Gate is Narrow and few there are that find it, symbolizes the True-Self in its receptive capacity for vibrations from below and from above. It becomes thereby the entrance which the lower consciousness rises to the higher and beyond.

As I Paul said, he will lead you to The Gate but he cannot take you through it - that's your task and requires your Total, Honest and Sincere Effort, which includes, the following of the directions of the Way to The Way, Exactly. Therefore, the True-Self is The Gate between The Way and "The Way." "See"?

Next is Logos (Reason-Speech). We know from the Message of I Paul that this is the Greek "word" or "word" (Logia). Spiritually, "Logos," symbolizes the Supreme Spirit manifesting on The Absolute-Ultimate Plane of Consciousness as the Divine outpouring of Life and Form, - the utterance of Creative Energy. The Three Primary Aspects of The Logos are Will, Wisdom, and Action. There are also three Logoi or outpourings of Life-Spirit, Man-Woman, Other (this "Other" refers to All life other than Spirit and Man-Woman, or "Mind"Less life).

Next is "Charity." Although much of this is well explained in the Message of I Paul, we will add a bit more here for your understanding. "Charity" is a symbol of the element of Universal Love which must always be in The Active Truth-Goodness which nourishes and builds up the body and the mind.

In the Universal Plan, the Divine scheme of Things are so arranged and established that when the Lower Self, out

of love of truth and goodness, voluntarily offers the best it has to serve the Higher Self (spirit) then these qualities are transmuted and become as sustenance for it. The offering of the best effort possible by the imperfect lower mind is accepted by the higher mind provided the lower mind has not acted out of a self-seeking consideration or of a reward to follow well doing.

Love the love that loves you everlastingly - for the more you love the more you desire to love - so, “when we ‘spirits’ hold fast by love, Love by its Spirit remakes us, then we are Home in the Light and joy is ours.” The Spirit of LIFE breathes us out towards Love and Good-Works and it inhales us into Rest and Joy; and that is eternal life, just as in our mortal life we breathe out the air which is in us and breathe in fresh air. “See”?

Our next term is “Patriarchs.” These are symbols of successive stages of growth in the evolution of the Consciousness within which stages the powers, wisdom, and virtues are developed and Realized, by which, eventually the True-Self is unsheathed with the Minds United and One, Free to pursue the Spiritual Causes. Each CPM, then, represents a single level of Consciousness to be attained to by the Lower Mind and the Physical Being - you and me, then, in order to walk after, walk with, and finally

walk In the Spirit. This, I am sure you can “See,” after all, it is but a very simple matter of The Minds. Incidentally, all the “Patriarchs” are Chief Patriarchs. A long trip always begins with the first step. Without it there is no trip.

Next is “Spiritual Understanding.” This is symbolized as the spiritual vision awakened in the lower mind which begins to Recognize the inner meanings of the sacred writings; for the meanings are already engraved on the secret tablets of the heart of Man-Woman and in the Minds of their True-Selves.

In the Kingdom of Christ All Things transcendable are manifesting inwardly, upwardly, and spiritually. The True Spiritualism of The Christ is written in the hearts of Men-Women and is known as The Book of Life and also in the mind of spirit, man’s True-Self and is known as The Book of The Two Ways. It is in the hearts and minds of man-woman and spirits only that LIFE writes and only the Obedient Faithful are Capable of Understanding The Books of LIFE and the Way of the LIGHT.

Our next word is “Amazement.” This symbolizes the process of Awakening to the Message of I Paul, the Book of Life, and the Book of the Two Ways.

Next is “Caiaphas” (High Priest). This symbolizes the falsity, the Legalities and Formalities of all religions which



have to be broken up and done away with before the Christ, the LIGHT Spirit then, can burst forth in the Minds. This is the “place all things on the shelf, temporarily,” request of the Message of I Paul. One needs the Open-mindedness and the “I know nothing” attitude to become a True Christian Spiritualist and a holder of the Activated Mind of Christ. This is the reason that reading and studying other ways is wasteful – they tend to take up space in the Lower Mind as just more waste. But, when one fully understands the Message of I Paul, they can read all the Spiritual, Metaphysical, Esoterical, and so forth, books in the World and Totally Understand them and know their worth or worthlessness instantly. The choice, of course, is yours. You can be a high priest if you so choose to waste your life and your mind on all the matters that do not Matter. “See”?

Next is the “Call of Spirit.” This term is a symbol of The Admonition of The Conscience. Many there are who “hear” The Call but few are those who heed it. Those who do usually find the Yellow Brick Road.

Next is “Revival,” a word the religionists banter around freely. “Revival” symbolizes the Restoration of the Lower or Fallen Mind to its Original Predestined Status in both the Fully Human state and the Fully Spiritual state. “Be not conformed of this world but be transformed by the renewal

(revival, change) of your Mind.”

We need also to mention “Marriage” here in connection with “Revival.” “Marriage” is our 69th “word” herein, which appropriately represents the 6th Pillar, the House of Unity. In order to Unite (marry) with the True-Self you must first slay the False-Self and bury the old man or old woman facade and all the masks of “self” once, and once and for all, otherwise the Marriage Revival will always end in divorce, which means a being together but separated “existence” in the Darkness, even Earthbound. This I believe is Clear enough for All to “See.”

True marriages are not made in heaven! What Wisdom sends out and Soul calls back is a True Marriage - one made in the Kingdom of LIFE and Predestined for Eternity in the LIGHT of the Supreme Spirit.

As surely as Physical Death is a one-way ticket to the graveyard, so too, is a Spiritual-Marriage a one-way ticket to the Kingdom of LIFE. “Here,” we are male-female, and such marriages are always, even if there is no parting until death, Inconclusive. “There,” we are Spirits - always and in All Ways, Inclusive. “See” now?

Next on my list is “Cain.” This is a symbol of the Center of our Personality - the “I,” the “me,” the “mine” feeling in the lower mind, which causes the illusion of separateness

and alone-ness and represents the lower self in “self.” “Cain” also represents the “poor-me” fallen and uncreative lower mind empty of common sense and dulled senses. It symbolizes hate, anger and foolish jealousy also. And “Cain,” finally, represents the “Earthbound” forever “tilling the ground” he was ejected from in his heart and mind - truly a victim of his own punishment. So, the next time you have the urge to Judge someone, compare, weigh and measure yourself against “Cain” - faithless, effortless, helpless and Home-less.

Who are you Really? “Peter,” “Cain” or Christ’s? “See”?

I Paul, can only speak for myself and I am exactly where I am supposed to be, On the Way to “The Way” doing All the Things I am supposed to DO, leaving matters alone that Do Not Matter and therefore not in the way, not a Barrier and not a stumbling block to any of my sisters and brothers and especially not to my True-Self.

Of course you have already guessed our next term, “Abel” (keeper of sheep). “Abel” is a symbol of that dawning element in us that works by love. This element is a faint correspondency towards the True-Self and its higher consciousnesses and “turns us” to become Righteous, a key to the fulfilling of our dreams and aspirations, our sheep,

then, which are not all in The Fold, “Yet”!

Until my spirit brought forth the God-Loving element (Abel) in me, the “self”-loving “me” (Cain) contained her in my unrighteousness. But when she brought forth “Abel” in me, or unanimity with LIFE, then, she divorced herself from that forced marriage with “Cain” which was wise in its own conceit and selfish purposes, and married me, Abel, the ABLE One. Certainly, you can “See” This. It’s really a very simple matter of a renewal and revival of the Mind, wherein, a change takes place and “Abel” slays “Cain.”

Our next word is “Sabbath.” This one word symbolizes such a long list of particulars, All The Way from God resting on the seventh day to the sleep of Angels, that I will digest it and give you only the pertinent symbolic meanings. Spiritually, “Sabbath,” symbolizes an earned Mental resting whenever a physical, emotional or material Barrier or Bad Habit has been conquered, or whenever a pair of Opposites are United and Spiritualized. “Sabbath” also signifies that short “shutting-down” of the Lower Mind in High Trance Meditation. It also is a symbol of the restful bliss and quiet Peace that comes with the serious Contemplation of the Practicing of the Presence of God.

Next is “Ananias.” This signifies a messenger of The LIGHT, an Angel in disguise, sent for the express purpose of

## Administering to the Needs of One Called to do the work of The Christ.

Next on my list is the “Cana Wedding Feast.” This is a symbol of the Union of Truth and Love (Water and Wine). The “six waterpots” represent the six consciousnesses to be made full use of. The turning of the water into wine symbolically signifies the substitution of the love element for the Task-Duty or moral element.

The story of the Wedding Feast and the account of turning water into wine has reference to the final initiation of Jesus. The water was the Truth of Jesus’ life and the wine was the Spirit that moved him. The beginning of a new era of “Man Regenerate” of the spiritualization of his own being and the new era of Phenomena which is therefore mystically called the “changing” or the “turning” of “water” into “wine.”

What you need to “See” here is This:

Jesus, the Chosen One, was the First Man to Receive the Spirit – the First Fruit, then, Here on W-303, the “Second Adam,” then, esoterically and Spiritually Thinking, then. Thus he was the “Preparation” (initiation) Example and the “Following” (spiritualized) Example for All Men and Women on this Spaceship – the Example, then to Prepare and Follow – the Task, then, to Emulate – so that you are

free to Come without Sacrifice. “See”? For Christ’s sake and yours, I Paul hopes so. After All, Christ did Exert all That Effort just for you and You and “me.” See?

Now it is your turn. You can begin by putting your hand to “The Plow,” and never looking back, you can stop “Raising Cain” and Raise a bit more of “Abel” in your life. Only God knows what it is you are procrastinating for, or what you are afraid of. You can do it. Try!

Our next word is “Wine,” obviously. “Wine” is the symbol for Spirit and All Things Spiritual.

“Wine” is also a symbol of the Highest Levels of Consciousness, the Wisdom Levels and the spiritual life and Truth. When “Wine and Oil” are grouped together they symbolize Love and Truth as the Life in a True Adept. Wine and Oil when taken by a non-Adept intoxicates and paralysis rules the Lower Mind by enslaving it, thereby absenting all spirit activity and the Lower Mind, regardless of prior progress, reverts back to its carnal or fallen state and a reinitiation needs to begin anew. These Repetitive “starting-overs” are waste and but drive the Neophyte deeper and deeper into the recesses of the dark shadows of the “what could have been,” “IF.”

“Wine” is the mysterious vitality and spiritual knowledge and energy of the True Adept who, being Fully

Human is a partaker of “strong-meat” and, who also, being Fully Spiritual is also a partaker of “strong drink.”

This is why, as the Message of I Paul states, True Adepts or Spirit Guides, then, have “the” Freedom to do as they please, for wine and oil and strong meat and strong drink are Joys and Satisfactions to them, while to others, they are sadness and dis-ease. “See”?

We have already given you the esoteric significance of “Evil” and “Evil mind.” Now we will address “Physical Evil” - (spiritual evil). These signify Dis-Ease and Disease. Dis-ease caused by the self-Imposed acquirement of diseases, contagious or otherwise and the contracting of debilitating Addictions, dis-eases, then, through Carnal Lust and Wants.

“Knowingly” subjecting oneself to the possibility of contracting such Diseases or contracting such Dis-Eases, then, rises them above Physical Evils and makes them spiritual evils - those perpetrated against, not only one’s Physical Well-Being but those that jeopardize the Well-Being of the True-Self.

The Highest Physical Evil is Death brought about by “self,” “wants” and suicide - slowly or instantly?

The Highest Evil that can be perpetrated against one’s



spirit and cited as a spiritual evil, is Darkness. Darkness and Earth-boundedness are Spirit Dis-eases, then. There is, of course, as we are well aware of No Evil Spirit or spirits. All evil wears a human face, but all Evil affects one's True-Self, the spirit You. You see, there are no secrets, simply because, Someone always knows, not only what you do, but what you Think. "See"? I certainly hope so, because sooner or later your evils will catch up to you and you cannot escape "Being" the Victim of your own Punishment. As the Message subtly informs us, it is much better "Doing" than "Being." The Way to avoid physical evils that the Lower Mind can carry over to the Higher Mind is to invoke the Law of Formative Causation into the NOW - work at the replacing of all the bad habits of the Now with permanent good habits in the Present and eternal Now. These New, Now, and good habits are conquests that create more conquests over the physical body's "wants" and the "self's" attempts to dominate your thoughts with matters that do not matter. Hence each newly acquired change and exchange of bad habits for good habits in the Now is not only a Now Conquest but a Future Conquest enabling the True-Self to Fulfill its Needs, Tasks and Goals which, incidentally, are also your tasks and Goal if you are following the Way to "The Way." Yes, Habit Creates Conquest and Conquest Fulfills the Spirit in all ways possible when these Habits are



for the Good, the Right, and the True. After all, you are a spirit inhabiting a body and when you can grasp that truth the Ordinances of Formative Causation and Reciprocity can begin to “grasp you” and work in your interest and Well-Being.

When you begin from a fallen, a failed posture, it is both difficult to fail or to fall much lower, but some are successful in doing exactly that. “See”? One other thing that you need to keep in mind is that you are trying to improve the Real you, the True you, which we call the True-Self, the You, then, and the current you, the illusionary you, then, that you do your damndest to preserve - and that is truly the epitome of “Waste.” “See”? Unless you Unite “The” Opposites you cannot fully discern the Message of I Paul. Spiritual Matters can only be discerned spiritually, not by a man or woman, not by a religion or a religious mind, not by a fallen mind nor a mind with “self” contamination, but you can discern the literal meanings of The Message and when you put these into the full, the honest, and the sincere practice of those values, qualities, principles and so forth, your effort is then, manifest Conquest, and that created Conquest is the element by which you receive results resulting in your possibilities of becoming Fully Human and Fully Spiritual and Activating the Mind of Christ and becoming the Message of I Paul in All your Words, Acts, and

Deeds and then you can throw the Now empty, blank pages away because you are Now Really You here in the Flesh and you then can discern spiritually. “See,” Now?

I hope you can “see,” that with the I Paul, communications, I have discerned The Message for you. Now All you have to do really is to put it into everyday practice and reap the Results. Let them, then, who do have eyes “See,” and ears, “hear”!

We will have much more to say about these Physical evils, that when directed to ward the spiritual self they are converted into evils that plague the True-Self as spiritual evils, when “The 13” get organized.

Next is “Garments” (vessels-sheaths). This is a symbol of the Physical Bodies of Man-Woman, the Vessels of the Spirit.

“To give unto them (the captives) a garland for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; That they may be called trees of Righteousness, the plantings of the LIGHT that LIFE might be glorified” (Isaiah 61:3, my discernment).

The spirits are liberated from captivity to the lower nature (you), and are given higher qualities in exchange for the lower illusions - love and bliss for sorrow and suffering,

the garment of Wisdom for the trammels of ignorance, aspects (minds) of the Divine Life, instituted by the Supreme Spirit for the fulfillment of the Universal Plan of God.

Our indwelling self or spirit incarnate, went forth of Wisdom invested of etheric, astral and cosmos attributes of Mind and Purity, and having supremacy over the Lower self nature; also endowed with devotion to Truth and wearing Wisdom's garment to shed these attributes and qualities upon the Lower Mind for the Purposes of Uniting as one to await the Call of Soul. You see, Man-Woman are essentially a spirit. When that is totally realized and respected, the spirit within will, when allowed by the cooperation of the lower mental faculties, begin to weave a garment of great beauty and of an unimaginable intricacy of design worthy of its God-Like origin and Nature - that glorious New body that can enter into the Kingdom of LIFE.

The Physical body as a "Garment" symbolizes "opinions, prejudices, assumptions, confining notions, narrowness of ideas, wild imaginings, fears, habits of low form and low thought, gossip, criticism, etc."

These limitations of mind enclose the spirit in their useless garment of matters that do not matter, often very difficult to get rid of and usually often painful. They usually

have to be broken up by the lower nature being stripped of its garment through pain, trials, and sorrows. Once broken up the True-Self and Truth and Love are free to exert their powers upon the Lower Mind which now aspires to rise up to its original status in the Universal Scheme of The Supreme Mind, and put on the Robe of the Christ.

Next is LIFE, “The Father” or the Great Invisible One. This is a symbol to indicate Absolute Being - The Ultimate of Ultimate - the First or Unmanifest Spirit-Mind - The Source of All there Is. No conception is possible of Potential Deity, it is a twice unknown mystery to the lower minds.

From the LIFE (Father) proceeds the LIGHT (Son), the Second Mind-Spirit, LIFE Manifest and limited in its Creation.

Jesus calls the Life-Force Our Father. My Father worketh and I work. Then All The Working of the LIFE-Force in the past - even in what to our perception has been most gross and dreadful - has been the Working of A Mind and A Will which means well by us and could not do otherwise, for it is our Father. We must work, that LIFE’S work may be done and our own destiny be fulfilled. And we know it - we all know it. There is that within us all that makes us know that that alone is great and worthy of human reverence and Obedience and in excellence of character and

deed which is the very outcome of a life spent in the service of others and objects wider and higher than the purely selfish and personal.

A Christian Gnostic had this to say about the Life-Force. There was, he says, at first nothing whatever that is begotten; the Father was in solitude, unbegotten, not circumscribed either by space or time, with none to counsel him, with no kind of substance that can be apprehended by any ordinary mode of apprehension. He was in solitude, as they say quiescent, and Reposing in himself Alone. But inasmuch as he had the faculty of generation, it seemed good to him at last to bring to birth and to put forth what he had in himself that was fairest and most perfect – for he was no lover of solitude. For he was, the writer says, All Love, but love is not love, unless there be an object to Love.

Our next is “The Ether.” This Ether is symbolic of many things – the Highest Plane of Being. The Highest Plane of Manifestation and the Fifth Plane of The Above. It is symbolic of the element of creation.

Out of The Supreme Spirit the Ether Rose, out of ether air, from air fire, from fire water, from water earth, from earth plants, from plants food, from food the germ of life, from the germ man.

Then we have the “Ethereal World.” This is a Spiritual

Symbol of The Universe of The Spirit which precedes the Higher Universe of Spirits which precedes the Lower Universe containing the Earths (heavens) and their Life forms and structures. These Worlds or Earths are, in their established Order, the Etheric-East; the Astral-North; the Planetary-South; and the West which is Physical and the last of the Collective 303's. The Collective 303's are but preludes to The New Worlds. (This subject is covered in CPM #33 and its Addendums and are matters to be discussed by "The 13".)

Next is "Backbone" (Spine). Spiritually this is a Symbol of Aspiration or the "Tree" of divine life in the human being and its "Fruits" signify the Human Mind and its faculties. The "Backbone" also signifies Courage, the quality necessary for Conquest, an Attribute of Divine Consciousness, which signifies fearlessness.

Our next subject is "Silence." Much has already been given to you on this subject in the Message of I Paul so I am going to touch mostly on other aspects of this very inclusive term. The curse of Silence is Chaos and Chaos does not necessarily denote or infer noise, din, clatter, etc. The Mind speaks in Silence. The Lower Mind is Chaotic Silence.

Be Still and Listen! to the Voice of God (the Silence). Spiritual Symbolism is the silent voice of the Language of

Silence. Silence is a symbol of The Supreme Spirit, the Great Life-Force of Creation. Creation is the Silence of Love Energy in Action. Thought is a powerful silence. Death is a Silent Spirit. The LIGHT is the Power, the Wisdom, the Will and the Action of “The” Silence.

The Great Mystery of The Silence is Grace. The Darkness signifies the silent silence.

One who has ventured forth and walked in the spirit on the Spiritual Realm planes and has safely returned always does so in Silence as a Pretender. In the earlier Orders they were called the Silent Ones, later on they were known as Mystics, a Pretension, that in truth, was no Pretense at all, because they were Mystics in the sense that they were more than just mystics - they were True Christian Spiritual Adepts, Spirit Guides, then, pretending to be just a man (or woman as the case may have been). It is the goal of the “The 13” to become the newest Pretenders or the ones of “The Silence.”

Our next subject is “Anointing with Oil.” Esoterically “Oil” designates Divine Love. The Anointing with Oil is a symbol of the endowment of the human self with Divine Love, arousing sympathy with All beings.

“Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies; thou hast anointed my head with oil; my cup

runneth over.”

The Supreme Spirit has prepared for The Lower Mind the “Fruits of the Spirit” on the Higher Planes to be the Food of the Spirit, and the desires (enemies) have been transmuted to this purpose. The Divine Love has been bestowed upon the aspiring lower mind and Wisdom has filled its Understanding.

Our Next term is “The Will of Man-Woman.” Esoterically the Will, originally, was the Spiritual Center of relative existence in the lower mind. From this center the Higher Determinations of choice emanated, and these derived their power and direction from the Mind of Christ, the Will that Willed above all wills for the Well-Being of the All in ALL.

It’s impossible to imagine a Freer Will than this Will but the “self” did and asserted it in Disobedience and the Fallen Mind was its Result and Death its tragedy.

Now, that which may be called the lower, illusive, or inverted will is merely the blind self-assertion of the desire-want principle which dominates the lower mind and prevents the expression of the True Will.

Now we know that the LIGHT is the Created Image of LIFE but not the Mind of LIFE, the three Omni’s then, and



more, even. We also know that the Christ, the LIGHT, then, is the Wisdom and the Power of LIFE and that the Mind of Christ is the Will of God. So, esoterically, we say that the Mind of Christ is not “the” mind but the Will of the Will of “The Mind” that Wills above all wills or a mind of Will or Will-Full Mind Endowed with the Power and Wisdom of LIFE, then. So the Mind of Christ is much more than A mind, then, hence we know it as the Will that Wills for the Well-Being of All in ALL.

Therefore for me Prepare and Follow means slay “self,” Activate the Mind of Christ, in my mind and Come - something I have done on numerous “occasions” or “happenings.”

Hence, without the Fully Activated Mind of Christ, one has not the Will, the Power, the Wisdom, the Way, then, to Transcend onto the Higher Planes of Existence with and in the Spirit as a Transient Traveler with the Knowledge, Understanding, and Intelligence of Spiritual Matters necessary for returning Safely, Sane, Sound and Silently to the Earth Planes. You will never truly know here, what it is, means, to be Really Alive until you have Fully Activated the Mind of Christ and become a Traveler yourself. This, then, is the unfolding of a dream, such as the one mentioned in Teaching #1, Page 1, paragraph 3, “The Structural System of

The Family of I Paul.” “See”? As we have said all along, it is a very simple matter of the Minds.

It is safe to say that the only things transcendable on this Earth, any Earth, then, is the Mind of Man-Woman and the Will - and these we know directly in ourselves. We are on the inside of things because we Think and Will, and we “know” everything to be a part of the ONE involution-evolution of life or Will. There is no explanation of the Will, it Itself is not known by the mere human intellect, although its different assertions may be. As soon, then as we have grasped the notion of volition as the keynote of the self, we cease to explain ourself by Things outside of ourself. We have also at the same time done away with All the external explanations of this Earth and are Prepared enough to Find the Reality of this world in the One Will that is manifesting itself in ourself and in all Things. I must take to myself all guilt for my finite existence and have willed to live, willed to conform to this world. It is literally true that liberty is a mystery. As finite will I was enslaved, but as Infinite Will as a holder of The Fully Activated Mind of Christ I am Free to “Come” and go and “do” as I Will. The finite will, the “self,” must be made to die unto itself, and we need to affirm in our mind the eternal Ideas of The Infinite Will. Whatever else Spiritualism is, it is first and foremost a perception of the radical evil that is in the finite will - the “self.”

And those in “self” are also pretenders, pretending to be a body, then, and not a spirit inhabiting a body. As long as you go on with this pretension, this facade of “self,” this illusion that you are something other than what you Truly Are then Nothing and no one can Change you and your divinity remains still-born in you. “See”?

Our next subject is Universal Plan. None of us on this Plane, whether in “self” or “in spirit” can “know” this Universal Plan in detail for who knows the Mind of God? We do know some things from the Message of I Paul though that allows us to look upon this Plan as a Cycle of Life in which the human body is formed for the experience and individualization of the minds of such life and the spirits that constitute the True Life of these bodies or vessels.

At the commencement of the Cycle of Life, the Supreme Spirit emanated the dual principles, Spirit and matter. These two principles produced the Four Planes of manifestation outside the Kingdom of God, which introduced the duality of opposites, higher and lower. These opposite conditions were for the Recognition of the Lower minds for determining of the Good, the Right and the True of All Things.

When the Lower minds disobeyed and chose the Bad, the wrong, and the false side of things, the minds fell lower

than intended and “self” replaced the Free-Will of the Supreme Spirit and death became the lot of the human being. Then the spirit came through the Grace of God and death was defeated.

Now the opposite Conditions are for the Recognition of the Lower mind in determining the good and evil issues of Actions to be taken, and to be left alone. For it is through the choice exercised that the growth of the minds, the True-Self, is accomplished as they progress through the Cycles of Life in Involution-Evolution. The Choice then is an individual one but right or wrong it very definitely affects the Collectivity of the True-Self. “See, Now”?

Now that you know that the Water Signals symbolize Truth Signs we will list them for you. And this being the Year of Honesty in Conjunction with the Eternal Year of Love perhaps you will do those Things necessary by paying strict attention to matters that do matter and make good use of your Water Signals soon - real soon.

The Revised Water Signals for The Family of LIFE and LIGHT - Virginia Beach, Virginia and Waquoit-Falmouth, Massachusetts branches.

“T”	303-266	(Theodore M. Wrobel)
-----	---------	----------------------

“DH”	484-662	(David J. Hultgren)
------	---------	---------------------

"G"	713-626	(Gardner Miller)
"DL"	043-033	(Daniel Lynch)
"AB"	012-330	(Adrian Braun)
"MB"	131-033	(Maryann Burtis)
"Mb"	132-033	(Maureen Braun)
"JB"	902-626	(John Buskey)
"MEG"	662-303	(Meg Buskey)
"JN"	266-662	(Jean Miller)
"GD"	704-603	(Greg Dorsey)
"SD"	194-033	(Susan Dorsey)
"LC"	113-330	(Linda Chapman)
"Dh"	485-662	(David R. Hultgren)
"MM"	062-033	(Matthew Murphy)
"BN"	025-662	(Betty Newall)
"LN"	114-662	(Lewis Newall)
"TM"	214-266	(Thomas Morris)
"MP"	013-330	(Marty Phillips)
"JA"	101-033	(John Adam)

“N”	662-330	(Norman Harrington)
“JT”	102-662	(Jane Tant)
“AS”	103-330	(Ana Sanford)
“LK”	303-033	(Louise Korisky)
“EJ”	508-662	(Edward Jacobs)
“JL”	299-626	(Jeff Lovero)
“GZ”	403-330	(Greg Zumbiel)
“EA”	662-888	(Ed Anderson)
“MN”	626-881	(Michael Noga)
“JM”	408-303	(Joseph Michaels)
“DMc”	142-662	(Don McMaster)
“SMc”	320-033	(Sandy McMaster)
“EC”	330-366	(Ed Centrella)
“Deb L”	882-330	(Debra Labossiere)
“VP”	256-266	(Vernon Parris)
“PW”	662-808	(Pati Wright)
“VH”	033-717	(Vincent Hayes)
“GT”	720-303	(Gail Thurman)

“JW”	652-626	(Janice Wells)
“LA”	241-033	(Lorin Appel)
“RA”	929-662	(Roz Appel)
“TG”	440-033	(Tim Gallager)
“MH”	469-662	(Marcia Huyette)
“AK”	640-330	(Ann Kessler)
“LeonB”	662-909	(Leon Barnes)
“BP”	033-424	(Alberta Paul)
“LeL”	099-330	(Leroy Lowell)
“BbT”	909-033	(Billy Bob Taylor)
“JBl”	990-636	(Joe Black)
“GB”	709-033	(George Belott)
“JkG”	929-662	(Joe Gardner)
“AdB”	124-303	(Adam Brooks)
“LiB”	662-303	(Lisa Bradford)
“LaT”	304-626	(Luan Townsend)

I was going to attach these Water Signals to this Communication, but as you can see things do change, and

get Changed all the time.

Our next subject is “Belief.” This signifies union of the lower mind with a percept or concept presented to it. The mind unites with any idea, true or false, if there is no opposing idea already accepted.

Truth utters itself in outward symbols. Belief and Resolution declare themselves in forms. It is the natural law of expression, and so long as the form remains soft and pliant, full of the spirit of the belief or resolution it expresses, all is right. Form and belief are like mind and spirit to one another. But when form hardens into formalism, when the real substance of belief, instead of remaining soft and pliant, grows stiff, and will not let belief grow and enlarge into knowledge and truth, which are the food of belief, then you have got the most crusted and impenetrable armor that can be imagined. Form ought to be the medium through which Truth comes through the inner nature and more belief needs the substance of knowledge to turn the belief into a knowing.

Our next subject is Birth and Death of Forms.

Originally this signified Human birth as the entrance of the minds with its qualities into a new body, or vessel of consciousness, while death was the exit of the minds from a human body (corpse) the first implies the Out-Breathing of



The Spirit and Personality into the physical-material form on the mental-matter, and physical planes, while the latter implied the Inbreathing of the Spirit and the exit of the minds from the vessel which then die and decay. Now, we know that the spirit enters the body at birth and doesn't exit it until three days and three nights after death. The lower mind does exit the body or vessel at the moment of death of the physical vessel and is united with the higher mind of the spirit, compounding, then, as one spirit being with all the mental qualities within and ready for Evolution out of the Earth Planes, "IF."

Next is the "Blessing of God." This signifies the Mind of Christ operating in and through the human consciousness. When the lower mind has found its ideal, and determines to serve it and acts in that determination, God's blessing is secured and the Mind of Christ is Activated.

Our next subject is "Blind Man or Woman." This is a symbol of the lower mind totally immersed in the concerns of the Lower Nature and completely devoid of Spiritual Perception. These are the blind leading the blind types. They are also the ones who have eyes but do not "see."

Next is "Yoke of Jesus." This is a symbol of the cheerful bearing of the troubles of life, through love of goodness and truth.

“Come unto me All ye that labor and are heavy laden and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart; and ye shall find rest for your souls; for my yoke is easy and my burden is light.”

This invitation of Jesus was to those who were oppressed under another yoke, That of The Romans. This saying though was both a call for supporters of his revolutionary movement and a call for the Kingdom of God. Since we have explained the Revolutionary Call in earlier communications we will give you the other side here.

Jesus, speaking for the Kingdom, extends a Spiritual invitation to all those who are oppressed with the cares of life, and full of worldly aims. He points out the advantage of resting the mind upon the Ideal which is above the lower ambitions (the Kingdom Now) and affections. The “taking of the yoke” signifies the willing and cheerful acceptance of the ideals of righteousness and truth - burdens as the lower nature (soul) views them - yet which have the power to transform life and environment into a Kingdom of Joy rather than the present prison. Jesus, then, was for Freedom NOW and Forever.

Next on my list is “Poor in Spirit.” This is a symbol of those qualities of the lower mind which has rid themselves of the lower carnal desires and been filled by spiritual

righteousness, knowledge, goodness, love and truth. Those who are the Poor in Spirit, then, are the fully human and fully spiritual ones, the ones who are forced to Act Natural then because they are more Spiritual than they are Physical, mentally, and the “poorer” they become the richer they are. “See”? Some get so poor, even, they are forced into “Pretending” or in “Acting out” their physical-material nature. Now can you “See”? And if you do, then do not be afraid to have nothing for you will end up with everything and richer beyond your wildest imaginings or dreams.

Our next subject is “World.” Esoterically this is a symbol of the spirit in its lowest aspect, the lower mental planes; the planes of phenomena, forms, and illusions. It is the plane where Involution–Evolution begin. It is also the only Plane where both Life and Death occur, being forms of phenomena and illusion.

“The World” the name by which we describe the connected elements of experience in general, is regarded not merely as connected causally or otherwise from end to end, it is regarded as a whole. And these two, “Truth” (the aim of intellectual endeavor) and “The World,” the unity of experience which lies beyond the causal connection of its facts – confront one another, and demand some further whole which shall include them both. These two wholes

must become One in LIFE.

That the world is a phenomenon of mind is the fundamental thought of the highest philosophy, Ancient and Modern, and that philosophy is accordingly in its essence idealism. Mind is invisible nature - nature is mind made visible. Mind is the inner side of all that is outside, outward, then, the Real working principle in all that is actual, as all that is outward is but its representation of itself, all that is actual, the form and means of its self-realization.

Now discern this: “You are not in this world nor are you experiencing anything in connection with it, however dark and dreary, because an Almighty being sent you here without consulting you or without you having anything to do with the matter. That is not the Way Things are Ordered. You are here by the operation of a law, the law of your own nature. Being what you are, you could not choose but come, any more than a plant can help growing.”

Our next word is “Work.” This is a symbol of one’s endeavor to attain perfection, or the whole business of development during the incarnation of our Whole True-Self in the Lower Planes.

I assure you that life as you and I are living it now matters only in relation to the eternal, and every thought we

think and every deed we do, can only be rightly estimated by their spiritual effect.

Our next subject is “Bondage” under the matters of this earth that do not matter. This is a symbol of captivity to wants, lusts, and sensations that do not matter and do nothing to free our minds to exert the effort of Doing the Things in this life that Do Matter to the Life Coming.

“Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world,” Galatians 4:3.

This refers to the infancy of the minds on this plane prior to beginning their spiritual growth towards Unity, during which period the laws of nature, or pressure from without, in the carnal body and its environment alone, stir the activity of the lower mind to feed the wants of the body. As we are well aware, the only way out of this conformity built into us, and which enslaves us in a stuck-in posture, is through a renewal of our minds.

When a person becomes regenerated (transformed) he or she, then enters into a state of Freedom, where before, he or she, was in a state of bondage. It is bondage whenever lusts, wants, illusions, and matters of no matter, have dominion. Freedom, which is not free but earned, comes when the affections of the Good, the Right, the True coupled with Love hold sway over All Matters that do not matter in

the here and NOW.

Human infirmity in moderating and checking the emotions, I name bondage.

Human infirmity in checking, then slaying the “self,” I call slavery.

Human infirmity in casting off “the wants” of the body and paying strict attention to “the needs” of the spirit over such wants, I “know” is darkness.

You see, when you are a prey to your own emotions, your own illusions, your own wants, you are not your own Master, your mind is not your own, but lies at the foot of fortune. Believe me, luck has nothing at all to do with being saved, but you do. In truth you have everything to do with it, even the Choice, and this I name Freedom. “See”?

Our next subject has everything to do with Freedom and all the Qualities, Attributes, and Principles of it - “Born Again.”

“Except a man (woman) be born (again) of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God” - John 3:5.

To be “born again” is symbolic of the Lower Mind raised to the Level of the Higher Mind whether in the body

or out of the body. It matters not.

What Jesus is saying in John 3:5 is, that unless a mind be raised, Righteous and purified by Water (Truth) and Spirit (Fire) it cannot enter into the Kingdom of God, the Light, then, our higher mind where the LIGHT IS, then, Its Mind, then, Its Will, Its Power, and Its Wisdom, then, Its Word, "Voice," then.

You see, the first birth is the entrance of the minds into the Cycle of Life in the Lower World of life and death. When the lower mind "dies" to the lower nature and its "wants" and "illusions," its "self," then, it Unites with the higher mind and lives with and by the spirit, the True-Self. As a fully human and fully spiritual being, then one "is known" to be "born again" in Truth and in Spirit. This is Freedom. This is True Christian Spiritualism. God is Spirit and those who worship God must Worship in Truth and in Spirit. The religionists who cite the use of "water" in John 3:5 as meaning baptism are, as usual "all wet" and "all wrong." They even very conveniently forget that it was John that also says "Jesus baptized none." And that it was Paul who made amends for the few he had, mistakenly so.

Whenever two opposites are united something dies and something new is born again, and again, and again - change, changing, and changed - behold? I make all Things

New! “See”?

Next is “Born out of due time.” This is symbolic of the raising of the Consciousness (lower mind) in its evolution. The state wherein the lower mind is transcended, and one is blinded to the imperfections and limitations of the lower nature by the Truth that both creates and destroys and sets one Free as a born again Spiritual.

“And last of all, as one born out of due time, he appeared to me also” – I Corinthians 15:8.

This is the utterance of one who has attained a direct vision of the Light of the Truth. It refers to that level of consciousness which supervenes when the lower nature is torn asunder and the mind finds expression in due course on the higher levels of Consciousness, or when the Lower Mind begins to “see” again.

Our next term is one that has been grossly twisted and mangled by all the religions to mean just about anything they wish when it will fit their wants and advantage – the “Voice of God.” This is symbolic of the True-Self calling from within to the Lower Mind, the expression of the Conscience then.

“Behold I stand at the door and knock: If any man (woman) hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to



him (her) and will sup with him (her) and he (she) with me. He (she) that overcometh, I will give to him (her) to sit down with me, in my throne, as I also overcame, and sat down with my Father.” Now this comes out of a “book” of the New Testament which I have very little respect for. This “book” has such a multiplicity of meanings that it renders itself meaningless. Yet, there are certain matters within it that can be discerned and the above quote is one of them. This, then, is its discernment:

The Christ speaks from the higher mind, as the Will, the Power, the Wisdom, the Voice, then, of God (not as God). He stands in the True-Self and knocks on the door (mind) of the lower (false) self. If the lower mind “hears” and heeds the Voice, and purifies itself, then the Christ, the LIGHT, then, will open wide the gate to Unity with the higher mind, and these two, joined as one, will Unite with the Mind of Christ for the purpose of “The Happening” of The All in ALL and partake of the Feast of the Kingdom as Victors, Conquerors, then, over the Lower Nature and the enslavement of the vessel. But the Real Victory comes in the being Christed or Christined in the Glorious New Body from the Soul which is, contrary to all religious and other spiritual ignorance, not the End, but the very beginning of a New Life in the New Creation of LIFE now that the Christ has laid the old at his feet.

This, then, my dearest brothers and sisters is a dream unfolded.

And that brings us to our final subject - "Dreams."

If memory serves me correctly, I Paul, believes the Message states that "the Truth is in the bible but the bible is not the Truth." (I Paul.)

Now allow me to tell you that "the Truth is in your dreams but your dreams are not the Truth." (I Paul.)

My next statement is in the form of a question - Do you Understand both of these statements? The one about the scriptures and the one about dreams? Another question - do you know all about Truth and all that that word implies?

On this Earth there are more religions than there are types of Dreams, and collectively, these different religions, their denominations, sects and cults, number more than the myths and fables of this Earth. Myths, fables, sagas, legends, magic, and traditions are the very cornerstones of all these religions and their rites, rituals, dogmas, doctrines, theologies, sacrifices, and so forth. There exist more versions of all the so-called Sacred Writings such as bibles, gospels, scriptures, epistles and so forth, then there are religions, cults, sects in existence today.

In the above paragraph we have four distinct primary

things - Religions, Myths, Scriptures, and Dreams. The point I am leading up to here is the fact that they bear a very close resemblance to each other. Furthermore, religion and magic, visions and dreams, also bear a very close resemblance to each other, and in many cases they are actually identical. On the other hand, visions and hallucinations are both identical in some cases and far removed from any and all resemblance in others while dreams and hallucinations have absolutely nothing whatsoever in common.

Esoterically, “Dreams,” fall into two categories - Physical - Spirit, but these require definition for even a remote beginning towards their Understanding.

“Physical dreams” run the gamut from Chaotic to Sublime.

Chaotic dreams symbolize the false simulating the true, or superstition and all of its falsities. Drugs that disrupt the senses and the imagination are also included under the Symbol of Chaotic Dreams.

“Spiritual Dreams” are also called Dreams of the Spirit or Supreme Dreams in esoteric circles.

Dreams of the Supreme symbolizes pre-perception or foreordination of the Divine scheme or Universal Plan of

God. Dreams of the Spirit symbolize messages from the higher consciousness to the lower consciousness in its (lower mind) aware, alert states or in states of “dreams” (day - self-hypnosis, etc.). These are “dream messages” of the Truth that are for the purpose of both Creation and Destruction of good, and bad, lower mind holdings, “wants,” desires, and so forth. Many of these Dreams of the Spirit are the usage of the Thirty-One Ordinances at higher levels of Consciousness and Acts of Conscience penetrating lower levels of the Consciousnesses.

Perhaps you can “see” that the matters we are dealing with here are, at best, matters intricately complicated in their own right, to and in the minds of all of mankind here. These matters are things such as brains and minds, consciousness and unconsciousness, memories and imaginations, fears and doubts, mental dis-ease and disorders, predestinations and reconquests, senses and sensors, phenomena and illusions, truths and untruths, preconceived ideas, theories, opinions, assumptions and anything and everything else you, I, and anyone else can think of.

To plow through some of this complication let me say this: In the beginning the Lower Mind of Man-Woman was Obedient to the Higher Mind of God, just as the Physical

Body was obedient to its controlling organ, the brain.

Spirit has no brain. It has no Physical body nor the environment requiring one.

The Soul, or the Spirit of Consciousness comes from God. It is the Omniscience or Mind of God. The Soul, or the Spirit of Power comes from God. It is the Omnipotence of God. The Soul, or the Spirit of Presence comes from God. It is the Omnipresence of God.

As “we” can “see,” the spirit of consciousness in man-woman is mind, not brain. There is only ONE MIND but a multiplicity of minds and all of them are Essences of Consciousness emanating from the ONE Mind or Soul, or Spirit of Consciousness. Hopefully “you” can “see” this also.

It is the Power of the Soul and the Presence of the Soul that make these Multiplicities of Consciousnesses or Minds possible.

Now since the Fall of Man and the loss of the Free-Will and Immortality, Death reigned over this Earth and not a Satan or a Fallen Angel. Man fell – not Spirit. Man-Woman were disobedient, not Spirits. Men and Women are disobedient and die, not Spirits.

Now using the symbolism of Scripture we can repeat

Paul and say that by one man (woman) death came, and by one man death was overcome. From the first Adam up to the Second Adam death ruled this Earth. It also claimed a victory over the Second Adam but it was a short-lived one, seventy-two hours to be precise and from the end of that Earth Time period it no longer ruled absolute over Man-Woman - they became their own rulers and Judges and the Freedom to make their own choice - death or life - darkness or Light. And it is still a very simple matter of the Minds.

From the Happening of the Cross the loss of the Free-Will was replaced by the Mind of Christ and Man-Woman's mortality was eradicated and the divinity of Man-Woman regenerated by the Gift of Spirit or the True-Self individualized in one and all alike. There is a Physical Body and there is a Spiritual Body and we, you and I, are Body-Mind-Spirit.

Now if all these minds, essences of consciousness, or spirits of consciousness are confusing let us clear it up. The Mind of Christ is the Will of God, and more, of course, and the Will of God is for the Well-Being of All in All, his Creation and its creatures, and you and I, who were perfectly Created but not Created Perfectly - Perfection is our task - keep that in mind.

Now our spirit mind or higher mind is, so to say in

modern terms, the Computer of The Highest Mind and our personal-individual mind or Lower Mind, (fallen mind) is supposed to be the Computer of the Higher Mind of our True-Self or spirit, and our individual physical brain is our Computer.

That “supposed to be,” but is not, is the very foundation of all the problems and evils that confront man-woman on this Earth and justifiably makes them the victims of their own Punishment. As long as we humans here continue to follow every which way except the Right Way we will continue our plight as victims instead of being victors.

Hence we can see that the Flow of Spirit and Spirit Consciousness with all of its attributes, qualities and principles pours out from the Supreme Spirit, the Highest Mind of LIFE through the Mind of Christ, the LIGHT, then, into the minds of spirits, the True-Self and finally into the Minds of Men-Women and, if they were functioning properly, into the brain and therefore controlling the physical body instead of the body controlling the mind.

When the lower mind refuses to function properly, shuns its Responsibilities in the Divine Scheme of Life, the “self” takes control, the mind becomes the slave of the Wants and Appetites of the body and the Purpose and Reason of its life is given over to a reprobate “self” and the

life is wasted and destined for the Darkness.

The cure for all of this and that nagging sense of impending doom is a simple change of mind - be not conformed of this world but be transformed by a Renewal of your Mind - for your own Well-Being and the Well-Being of the All in All.

If all this is too complicated for you, if it all sounds too difficult to master, I'll make it truly simple for you - Love and do as you will. "See"? Love, you see, is the most important element in the Unfolding of a Supreme Dream.

A Supreme Dream also signifies esoterically the Eye of the Dream, or the Way In as the Way Out and the Way Out is the Way In - the very way a dream unfolds - the giving-up the "self" for "The Self" - Now and Forever, in the Eternal Now.

In going back through my personal mountain of notes, memos, and thought transferences, that I have accumulated over the past five or six years, I find many that are pertinent to the subject before us. I am going to record some of these here without too many changes or embellishments from their original states being added. I might add that these excerpts are not in any chronological order because they come from communications not yet realized ("The 13").



“A great number of dreams that occur in the sleep state, often called the unconscious state, are clearly associated with the Power of Suggestion, suggestions that are both internal and external. These suggestions trigger the memory bank of the human computer or the imaginative power of the mind and involve such things as longings, hopes, lusts, sorrows, fears, desires, and run the gamut from the chaotic to the sublime.”

“The truth of many dreams can only be discerned by a partial or complete reversal of the roles of all the objects, subjects, and theme contained in the dream. . .”

“Any ingested, injected, inhaled drug or other substance that alters the central nervous system of the physical body, the network of the body’s computer, the human brain, is not only dangerous but renders the Lower Mind’s instructions to the computer impotent and distorted, useless then for the Purposes of Spiritual Growth and the Positive and Exactness of Effort called for in the Message of I Paul. The brain receives and transmits sensations from the physical body’s organs and common senses of touch, taste, sight, smell and hearing. The brain also receives and transmits sensations from the Lower Mind in the form of instructions, etc., which the Lower Mind, when itself is functioning properly, receives from the

Higher Mind and its Common Senses called Receptor Senses or Sensors, which are Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love. All of these matters and things are stored in the computer's banks for future uses in the Eternal Now. . .”

“Many chaotic dreams are the results of those substances taken into the Physical Body that alters, distorts, and ignores the signals of the Lower Mind to the Computer, the brain, then, and allows the false to simulate the true in such dreams. This also occurs in the Conscious, “Awake” states, or in some instances of what is called “daydreaming” wherein one “teaches” others to practice and follow the Way to “The Way,” but who do not Follow nor Practice what it is they are exhorting others to comply with. They are not only “dreaming” but are a Prime Example of those who have eyes but do not “see” and the real blind one attempting to lead the blind into a Light they themselves are ignorant of. . .”

“Some chaotic dreams are formulated from one's preconceived ideas and barriers, products of the “self” and, like it, are empty dreams about an “empty vessel. . .” (It is interesting to note here that Jesse calls such dreams and the dreamers themselves “empty boxes” in reference to the “square” and the “cube” signals.)”

“If the Lower Mind in the Awake States is caught up in the appetites and desires of the carnal self then the Lower Mind’s sleep states usually result in highly chaotic dreams we call “nightmares,” which often are messages to instill in you to Recognize and Remember the Real “daymare” you are pursuing in your daily “Awake State.” The real message of all nightmares is to send a signal that a definitive and definite change needs be made in your life towards the Good, the Right and the True. . .”

“Some dreams are highly illusionary wherein one dreams of oneself as being someone else, or of doing things never done in the awake state but have the desire hidden in their unconscious. Humans do many things in their dreams that they lack the courage to do in their awake and conscious life. . .”

“... so the outcome of the free-will was evil and evil at its highest expression became death and death’s highest expression is illusion, the greatest evil of all held in the lower (fallen) consciousness of man-woman on W-303 who freely choose disobedience and its consequences over Obedience and its gifts of Immortality and New Worlds. When the free-will was null and voided by the “Happening of the Cross” and the Mind of Christ substituted for it, mankind on W-303 failed to accept it as the gift it was. When

Men and Women accept the gift and learn to give it the Proper Recognition and Obedience it Requires, all the faces of Man-Woman will be changed from an expression of evil to the absolute expression of goodness, love and truth. And evil will no place be found for all illusions, dreams, and visions will have passed away from the minds of Men and Women who will no longer be desirous of making bad or “mistaken” choices...”

“The human race on its spaceship W-303 has continuously wasted its time and life on matters that simply do not matter - Religion and religious differences and their terrorism and wars. Races and racial differences and their mayhem and wars. Material things and material wants and appetites and the evils and wars necessary to obtain them. Power and wealth and the tools of human evil used to grasp them - hate, fear, doubt, bigotry, mind control, enslavement, nuclear armaments, threats, vain glory and false pride, all cloaked in garments of things called Faith, Truth, Patriotism, and so forth to fool the spiritually ignorant and keep them that way, always dreaming of Unity, Peace, and Love, but never Realizing it, simply because the human race tries to serve two Masters, LIFE and “self”!

“Self” is the very reason Men and Women here embrace the false over the True, the bad over the Good, the wrong

over the Right, all things and all matters that do not matter over the One Thing and the One Matter that counts, LIFE, then, and Soul, then. The problem with the Human Race on W-303, with the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in ALL, then, is that its individuals are not willing to endure their fair and equal share of the Effort and the pain of the Doing to bring about the New Age of a Regenerated and Restored Spiritual Age which was its beginning and will “BE” its ending, here.

The Total Recognition of, and the Absolute Commitment to the Serving of One Master, the Supreme Spirit, is the Way to “The Way” of The Message of I Paul. It is the choosing wisely of one side of its Ultimatum to “us” - Oneness in Unity, Love, Peace and Truth or the Folly of Separateness and Darkness. . .”

“. . . the Concept is false. It came about by fanatical religious dreamers and visionaries who failed to see the false simulating the True, and so the concept through the passage of Tradition came to be accepted Truth. No, my dear beloved laborer, God is not a moral God and the Kingdom is not what you would call a democracy. God and the Kingdom are Love and Truth, Unity and Peace.

On the other hand, on the original kingdoms of heaven, which you know as earths, there was manifested a spiritual-

physical morality.

As you are well aware the primary functioning of the Lower Mind is “thought.” Thinking and Imagining Creatively, Loving and Obeying, then, Receiving from the Higher Consciousness Ideas and the Ideal that set the mode for Human Progress and Spiritual growth and its Goal, the Collective Kingdom of God where the Soul IS.

So Spiritual-Physical morality, then, is the Recognition of one’s own divinity and the divinity of all others regardless of their race, creed, color, politics, environment, social or cultural status or materialistic standing.

Spiritual-Physical morality is not a question of ideology or “isms” but the Truthful Recognition of and the Loving Responsibility to ward the Divine Nature of All Humankind and, therefore, the unceasing quest for its Well-Being.

It is quite obvious that without self-determination, without a free mind and an ease-of-mind, such spiritual-physical morality cannot be manifested. But you have the Mind of Christ.

Love and Truth are not morals. They are Powers and Energies and Forces by which and from which and through which the Well-Being of oneself and others may be attained

and maintained. Even the justice of LIFE, which allows you, in truth compels you to Judge Yourselves, is not a moral or ethical matter but the Freedom of Self-Determination and Destination under The Truth which both Creates and Destroys. Clearly, the Choice is yours. . .”

Before going on I Paul needs to inform you of something about the Truth: The True Meaning of Anything is its spiritual meaning. The spiritual meaning of everything is its real meaning. Physical Things are but shadows or symbols of spiritual Realities. Spiritual Things require spiritual discernment. It is impossible for a deeply spiritual being, a True Christian Spiritualist for one example, to speak of physical things without having in his mind their spiritual equivalents and their true meanings. This clearly points to the Reasons that one Needs to raise their Levels of Consciousness above the carnal “self” level and higher, even, if they are to know and embrace “The Truth.” If you honestly and sincerely desire to “know” the Truth then you will exert the effort called for and necessary for your transformation from a Truth Seeker to a Holder of the Truth. You have all the gifts and you are the “signs” and the “miracle” so all that is needed is a simple renewal of your mind. “And ye shall know the Truth and the Truth shall set ye Free.” The Truth is unchangeable, you are not. The Truth is nourishment, it refreshes our mind and fails not. It

changes the partaker and is not itself changed into the partaker. The Message of I Paul is like the bread of Truth, you can peel the words off the paper and “eat” them and become the Message but the Message will never become you. No one promised us an easy road and yet the yoke for you and You is easy if you share the burden and thereby make it light. “See”?

So, keeping all the above in mind when I receive something like the excerpt I gave you above on Spiritual-Physical morality it triggers in me thoughts of self-discipline, Freedom, and the Way of Life to “The Way.” It is either this or the remaining the victim of one’s own punishment and, worse, in the process, victimizing others by one’s own fettered and irrational mind which is dominated by “self” - the All Take and No Give mentality of the non-caring and non-sharing valueless and selfishness of the “I,” “Me,” “Mine,” mentality.

So, what is Spiritual-Physical morality? Simple. It is the Divine Right to be Free to further the Well-Being of All in ALL through Love and Truth, Unity and Peace, Friendship and Fellowship, Familyship and Equality, Justice and Order.

God is not a moral God and morals are not a tablet of specific do’s and don’ts of a legal nature. Morality is a value to guide Men and Women’s choice of life-style. Thus it is a



simple matter of minds for Men and Women to make this choice freely and rationally, for Spiritual-Physical morality is rational morality, and cannot be otherwise, for it is an Ease-of-Mind in one's Acting Natural while attuned to and guided by that which is Good, Right and True. We maintain our Doing of these things through our very own self-discipline for our own sakes and Well-Being and the flow of that Well-Being touching all those who we come in contact with in our daily lives, keeping in mind, that as Christian Spiritualists we have never known a stranger and we are never alone.

Having mentioned "Tradition" under the symbolic expressions of "Dreams" let me give you this insight into what is meant by tradition.

To live and act under the guise of tradition is to live a stagnate life where Change is impossible simply because it is blocked at every turn by a tradition built upon a sand dune of preconceived ideas, untruths, half-truths, opinions and assumptions, all the products of chaotic dreams and visions and vigorously enforced and jealously guarded by the self-appointed Protectors of the Tradition for their own Power and high station in life all the while foregoing the Well-Being of the life of those caught up and enslaved by the Tradition.

I Paul Challenge you and all the people on this Earth to take a good, honest, clear, precise look at the three major “Traditions” of this world of ours today, Judaism, Christianity, and Islam, and “see” if what I say is true or not.

These three religions or religious traditions were born out of strife and warfare and have continued in strife and warfare ever since their inceptions and worse, these strifes and warfares have been and continue to be both internal and external in all three.

These are religions that preach and teach love and peace and claim the Power of God to be on their side. Yet their real power and wealth lie in the spiritual ignorance of their flocks, in their terrorism and contrived fears, in their bigotries and in their bloodletting, all in the Name of their God. A simple review of their origins, their growth, and their present day acts and claims prove, beyond a shadow of a doubt, what I say is true.

Religious tradition, then, is nothing more than hand-me-down, orally transferred and grossly disfigured beliefs in stories, or sayings of a prophet or leader or disciple who were the victims of chaotic dreams and visions and who founded a religion based on such dreams or visions where the false simulating the true was accepted by such founders.

Furthermore, from these oral hand-me-downs and/or

these chaotic dreams and visions came many myths, legends, sagas, tales, traditions and scriptures and other writings claimed to be Sacred writings and/or the inerrant word of God. It is because of these facts, these truths, that such statements can be honestly made and proven that the truth is in the Bible but that the bible is not the Truth, and that the Truth is in your dreams but the dreams are not the Truth.

What you and all the rest of the people on this Earth Need to Know and to Understand is that “religion” (a word that even the dictionaries of the world cannot properly define nor locate its roots) is nothing more than a traditionalized false concept of True LIGHT Spiritualism, the most Ancient and True Faith of this Earth. So Ancient that it had no beginning and it has no end, for God, LIFE then, is Spirit and for those who wish to Worship God must do so in spirit and in truth. “See”? A Spiritual Genius taught us that and he didn’t found a religion, in fact he was extremely anti-religious and a true and pure Spiritual.

Now earlier on I mentioned that there existed a very close resemblance between Myths, Fables, Sagas, Legends, Traditions, Scriptures and dreams. Chaotic dreams especially. For me to go into this extensively and thoroughly would necessitate about another thousand or two more

pages added to this already too long Communication. So I'll give you a short version and allow those of you who would like to pursue it further to do so. The Libraries of the World are full of the facts to prove the point.

Some Scriptures are very short; [some dreams are very short,] others are peculiarly rich in content, [others are peculiarly rich in content,] enact entire romances (Esther) and seem to last a very long time (Pentateuch). [enact entire romances and seem to last a very long time.]. There are Scriptures as distinct as actual experiences, and therefore are mistaken as history (Gospels); [there are dreams as distinct as actual experiences, so distinct that for some time after waking we do not realize that they were dreams at all, and sometimes those dreams are mistaken for visions;] others which are faint, shadowy, and blurred (Psalms). [others which are ineffably faint, shadowy and blurred]: In one and the same Scripture there may be some parts of extraordinary vividness alternating with others so indistinct as to be almost wholly elusive (Isaiah). [in one and the same dream, even, there may be some parts of extraordinary vividness alternating with others so indistinct as to be almost wholly elusive]. Again, Scriptures may be quite consistent or at any rate coherent (Kings), or even witty or fantastically beautiful (Job); [Again, dreams may be quite consistent and repetitious, or at any rate

coherent, or even witty or fantastically beautiful]; others again are confused, apparently imbecile, absurd or mad (Daniel, Revelation). [others again are confused, chaotic, apparently imbecile, absurd and mad].

Now if you have any real knowledge at all about dreams and scriptures, then I am sure that you can expand this very brief comparison to its fullest extension including all the Ancient Legends and so forth that I mentioned earlier on.

In most cases the Dream as a whole is a substitute for something else, often distorted, something unconscious, and the task of dream interpretation is to discover those unconscious messages and thoughts. And dream analysis and discernment are no task for fools, magicians, or theologians. Psycho-analysts are not much better at it either simply because they are dealing with people who have definite mental illness and the entire analysis is slanted and pointed in only one direction - the cause or causes of the mental disease and its possible cure, thereby ruling out such matters as the Higher Mind of Spirit and Spiritual Messages.

Quite similar to the Dream is this Earth's sacred writings or Scriptures. As a whole they are distorted substitutes for an underlying meaning as are dreams. The interpreter of such writings has the task of discovering what these meanings are and what Truths they contain, if any.

Many Sacred Writings contain what we call sub-conscious thoughts or thought transferences which are expressed in a particular form of Symbolism.

The Interpreter then has to follow a certain set of rules if he or she is to get the maximum out of such writings (or dreams).

For Sacred Writings or Scripture the surface meaning, although understandable, is negligible. Even where the writing is absurd, reasonable, confused, clear or otherwise, the interpreter must always suspect that it does not constitute the “thoughts” being sought.

One interpreter of dreams, Dr. S. Freud, had this to say about it: “We are not to trouble about the surface meaning of the dream, whether it be reasonable or confused or absurd or clear; in no case does it constitute the unconscious thoughts we are seeking.”

As for the Message of I Paul, which is a conglomerate of Automatic Writings, Thought Transferences, Knowledge and Understandings acquired in Transcendences, excerpts from Ancient and Sacred Script, and some thoughts of my own as well as some excerpts from older recipients of Automatic Writings and Thought Transferences from Spirit. The Message has both its surface meaning and its underlying meaning which is, in the beginning, difficult of

comprehension, until mastery is attained by close adherence to the directions given in the Message proper. The Truth is, then, that unless you Exert the Effort called for and Follow the Directions exactly as given, the Spirit of the Message would rather that you remain in the Dark insofar as its Spiritual Interpretation is concerned. Selfish? No, it is simply safer for you that way. And if you would simply read this Message, you would clearly see the truth of this for that is part of its surface meaning.

For the past ten years it has been my task to receive this Message and to Follow it exactly as given to the very utmost of my ability, which I have done, and it has changed my life and way of life here totally and far more rewarding than I ever believed possible. What it has done for my Thinking and Understanding is simply beyond any explanation worthy enough that I could give.

During those ten years I have seen hundreds upon hundreds come into this Family and embrace this Message, only to leave saying such things as, “Oh, I know all this” or “Oh, I’ve heard all this before” or “I’m way ahead of this stuff” and so forth. The truth is that they did not read even a tenth of the Message of I Paul and they certainly did not have any time to study it or discern it, but yet they claimed to know all about it. This world is full of people like that,

people with “eye” trouble, the ones who truly do not know what they think they know, the ones who really need to get out of the rubber room, stop bouncing around, settle down and listen for a change and stop being “in the way” of those who truly want and need to know the Way to “The Way.”

You and I came into this world turned on to it and you leave it turned off to it (which, incidentally, is not The Way – you need to turn off your conformity to it long before you leave it) and everything in between is a gift, and depending on what you do with it decides whether you keep it for ever and ever, and that’s the Dream you Need to Unfold, day by day, for the rest of your natural physical life here, in the Hope of landing somewhere in the Light and thereby avoiding the Darkness.

As you read this communication, these very lines even, I want you to know that your thoughts are but “pictures” framed in your brain. They are nothing but “brain pictures” until your mind exerts its efforts and the action necessary to transform them into Realities and turns them into matters that do matter, making them living, factual pictures for you and others to “see” and benefit by them and your creativity. This is how a dream unfolds, your dreams even, and it’s how the Trance States bring you into the Greatest Dream of all mankind – the personal proof of Life after physical death



here.

In writing the thirty-three I Paul Communications, I had one thing uppermost in my mind. I want you to know what I know, I want you to hear what I have heard, I want you to see what I have seen, and I want very much for you to feel what I have felt and will forever feel since my dream has slowly unfolded through the Message of I Paul and in which I have been graced to give unto all of you.

You see, all of you have been, are now, and will be a great part of my dream and its everlasting unfoldment, some of you especially so more than others, and although I love you all, I love some more for different reasons and contributions to my dream and for my Well-Being, and only I and they need know, and do.

I have been saying to people for years now, “Keep The Faith whatever it is.” Faith is like food and drink, you need some of it every day, one or the other or both, to do those things necessary to Follow the Mind of Christ which is the Will of God, which is the Well-Being of all of God’s creation, for all of God’s creation, by all of God’s creation in the Eternal Now as All in All.

And you, my dear brothers and sisters, and all like you everywhere, can muse over that until you are red, white and blue in the face, to absolutely no avail whatsoever. Zero plus

zero is still zero, Life is still Life, Death is still Death, and you are still You and the NOW is still Eternal and Perpetual Love in, of, by, and for the Truth.

In closing this Communication today, February 20, 1987, I remember that when I started it in October of 1986 I asked myself that if I had to choose one saying, one thing out of the entire Message of I Paul what would it be. After five months of having that thought in my mind I am forced to give two, not one: “Love, and do as you wish” and “To “act natural” is to be your True-Self within a duality of minds that need be United in order that the spirit may evolve.”

Remember, that heaven is not “out there” somewhere or “up there” somewhere. It is right where you are if you are where you should be. If you are not where you should be and you are not Doing the things you should be Doing, then evidently you are in the darkness, the place of non-presence, in your own hell, then, and that’s no way to unfold a dream.

In All Love for Unity and Peace I call to one and All to Come Follow The Way to “The Way” and be with us, the Family of LIFE and LIGHT at the Happening of the ALL in ALL.

Your Servant,

I Paul.